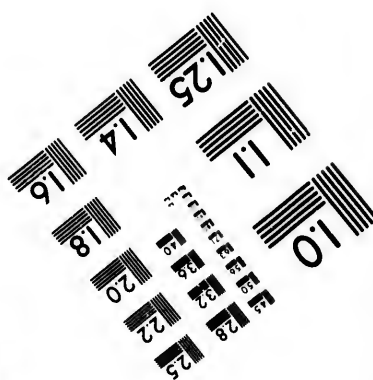
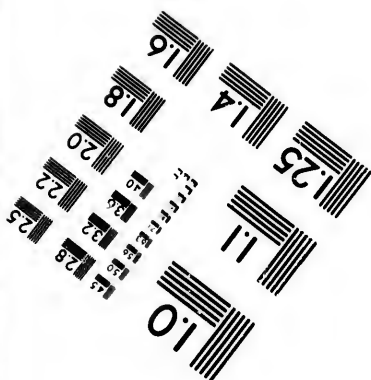
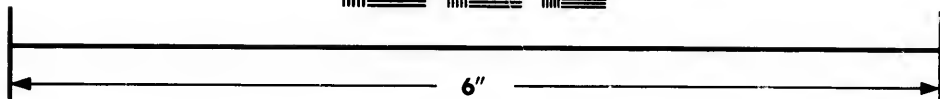
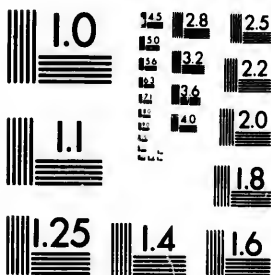


**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

18  
20  
22  
25  
28

**CIHM/ICMH  
Microfiche  
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH  
Collection de  
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

10  
11  
12

**© 1982**



Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- Coloured covers/  
Couverture de couleur
- Covers damaged/  
Couverture endommagée
- Covers restored and/or laminated/  
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- Cover title missing/  
Le titre de couverture manque
- Coloured maps/  
Cartes géographiques en couleur
- Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/  
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- Coloured plates and/or illustrations/  
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- Bound with other material/  
Relié avec d'autres documents
- Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/  
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure
- Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/  
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.
- Additional comments:/  
Commentaires supplémentaires: Various pagings.

- Coloured pages/  
Pages de couleur
- Pages damaged/  
Pages endommagées
- Pages restored and/or laminated/  
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/  
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- Pages detached/  
Pages détachées
- Showthrough/  
Transparence
- Quality of print varies/  
Qualité inégale de l'impression
- Includes supplementary material/  
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- Only edition available/  
Seule édition disponible
- Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/  
Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/  
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	14X	18X	22X	26X	30X
<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12X	16X	20X	24X	28X	32X

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

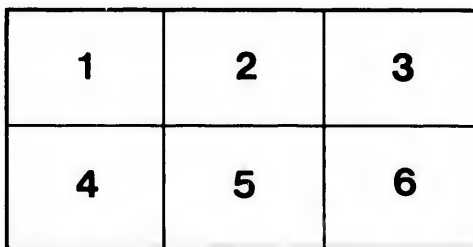
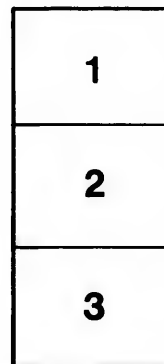
Library of the Public  
Archives of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol  $\rightarrow$  (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol  $\nabla$  (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

La bibliothèque des Archives  
publiques du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole  $\rightarrow$  signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole  $\nabla$  signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

ire  
détails  
es du  
modifier  
er une  
filmage

es

errata  
d to  
t  
e pelure,  
on à





*Richard J. C. Gray*

THE THRESHOLD  
OF THE  
UNKNOWN REGION

LONDON: PRINTED BY  
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE  
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

THE THRESHOLD  
OF THE  
UNKNOWN REGION

BY  
CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM, C.B., F.R.S.

SECRETARY OF THE ROYAL GEOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY  
FORMERLY OF H.M. ARCTIC SHIP 'ASSISTANCE'

*FOURTH EDITION*  
*WITH SUPPLEMENTARY CHAPTERS*

LONDON  
AMPSON LOW, MARSTON, SEARLE, & RIVINGTON  
CROWN BUILDINGS, 188 FLEET STREET  
1876

*All rights reserved*

6210

G

6210

6210

6210

72384

DEDICATION.

TO

ADMIRAL SIR GEORGE BACK, D.C.L., F.R.

*Chairman of the Arctic Committee of the  
Royal Geographical Society.*

MY DEAR SIR GEORGE,—I am happy to be allowed to dedicate this book to you, because you are the surviving link which connects the former with the present generation of Arctic explorers. You served in the first Arctic exploring voyage of this century, and your name is connected with some of the noblest efforts of subsequent years. You also formed one of the Arctic Council when the searches for Sir John Franklin's expedition were arranged, and you have ever since been the staunch advocate of the renewal



of Arctic exploration. Your authority is based on the experience of fifty-seven years, during which time you have either been foremost in the ranks of the explorers, or have aided and encouraged a younger generation by wise advice and cheering words. You are the sole survivor of that gallant band which, under the lead of Buchan, made resolute efforts to pierce the Polar pack; as of that still more glorious party which, under Franklin, traversed the frozen lands of Arctic America. It was you who came to the front, when an arduous expedition was required for the relief of the Rosses; and no adventure of recent times can be compared with your wintering in the pack, and your voyage across the Atlantic in the sinking 'Terror.' When you pronounce that, with modern appliances and experience, the dangers of Arctic exploration are not of such a character as to make it foolhardy to encounter them, there is no other man living who can gainsay you; for there is none with the same knowledge and experience. We all know that you are intimately acquainted with the nature and character of the risks, and that you would be the last officer in the service to give imprudent advice;

and hence it is that we look to you as the mainstay of a good cause, which is also unanimously supported by your brother Arctic explorers, as well as by the most eminent living men of science.

The object of the present volume is to give the public a correct knowledge of the whole line of frontier separating the known from the unknown region round the North Pole, to recall the stories of early voyagers, to narrate the recent efforts of gallant adventurers of various nationalities to cross the threshold, to set forth the arguments in favour of a renewal of Arctic exploration by England, to enumerate the valuable and important results to be derived from North Polar discovery, and to give full details respecting the equipment of the Arctic Expedition of 1875, its progress as far as the Cary Islands, and the future operations, especially as regards sledge travelling. In the Appendices to this Fourth Edition will be found biographical notices of all the officers and men of the Expedition, and an account of the cruise of H.M.S. 'Valorous,' and of the voyage of the 'Pandora.' My hope is that the book will be of service, now that the people of

England have revived their interest in maritime enterprise, and that it will continue to be useful for reference. I am very sure that such an object will always receive your hearty approval, and that you will continue to welcome the new editions of this little volume, for such good as it may do, how much soever the performance may fall short of the intention.

I am, DEAR SIR GEORGE,

Yours with much regard,

CLEMENTS R. MARKHAM.

21, ECCLESTON SQUARE, S.W.

*July 20, 1873 (1st ed.)*

*Jan. 20, 1875 (3rd ed.)*

*Dec. 22, 1875 (4th ed.)*

time  
eful  
ject  
that  
as of  
do.  
hort

PREFACE  
TO  
THE FOURTH EDITION.

---

AM.

THE Arctic Expedition has gone forth, and our brave explorers are now enduring the hardships of an Arctic winter: where, we know not; under what circumstances we cannot guess.

Those who have from the first advocated the despatch of an Arctic Expedition by Smith Sound did so on the understanding that precautions sanctioned by former precedents would be taken. It has been demonstrated in the fourteenth chapter of this work<sup>1</sup> that there is no danger of a catastrophe such as that which befel Sir John Franklin's expedition, provided that communication is kept open every season. But if this is not done, if the

<sup>1</sup> See p. 285.

lessons taught by experience are neglected, there certainly is such danger.

The loss of the officers and crews of the 'Erebus' and 'Terror' was due to the neglect of necessary precautions. If a ship had been sent out in 1846, it would have been known in what direction the expedition was going, and fresh supplies would have been conveyed to it. If a ship had been sent out in 1847 with that knowledge, the officers and crews would have been saved.

This was felt when the Arctic Expedition of 1852-54 was absent. It sailed in 1852. In the spring of 1853 the 'Phoenix' and 'Breadalbane' were sent out to communicate, and in 1854 the 'Phoenix' and 'Talbot.' In the same way a frigate was sent up every year on the Pacific Station, to keep communications open with the 'Plover.' It is equally urgent that annual communication should be kept up with the present Arctic Expedition; and the Government could not fail to see the importance of this measure. It cannot be that the Expedition of 1875 should be treated with less consideration than that of 1852.

There are several reasons which make it incumbent on the Government to despatch a vessel in 1876. In the first place, the Admiralty contemplates the contingency of the 'Alert' having been drifted so far from the 'Discovery,' perhaps in the direction of Cape Bismarek, as to render communication between them impossible during the travelling season of 1876. If this should be the case it is obviously a matter of urgent necessity that the fact should be known to the Government in the following autumn. It is possible, as everyone who has served in the Arctic regions is aware, that one or both ships may be destroyed by the ice. In that event the presence of a vessel at the entrance of Smith Sound in 1876 is most important. Such a vessel may also be needed to bring home invalids, as the "Phoenix" did in 1853.

The vessel communicating in 1876 will not only bring home, it will also take out intelligence. With no news from home, no sign of carefulness or sympathy, the men will enter upon a second winter with very different feelings from those which will prevail if they know that they are not forgotten.

Arctic officers, like Captain Haswell, who have had experience of both, know that the moral effect of sending a vessel to communicate in 1876 will be incalculable.

Captain Nares, with wise foresight and sound judgment, has made the arrangements which experience and former precedents have proved to be necessary. A sledge will arrive at the entrance of Smith Sound on or about May 1, 1876; and a boat will be sent down later in the summer. On this side, the Admiralty has arranged with Captain Allen Young to proceed to the entrance of Smith Sound in the "Pandora," to meet the parties arriving there from the Expedition.

Captain Allen Young, in performing this great public service, will take with him the heartfelt gratitude of the relations of our absent explorers, and the cordial thanks and good wishes of all his countrymen.

A depôt ship should also have been permanently stationed at the entrance of Smith Sound, during the absence of the Expedition.

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE
DEDICATION . . . . .	v
PREFACE TO THE FOURTH EDITION . . . . .	ix

## CHAPTER I.

THE PIONEERS OF POLAR DISCOVERY . . . . .	1
The Undiscovered Region . . . . .	2
Approaches to the Unknown Area . . . . .	3
The early Arctic Voyages . . . . .	4
Voyage of Stephen Barrough . . . . .	5
Pett and Jackman . . . . .	7
Milton on Arctic Discovery . . . . .	8

## CHAPTER II.

WILLIAM BARENTS . . . . .	9
First Voyage of Barents . . . . .	10
Third Voyage of Barents . . . . .	11
Discovery of Spitzbergen . . . . .	12
Barents off Novaya Zemlya . . . . .	14
Barents' Winter Quarters . . . . .	15
Death of Barents . . . . .	18
Observations of Barents . . . . .	19
Voyage of Carlsen . . . . .	20
The Barents Relics . . . . .	21



## CHAPTER III.

	PAGE
HENRY HUDSON . . . . .	27
Hudson off East Greenland . . . . .	28
Hudson off Spitzbergen . . . . .	29
Hudson's Tutes . . . . .	30
Results of Hudson's Voyage . . . . .	31
Hudson off Novaya Zemlya . . . . .	32
Snecour to Mrs. Hudson . . . . .	33
Jonas Poole . . . . .	34
Robert Fotherby . . . . .	34
John Wood . . . . .	35

## CHAPTER IV.

DUTCH AND ENGLISH WHALING VOYAGES IN THE SPITZBERGEN SEAS . . . . .	38
English Whaling Ventures . . . . .	39
Captain Edge . . . . .	39
Discovery of Wyche Island . . . . .	40
Notice of Richard Wyche . . . . .	42
English Delineation of Spitzbergen . . . . .	43
Dutch Whaling Ventures . . . . .	44
Dutch Whale Fishery . . . . .	45
Dutch Discoveries . . . . .	48
Voyage of Captain Gillies . . . . .	49
The Chart of Van Keulen . . . . .	50
The Dutch Whalers . . . . .	51
Revival of Dutch Enterprise . . . . .	53
Daines Barrington's Fables . . . . .	53
Moxon's Ale-House Yarn . . . . .	54
English Whaling . . . . .	55
Daines Barrington's Yarns . . . . .	56
Rew. for Reaching the Pole . . . . .	57
Line of the Winter Ice . . . . .	58
Ice in the Spitzbergen Seas . . . . .	59
Scoresby's Voyage . . . . .	61
Sealing . . . . .	63

CONTENTS.

XV

CHAPTER V.

	PAGE
THE SPITZBERGEN ROUTE . . . . .	64
Russian Expedition under Tehitshakoff . . . . .	64
Expedition of Phipps . . . . .	65
Expedition of Buchan . . . . .	67
Clavering's Voyage . . . . .	69
Russian Surveying Voyage of Lutke . . . . .	70
Parry's Attempt to reach the Pole . . . . .	71

CHAPTER VI.

THE SPITZBERGEN ROUTE . . . . .	79
Currents in the Spitzbergen Seas . . . . .	80
Swedish Expeditions . . . . .	82
First German Expedition . . . . .	84
Von Heuglin . . . . .	84
Lamont and Birkbeck . . . . .	85
Leigh Smith . . . . .	86
The Norwegians . . . . .	87
Carlsen's Circumnavigation of Spitzbergen . . . . .	88
Voyage of Tobiesen . . . . .	89
Re-discovery of Wyehe Island . . . . .	90
Norwegian Fishing Fleet . . . . .	93
The Swedish Expedition of 1872-73 . . . . .	94
Winter Voyages of Relief . . . . .	97
Leigh Smith's Expedition of 1873 . . . . .	99
Polar Basin Theories . . . . .	102

CHAPTER VII.

THE EAST COAST OF GREENLAND . . . . .	106
Voyage of the Zeni . . . . .	107
Mistake of Nicolò Zeno the Younger . . . . .	108
Story told by the Zeni . . . . .	108
The Gunnbjorn's Skerries . . . . .	109
The Greenland Monastery . . . . .	110
The Discovery of America . . . . .	112

PAGE  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
33  
34  
35

38  
39  
39  
40  
42  
43  
44  
45  
48  
49  
50  
51  
53  
53  
54  
55  
56  
57  
58  
59  
61  
63

	PAGE
Position of Icaria . . . . .	113
Value of Mr. Major's Labours . . . . .	114
Searches for the Lost Colony . . . . .	115
Scoresby on the East Coast of Greenland . . . . .	116
Graah's Expedition . . . . .	117
Clavering and Sabine . . . . .	118
Expedition of Messrs. Gibbs . . . . .	119
The 'Erik' . . . . .	121
The Second German Expedition . . . . .	122
Views of Captain Koldewey . . . . .	126
The East Coast Whalers . . . . .	127
David Gray . . . . .	128

## CHAPTER VIII.

## BAFFIN'S BAY, AND THE PASSAGE OF THE

MIDDLE PACK . . . . .	129
John Davis . . . . .	130
John Knight . . . . .	131
William Baffin . . . . .	133
Discovery of Baffin's Bay . . . . .	133
Tardy Justice to Baffin . . . . .	134
The Current in Baffin's Bay . . . . .	135
The Middle Pack . . . . .	136
Voyage of John Ross . . . . .	137
Passages through Baffin's Bay . . . . .	138
The 'North-about Passage' . . . . .	139
Melville Bay . . . . .	140
Dangers of Melville Bay . . . . .	142
Scenery of Melville Bay . . . . .	143
The 'North Water' . . . . .	145
Dundee Whalers . . . . .	146
Discoveries by Whalers . . . . .	150
Voyage of Captain A. H. Markham, R.N. . . . .	151
Captain Adams . . . . .	153
Loss of the 'Arctic' . . . . .	154
The 'Victor' . . . . .	156
Captain Bannerman . . . . .	157
Ten Years' Whaling . . . . .	158

## CHAPTER IX.

SMITH SOUND . . . . .	PAGE
Sir Thomas Smith . . . . .	159
Baffin . . . . .	160
Ross and Inglefield . . . . .	160
Dr. Kane . . . . .	161
Dr. Hayes . . . . .	162
Hall's Expedition . . . . .	168
Captain Hall . . . . .	170
Staff of the 'Polaris' . . . . .	171
Departure of the 'Polaris' . . . . .	172
Maps of Smith Sound . . . . .	173
Voyage of the 'Polaris' . . . . .	174
Death of Captain Hall . . . . .	175
Drift of the Boat of 'Polaris' . . . . .	176
Position of the 'Polaris' . . . . .	177
Deductions from the Voyage of the 'Polaris' . . . . .	178
Importance of Arctic Exploration . . . . .	179

## CHAPTER X.

THE PARRY ISLANDS . . . . .	182
Jones Sound . . . . .	183
Discoveries of Richards and Osborn . . . . .	184
— Vesey Hamilton . . . . .	185
— Meham . . . . .	185
— M'Clintock . . . . .	186
— Sir Robert M'Clure . . . . .	187
Collinson and Kellett . . . . .	188
Osborn on the Paek Ice West of Banks' Land . . . . .	189

## CHAPTER XI.

RUSSIAN ARCTIC DISCOVERY . . . . .	196
Early Russian Voyages . . . . .	197
Early Russian Explorers . . . . .	197
Discovery of Cape Chelyuskin . . . . .	198

	PAGE
Expedition of Behring . . . . .	199
Discovery of Behring's Strait . . . . .	200
Steller on Behring Island . . . . .	201
Discovery of the New Siberia Isles . . . . .	202
Hedenström and Anjou . . . . .	202
Journeys of Anjou . . . . .	203
Sledge Journeys of Wrangell . . . . .	204
Wrangell Land . . . . .	208
Polyma of the Russians . . . . .	210
Exploration of the Yenisei, by Herr F. Schmidt . . . . .	212
Russian Arctic Explorers . . . . .	214

## CHAPTER XII.

THE NORWEGIANS OFF NOVAYA ZEMLYA, CAP- TAIN WIGGINS . . . . .	216
Norwegians off Novaya Zemlya . . . . .	216
Voyages of Mack . . . . .	217
Voyages of Johannesen, Dorma, Simonsen, and Isaksen . . . . .	218
Rosenthal . . . . .	219
Death of Tobiesen . . . . .	219
Captain Wiggins in the Sea of Kara . . . . .	220

## CHAPTER XIII.

THE AUSTRO-HUNGARIAN ARCTIC EXPEDITION . . . . .	224
Voyage of Payer and Weyprecht in 1871 . . . . .	224
Austro-Hungarian Arctic Expedition . . . . .	225
Equipment and Staff of the 'Tegethoff' . . . . .	226
Voyage of Count Wilczek . . . . .	227
Winter in the Pack . . . . .	229
Artificial Wine . . . . .	230
Aurora Borealis . . . . .	233
Drift of the 'Tegethoff' . . . . .	235
Discovery of Franz-Josef Land . . . . .	236
Second Winter . . . . .	237
Payer's first Sledge Journey . . . . .	241
Death of Krisch, the Engineer . . . . .	242

CONTENTS.

XIX

PAGE		PAGE
199	Payer's second Sledge Journey . . . . .	243
200	Wilezek and Zichy Land . . . . .	244
201	Mountains and Glaciers . . . . .	245
202	Flora of Franz-Josef Land. Drift Wood . . . . .	246
202	Ascents of Mountains . . . . .	247
203	Journey up Austria Sound . . . . .	248
204	Rawlinson Sound . . . . .	249
208	Prince Rudolf Land . . . . .	249
210	Journey across a Glacier . . . . .	250
212	Birds and Open Water . . . . .	250
214	View to the Far North . . . . .	253
	Smith Sound the best Route for Exploration . . . . .	253
	Return Journey . . . . .	256
	Third Sledge Journey . . . . .	257
	The 'Tegethoff' abandoned . . . . .	258
	Retreat in the Boats . . . . .	259
	Welcome Home . . . . .	262

AP- . 216  
 . 216  
 . 217  
 en . 218  
 . 219  
 . 219  
 . 220  
  
 ON . 224  
 . 224  
 . 225  
 . 226  
 . 227  
 . 229  
 . 230  
 . 233  
 . 235  
 . 236  
 . 237  
 . 241  
 . 242

CHAPTER XIV.

THE BEST ROUTE FOR ARCTIC EXPLORATION	263
The Spitzbergen Route . . . . .	264
The Smith Sound Route . . . . .	266
Sledge Travelling . . . . .	267
Results from Sledge Travelling . . . . .	268
Navigation up Smith Sound . . . . .	269
Discoveries by Smith Sound . . . . .	270
Evidence of Land far to the North . . . . .	271
The Two Routes Compared . . . . .	272
Work to be done in Spitzbergen Seas . . . . .	272
A Government Arctic Expedition . . . . .	273
Advantage to the Navy . . . . .	274
Healthiness of the Arctic Regions . . . . .	275
Absence of undue risk in Arctic Exploration . . . . .	281
Opinions of Arctic Officers . . . . .	282
Opinion of Lady Franklin . . . . .	283
Lady Franklin's Letter . . . . .	284
Insignificant Cost of Arctic Expeditions . . . . .	285

## CHAPTER XV.

	PAGE
THE RESULTS OF ARCTIC EXPLORATION . . . . .	288
Geographical Results . . . . .	289
Hydrographical Results . . . . .	289
Geodetic Results . . . . .	290
Pendulum Observations . . . . .	290
Aurora. Spectrum Analysis . . . . .	292
Meteorological Results . . . . .	293
Geological Results . . . . .	294
Botanical Results . . . . .	297
Zoological Results . . . . .	302
Migrations of Birds . . . . .	303
Ethnological Results . . . . .	306
Unknown Results . . . . .	311
Concluding Remarks . . . . .	312

## CHAPTER XVI.

THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.—SHERARD OSBORN . . . . .	314
Sherard Osborn's Arctic Papers . . . . .	315
Arctic Committee of the Royal Geographical Society . . . . .	315
Memorandum of the Arctic Committee . . . . .	315
Arctic Deputation to Mr. Lowe and Mr. Goschen . . . . .	316
Unsatisfactory Reply of Mr. Lowe . . . . .	316
Voyage of Commander A. H. Markham . . . . .	317
Joint Arctic Committee . . . . .	317
Arctic Memorandum . . . . .	318
Interview with Mr. Disraeli . . . . .	318
Decision of the Government . . . . .	318
Mr. Disraeli's Letter to Sir H. Rawlinson . . . . .	318
Arctic Committee at the Admiralty . . . . .	319
Osborn's Interest in the Expedition . . . . .	319
Sherard Osborn's last week at Portsmouth . . . . .	322
His Death. Great Loss to the Expedition . . . . .	323
Death of Commodore Goodenough . . . . .	324

## CHAPTER XVII.

PAGE		PAGE
288	THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.—THE EQUIPMENT	325
289	List of Officers of the 'Alert'	325
289	List of Officers of the 'Discovery'	326
290	Account of the Officers of the 'Alert'	327
290	Account of the Petty Officers and Men	328
292	Account of the Officers of the 'Discovery'	330
293	Account of the Petty Officers and Men	331
294	Rig of the Ships	332
297	Strengthening of the Ships	333
302	Number and Dimensions of the Boats	334
303	Description of the Engines of the 'Alert'	335
306	Provisions. Scale of Diet	336
311	Concluding Remarks	338
312		

## CHAPTER XVIII.

PAGE		PAGE
314	THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.—FROM PORTSMOUTH TO THE WAIGAT	340
315	Enthusiasm on the Departure from Portsmouth	340
315	Boisterous Passage across the Atlantic	341
315	Gales of Wind and Circular Storm	342
316	The First Ice	344
316	A Stream of Heavy Ice	344
317	Effects of the Bad Weather	345
317	Arrival at Godhavn	346
318	Study of the Geology and Physical Geography of Disco	346
318	Study of the Botany of Disco	348
318	Study of the Zoology of Disco	349
318	Scientific Work—Mammals	350
319	Stores received from the 'Valorous'	353
319	Shipment of Greenland Dogs	355
322	Departure from Godhavn. Lovely Scenery	357
323	Ritenbenk. Farewell to the last Friend	357
324	The Waigat. Last Sight of the Expedition	358



## CHAPTER XIX.

	PAGE
THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.—Future Proceedings . . . . .	359
Character of the Winter and Spring of 1875 . . . . .	359
Preparation for Melville Bay . . . . .	360
Depôts A and B. A at the Cary Islands . . . . .	361
Cairns at Point Gale and Capo Isabella . . . . .	363
West Side of Smith Sound . . . . .	363
Winter Quarters of the 'Discovery' . . . . .	363
Further Progress of the 'Alert' . . . . .	364
Warming and Ventilation . . . . .	365
Winter Occupations and Amusements . . . . .	366
Sledge Travelling . . . . .	369
Dimensions and Weight of Sledges . . . . .	369
Dimensions, Weight, and Furniture of Tents . . . . .	370
Scale of Clothing for Travelling . . . . .	371
Scale of Diet . . . . .	371
Depôts . . . . .	371
Cooking Apparatus . . . . .	372
Medical Stores for each Sledge . . . . .	373
Constant Weights . . . . .	374
Conveyance of a Boat on Sledge . . . . .	375
Use of Sails on the Sledges . . . . .	376
Sledge Flags . . . . .	377
System of conducting the Sledging Operations . . . . .	378
Sledging Work of the 'Discovery' . . . . .	380
Final Arrangements for the Return . . . . .	381

## CHAPTER XX.

PUBLIC REWARDS FOR ARCTIC DISCOVERIES . . . . .	383
Principle of Granting Rewards for Public Services . . . . .	383
Act of Queen Anne to reward Discovery of Longitude . . . . .	383
Commissioners of Longitude . . . . .	384
Act of 1745 for Rewarding Arctic Discoveries . . . . .	385
Several subsequent Acts . . . . .	385

CONTENTS.

xxiii

PAGE	PAGE
359	The Act of 1818 . . . . . 385
359	Powers of the Board of Longitude . . . . . 386
360	Reward for reaching 89° N. . . . . 386
361	Scale of Proportional Rewards . . . . . 387
363	A retrograde Step in 1821 . . . . . 387
363	The untoward Repealing Act of 1828 . . . . . 388
363	Repealing Act Ignored by subsequent Parliaments . . . . . 389
364	Sir John Ross's Committee in 1834 . . . . . 389
365	Sir Robert McClure's Committee in 1855 . . . . . 390
366	Moral Claims of the present Expedition . . . . . 391
369	Amount of the Reward for reaching 89° N. . . . . 392
369	Importance of a timely consideration of the question . . . . . 392

APPENDIX A.

370	BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY OF THE ARCTIC
371	EXPEDITION OF 1875 . . . . . 395
371	
371	
372	
373	

APPENDIX B.

374	THE CRUISE OF THE 'VALOROUS' . . . . . 417
375	Instructions for Sounding and Dredging . . . . . 417
376	Passage through the Ice . . . . . 418
377	Transhipment of Stores and Coals to the Arctic Ships . . . . . 418
378	Ritenbenk . . . . . 418
380	Off the Ritenbenk Kulbrud . . . . . 419
381	The 'Pandora' and Captain Allen Young's Expedition . . . . . 419
	The Waigat Strait . . . . . 420
	Atanekerdluk—Icebergs . . . . . 421
	Dangerous Passage across the Waigat . . . . . 421
	Formation of Icebergs . . . . . 422
	Coal-bearing Cliffs, Coast of Disco . . . . . 423
	Dredging off Hare Island . . . . . 423
	Description of the Dredge . . . . . 424
	The 'Valorous' on a Rock . . . . . 427
	Holsteinborg . . . . . 427
	Approaches to Holsteinborg . . . . . 428

PAGE  
 359  
 359  
 360  
 361  
 363  
 363  
 363  
 364  
 365  
 366  
 369  
 369  
 370  
 371  
 371  
 371  
 372  
 373  
 374  
 375  
 376  
 377  
 378  
 380  
 381  
 ES . . . . . 383  
 s . . . . . 383  
 tude . . . . . 383  
 . . . . . 384  
 . . . . . 385  
 . . . . . 385

	PAGE.
Repairing Injuries . . . . .	429
The Holsteinborg Region . . . . .	430
Dredging and Sounding in Davis Strait . . . . .	431
Dredging and Sounding in the Atlantic . . . . .	431
Recapitulation of Work done by the 'Valorous' . . . . .	432
Return to Devonport. Recognition of Services . . . . .	433

## APPENDIX C.

THE CRUISE OF THE 'PANDORA' . . . . .	434
Officers and Men . . . . .	435
Visit to the Cary Islands . . . . .	436
Cruise down Peel Sound, Second Visit to the Cary Islands . . . . .	437
Return with the Arctic Mail . . . . .	438
INDEX . . . . .	439

PAGE

429

430

431

431

432

433

434

435

436

Islands. 437

438

439





## THRESH

THE NO  
hitherto  
one end  
as it is t  
remains  
people of  
charm; f  
prise, run  
history of  
and least  
for just pr  
events wor  
Glorious  
voyages v  
many nava

THE  
THRESHOLD OF THE UNKNOWN REGION.

---

CHAPTER I.

THE PIONEERS OF POLAR DISCOVERY.

THE North Polar region, that immense tract of hitherto unpenetrated land and sea which surrounds one end of the axis of our earth, is the largest, as it is the most important, field of discovery that remains for this generation to work out. To the people of this country it should have a peculiar charm; for maritime, and especially Arctic enterprise, runs, like a bright silver thread, through the history of the English nation, lighting up its darkest and least creditable periods; and even giving cause for just pride, at times when all other contemporary events would be sources only of shame and regret. Glorious indeed is the story of those northern voyages which made illustrious the names of so many naval worthies of past days; and every true



Englishman should earnestly desire that the long roll may not be finally closed, and that this path to honour and distinction may be again thrown open to our Navy.

The undiscovered region is bounded on the European side by the 80th parallel of latitude, except where Scoresby, Parry, and a few others have slightly broken into its circumference; but on the Asiatic side it extends fully to 75° and 74°, and westward of Behring's Strait our knowledge is bounded by the 72nd degree. Thus, in some directions, it is more than 1,500 miles across, and it covers an area of upwards of 1,500,000 square miles. The parallel of 70° skirts the northern shores of the continents of Europe, Asia, and America; and between 70° and 80° there is an intervening belt separating the known from the unknown, which, in different directions, has been more or less explored by the intrepid seamen and travellers of various nations. Their successes and disasters, their daring exploits and wonderful adventures, form the record whence we must gather such information as is at present within our reach respecting the outer edge of the unknown Polar region. This information will assist us in the necessary speculations, whence we may derive an estimate of the uses and advantages that will be derived from a North Polar expedition.

Unlike the ocean-girt region of the Southern

Pole,  
distan  
three  
enorm  
away  
There  
end o  
Norwa  
throug  
narrow

It  
first s  
Pole;  
therefo  
coverid  
inform  
hardih  
throug  
excite

The  
broke c  
races, a  
the first  
Richard  
adminis  
and enc  
of Henr  
he had

Pole, the Northern Polar region is surrounded, at a distance of about 1,200 miles from its centre, by the three great continents of our planet, while the enormous glacier-bearing mass of Greenland stretches away towards the Pole for an unknown distance. There are three approaches by sea to this land-girt end of the earth: through the wide ocean between Norway and Greenland, through Davis' Strait, and through Behring's Strait—one wide portal and two narrow gates.

It is through the wide ocean portal that men first sought to reach the mysterious region of the Pole; and their discoveries in this direction will, therefore, first engage our attention. These discoveries form, altogether, a rich store of valuable information, acquired by an amount of skill and hardihood which commands our admiration, and through adventures and dangers which must needs excite our interest.

The honourable desire to explore unknown lands broke out very early in the history of the European races, and king Alfred of England told the story of the first Arctic Expedition as early as in A.D. 890. Richard III., the most active and industrious administrator among our English kings, set forth and encouraged voyages to Iceland; and in the reign of Henry VIII., Dr. Robert Thorne declared that 'if he had facultie to his will, the first thing he would

understande, even to attempt, would be if our seas northwarde be navigable to the Pole or no.' Thus was the great question raised, and shortly after Henry's death, maritime enterprise broke forth with renewed vigour. Before many years the ships of England and Holland had reached the edge of the Polar pack. The commencement of Polar research may be dated from the day when Sebastian Cabot publicly explained to young Edward VI. the phenomena of the variation of the needle. On the same day the aged sailor received a pension, and immediately afterwards three discovery ships were fitted out by the Muscovy Company under his auspices. But neither the ill-fated Willoughby, nor the more fortunate Chancellor reached the verge of the unknown seas; so we pass on to their successors in Arctic research.

The spring of 1556 found Stephen Burrough, afterwards chief pilot of England, fitting out a little pinnace called the 'Search-thrift,' for further northern exploration. The venerable Cabot again appears, superintending the equipment, and heartily wishing the explorers God-speed. 'The good old gentleman,' says Burrough, 'came aboard our pinnace at Gravesend, accompanied with divers gentlemen and gentlewomen, and gave to the poore most liberal almes, wishing them to pray for the good fortune and prosperous successe of the "Serchthrift."' And then 'at the signe of the Christopher, he and

his f  
were  
that  
disco  
the r  
being  
gentl  
God.'  
great  
sixty  
ing o  
wishes  
served  
scene,  
great  
of his  
Bu  
his vo  
in wit  
which  
the wi  
kept e  
so pilo  
senting  
covered  
tween  
but he

his friends banketed, and made me and them that were in company great cheere: and for very joy that he had to see the towardness of our intended discovery, he entered into the dance himself, amongst the rest of the young and lusty company: which being ended, hee and his friends departed most gently, commending us to the governance of Almighty God.<sup>1</sup> Surely this is a very pleasant picture: the great discoverer, whose labours had commenced nigh sixty years before, now, in his green old age, cheering on his young fellow-workers with hearty good wishes and sage advice. Some of us, who have served in Arctic searches, can remember a similar scene, when the tall figure and kind face of another great explorer, now no more, deepened the memory of his cheering words on the eve of our departure.

Burrough has left us a very complete journal of his voyage. Off Kola, in Russian Lapland, he fell in with many lodias, or native twenty-oared boats, which outsailed the 'Search-thrift' in running before the wind; but the friendly skipper of one of them kept company by occasionally lowering his sail, and so piloted Burrough to the eastward, besides presenting him with a barrel of mead. Burrough discovered the strait leading into the sea of Kara, between Novaya Zemlya and the island of Vaigats; but he made up his mind to return for three causes,

<sup>1</sup> Hakluyt, I. p. 307.

namely, the continual north winds, the 'great and terrible abundance of ice which we saw with our eyes,' and thirdly because the nights waxed dark. He arrived at Archangel on September 11, where he wintered. The Muscovy Company considered this voyage to be a failure, so in 1568 they ordered three seamen, named Bassendine, Woodcocke, and Browne, to pass through the strait discovered by Burrough, and thence to sail eastward past the mouth of the river Ob. 'Which discoverie,' run the instructions, 'if it be made by you it shall not only prove profitable to you, but it will also purchase perpetual fame and renowne both to you and our country.' Would that instructions, couched in this noble spirit, were more common now!

In May 1580, the Company fitted out two vessels with similar instructions, the 'George' (40 tons), commanded by Arthur Pet, with a crew of nine men and a boy, and the 'William' (20 tons), commanded by Charles Jackman, with five men and a boy. Pet had served in Chancellor's expedition, and had since commanded a vessel belonging to the Muscovy Company; and Jackman was a mate on board the 'Ayde,' in Frobisher's second voyage. They were both experienced and able seamen; and their persevering battle with the Polar ice in such wretched little cock-boats is one of the most intrepid

feats  
betwe  
boats,  
made  
pack-  
sional  
lanes  
the sl  
'Will  
reache  
winter  
land i

TH  
exami  
Green  
of the  
ice in  
their  
reason  
and C  
to the  
the fr  
Arctic  
becaus  
comm  
He sa  
seeme

feats in maritime history. Pet discovered the strait between Vaigats and the main land, and the little boats, after passing through it into the sea of Kara, made several attempts to bore through the heavy pack-ice, sometimes entering the pack, and occasionally making slight progress by sailing along lanes of water left between the grounded ice and the shore. In returning home the 'George' and 'William' were parted in a gale of wind. Pet reached England in safety; but Jackman, after wintering in a Norwegian part, sailed towards Iceland in the spring, and was never heard of more.

These early northern voyages led the way to an examination of the edge of the Polar pack between Greenland and Novaya Zemlya: for the discovery of the obstacles to navigation caused by heavy Polar ice in the sea of Kara induced explorers to turn their attention to the seas farther north. For this reason the enterprises of the successors of Willoughby and Chancellor appropriately form an introduction to the discoveries of later voyagers who have touched the frontier of the great unknown Polar region. Arctic exploration is now decried in some quarters, because it is alleged to be unlikely to produce much commercial profit. Milton took a different view. He said that these early enterprises 'might have seemed almost heroic, if any higher end than ex-

cessive love of gain and traffic had animated the design.'<sup>1</sup> This may sound an overstrained sentiment to modern ears; yet there is the ring of true metal in the words of the great poet, such as is not so often heard in these days.

<sup>1</sup> Milton's Prose Works. 'A Brief History of Muscovia' (ed. 1834), p. 577.

THE D  
pioneers  
merchan  
and Arc  
to any p  
the sea  
navigato  
northern  
true Pol  
conceptio  
Plancius  
chants of  
fitted ou  
'Mercuri  
choice of  
native of  
a man of  
and a bo  
our most  
ice betwe

## CHAPTER II.

## WILLIAM BARENTS.

THE Dutch had not only watched the English pioneers of Arctic discovery very attentively: their merchants had themselves opened a trade with Kola and Archangel as early as 1578. But the obstacles to any progress eastward, caused by the heavy ice in the sea of Kara, turned the attention of Dutch navigators to the possibility of a passage round the northern end of Novaya Zemlya, and thus the first true Polar voyage was projected. The credit of its conception is due to the great cosmographer Peter Plancius, who recommended this route to the merchants of Amsterdam. In 1594 the Amsterdammers fitted out a vessel of about 100 tons, called the 'Mercurius,' and they were most fortunate in their choice of a commander. William Barents was a native of the island of Terschilling, near the Texel, a man of some education, a most accurate observer, and a bold and enterprising seaman. As some of our most valuable information respecting the Polar ice between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya is



derived from the labours of Barents, it is certainly most fortunate that perfect reliance can be placed on the observations of this able leader of the first true Polar voyage.

On June 4, 1594, Barents sailed from the Texel in the 'Mercurius,' with a little fishing-smack, belonging to his native island of Terschilling, in company, and sighted Novaya Zemlya, in latitude  $73^{\circ} 25' N.$ , on the 4th of July. He sailed along the coast, passing Cape Nassau on the 10th, and arrived at the edge of the ice on the 13th. From July 13 to August 3, Barents continued to seek a passage through the pack, searching for a lane in every direction, from Cape Nassau to the Orange Islands at the extreme north-west of Novaya Zemlya. During this close and careful examination of the pack edge, Barents sailed over 1,700 miles of ground, and put his ship about no less than eighty-one times. Assuredly, if ever perseverance deserves success, it should have been conceded to this indefatigable explorer. From time to time he carefully observed the meridian altitude of the sun, both with a cross-staff, with an astrolabe, and with a quadrant; he discovered a long line of coast from Cape Nassau to the Orange Isles, and fixed the latitudes of various points with remarkable accuracy. We are indebted to Dr. Petermann for the valuable map, on which the track of Barents during his first voyage is ac-

curated  
edition  
printed  
the me  
the edg  
return.  
engaged  
Kara an

We  
perhaps  
the voya  
the unk  
determin  
any fard  
which B  
been fitte  
of Amst  
cosmograp  
Barents,  
Two vess  
and Jan  
missioned  
as pilot,  
de Veer,  
board as  
Amsterda  
The r  
of Kara,

curately delineated, drawn to illustrate Dr. Beke's edition of the great explorer's voyages, which was printed for the Hakluyt Society in 1853. At last the men wearied of the incessant boxing about along the edge of the pack, and it became necessary to return. The second voyage in which Barents was engaged merely sailed to the entrance of the sea of Kara and back.

We now come to the third voyage of Barents, perhaps the most important, next to Hudson's, of all the voyages that have been made to the frontier of the unknown Polar region. The States-General determined that it would not be advisable to make any farther attempt after the failure of the fleet with which Barents made his second voyage, which had been fitted out at great expense. But the merchants of Amsterdam listened to the representations of the cosmographer Plancius, and of the practical seaman Barents, and resolved to fit out another expedition. Two vessels, commanded by Jacob van Heemskerck and Jan Corneliszoon Rijp, were accordingly commissioned. Heemskerck was accompanied by Barents as pilot, who was virtually in command, and Gerrit de Veer, the historian of the voyage, was also on board as second mate. The two vessels sailed from Amsterdam on May 13, 1596.

The masses of ice in the strait leading to the sea of Kara, and the impenetrable nature of the pack

near Novaya Zemlya, had strongly impressed both Barents and Rijp with the necessity of avoiding the land, and by keeping a northerly course, of seeking a passage in the open; for there was a prevalent but erroneous opinion in those days, that ice could only be formed under the shelter of the land. Indeed, Rijp insisted upon keeping away much farther to the westward than Barents considered necessary, fearing that they might get entangled in the ice round the strait of Vaigats. On June 9, they discovered an island which they called Bear Island. Stephen Bennet, who was sent on a voyage by Sir Francis Cherie of London in 1603, fell in with it, and, ignorant of the previous discovery of Barents, called it Cherie Island. The two ships continued to steer north, passing a good deal of ice, until they sighted Spitzbergen on June 19. They believed it to be a part of Greenland, and sailed away in a north-westerly direction, but were stopped by the Polar pack. Barents then coasted along the western side of Spitzbergen; and at the north-western point he found so great a number of birds that they flew against the sails, so he called the point Vogelsang. But he did not, as Dr. Beke and Dr. Petermann supposed, sail up the east side and circumnavigate the largest island in the group. That feat has never yet been performed, except by Captain Carlsen in 1863. Dr. Beke adopted the circumnavigation theory from the

statement  
steered a  
the journe  
that the s  
De Veer s  
east wind  
at rest  
Hondius,  
the '*adm*  
lished, in  
Pontanus.  
and north  
of Barents  
July 1, wh  
went up  
find an op  
course mo  
of the fur  
was stoppe  
Holland th  
The re  
Barents an  
the north-  
their terr  
ever faced  
as it is tol  
of honest  
Island to

statement, in Gerrit de Veer's journal, that Barents steered a little east of north from Bear Island. But the journal is vague, and other entries go to prove that the ship of Barents was never on the east coast. De Veer speaks of land on his right hand, and of an east wind coming off the land. The question is set at rest by the nearly contemporaneous map of Hondius, which was specially prepared to illustrate the '*admiranda navigatio*' of Barents, and published, in 1611, in the work on Amsterdam by Pontanus. It shows a small portion of the western and northern shores of Spitzbergen, and the track of Barents. He arrived at Bear Island again on July 1, where he and Rijp agreed to separate. Rijp went up the east side of Greenland, expecting to find an opening in the ice, while Barents shaped a course more to the eastward. There is no account of the further proceedings of Rijp, but no doubt he was stopped by the Polar pack, and he returned to Holland the same year.

The record of the subsequent proceedings of Barents and his crew, of their famous voyage round the north-western end of Novaya Zemlya, and of their terrible sufferings in the first Arctic winter ever faced by Europeans, is exceedingly interesting, as it is told in the simple, straightforward narrative of honest Gerrit de Veer. The voyage from Bear Island to Novaya Zemlya lasted from July 2 to 17,

and although they went a good deal to the southward, they were frequently obliged to alter their course on account of the ice. On the 14th, indeed, 'they sayled so farre into the ice that they could go no further: for they could see no place where it opened, but were forced (with great paine and labour) to lauer<sup>1</sup> out of it againe, and they were then under 74° 10' N.' They sighted the coast of Novaya Zemlya in 74° 40' N., and sailed along it until, on August 7, they passed Cape Comfort. The coast here runs east and west, and faces to the north, so that the Polar pack, when it drifts south, is forced full upon it.

After several fruitless attempts to extricate himself from the ice, by tacking about in various directions, Barents found himself on the west side of a bay which was named 'Ice Haven,' and 'here they were forced, in great cold, poverty, misery, and grieffe to stay all the winter.' This was on August 26. The heavy pack-ice drifted into the bay, gave the old craft several very severe nips, and fixed her immovably for the winter. In the calm weather which followed, the young ice began to form on the surface of the sea; but, as often happens just before winter fully sets in, some westerly winds sprang up towards the end of September, drove the ice off the shore, and left a wide expanse

<sup>1</sup> To advance by repeated short tacks.

of open  
found no  
wedged  
ice. Th  
out into  
soon hav  
had to w  
danger.  
the sun  
beyond t  
land; an  
motion.

The s  
to prepar  
to speak  
they set  
resolute  
might be  
Their cou  
of these  
large sup  
eked out  
the ship,  
all their  
fixed in t  
up and n  
placed alo  
into a bat

of open water to seaward. The Dutchmen, however, found no comfort in this, for, their craft was firmly wedged into the bay, by grounded masses of pack-ice. This was perhaps fortunate, for had they stood out into the treacherous October sea, they would soon have been beset in the young ice, and have had to winter in the pack, in a position of extreme danger. As late as November 8, some days after the sun disappeared, lanes of open water were seen beyond the bay when it had been blowing from the land; and even on December 24 the ice was in motion.

The seventeen stout-hearted Dutchmen now had to prepare for an Arctic winter, and it is impossible to speak too highly of the cheerful way in which they set to work, of their discipline, and of their resolute determination to endure the worst that might befall them, with courage and subordination. Their countrymen may well be proud of the conduct of these gallant seamen. Fortunately they found a large supply of drift-wood, and with this material, eked out by planks from the poop and forecastle of the ship, they built a house, into which they removed all their provisions and valuables. A chimney was fixed in the centre of the roof, a Dutch clock was set up and made to strike the hours, bed-places were placed along the walls, and a wine-cask was converted into a bath. The surgeon wisely prescribed bathing

as a necessary preservative of health. Snow-storms and gales of wind prevailed throughout the winter, which had the good effect of drifting snow round the house as high as the roof, and thus raising the temperature within. But their sufferings were intense, and it is touching to read of these poor fellows asking their skipper to let them make merry on Twelfth Night with a little sack and two pounds of meal.

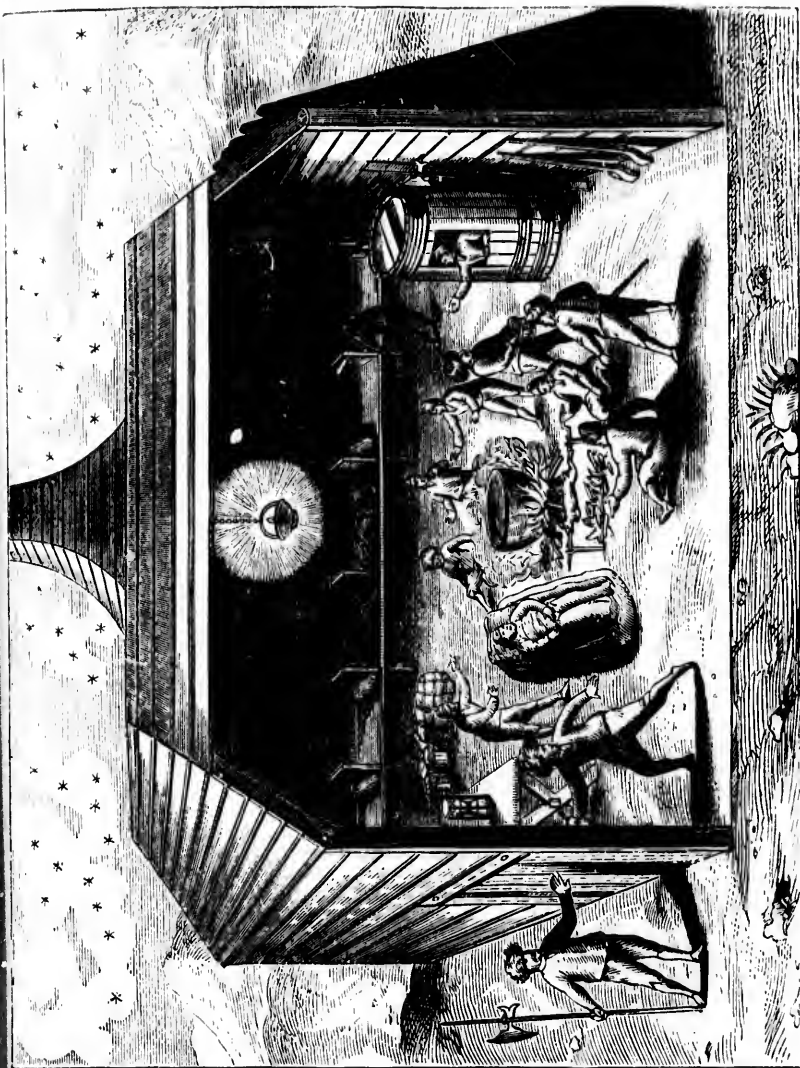
The sun returned on January 24. On February 22 they again saw 'much open water in the sea, which in long time we had not scene;' and enormous quantities of snow fell during the whole month. On March 6 they again saw much open water, and on the 8th there was no ice in sight to the north-east, while to the south the sea was covered with it. But on the 12th a N.E. wind brought all the ice back again, and the open water disappeared. 'The ice mightely driving in with a great noyse, the pieces rushing against each other fearfull to heare,' and on the 14th there was nothing but ice to be seen. A S.W. wind brought open water again on the 28th, but this only lasted for a day; and from the 29th to April 8 the ice was so closely packed as ever. On May 11 the sea was quite navigable, although the N.E. winds always brought the ice again.

Barents had been long ill, and when they set sail from the dismal scene of their sufferings, in two



The exact ma





The exact manner of the house wherein we wintered.—Gerrit de Veer.



open boats, on June 14, 1597, he was too weak to stand, and was carried from the house. On the 16th the skipper hailed from the other boat, and asked how the pilot was. 'Quite well, mate,' was the reply. 'I still hope to mend, before we get to Wardhouse.'<sup>1</sup> But he died on the 19th, and, like La Pérouse and Franklin, found a grave in the midst of his discoveries.

The survivors encountered many difficulties from the ice, sometimes being drifted away from the land-floe, and at others being obliged to haul the boats for long distances over the ice to reach open water. At last, after a long and dangerous voyage, they reached Kola, in Lapland, towards the end of August, and by a strange coincidence were picked up by a Dutch ship commanded by the very Corneliszoon Rijp who had been skipper of their consort in the previous year. We last hear of these gallant fellows telling their story to the Prince of Orange and the Danish Ambassador after a grand dinner. They then dispersed to their homes, and are lost to us.

There are two points in this remarkable voyage which are deserving of special attention, as connected with North Polar exploration. The pressure of the Polar pack on the northern coast of Novaya Zemlya, from Cape Nassau to the Orange Islands, is described by De Veer as terrific. The currents, no doubt, have

<sup>1</sup> An island on the coast of Lapland.

some-  
ous pac  
The  
eastern  
and Apr  
It appea  
in Febr  
was alw  
space of  
came fro  
and grou  
the same  
from the  
year. Th  
open spac  
the ice  
direction  
northern  
therefore,  
Siberia in  
and gales  
and Wrang  
de Veer co  
The conti  
with which  
Zemlya w  
water at ne  
are in thei

something to do with the formation of this tremendous pack.

The appearance of open water at the north-eastern extremity of Novaya Zemlya during March and April, on several occasions, is the second point. It appears that during those months, and once even in February, when there was a S.W. wind, the ice was always driven away from the coast, leaving a space of open water and that, directly the wind came from the opposite quarter, the ice returned, and ground furiously and noisily upon the beach. In the same way an off-shore wind carries away the ice from the head of Baffin's Bay at *all* seasons of the year. This, of course, argues the existence of some open space in the rear, to the north-west, into which the ice could drift. This drift would be in the direction of Capes Taimyr and Cheliuskin, the most northern points of Siberia; and it is quite clear, therefore, that water-holes exist along the coast of Siberia in February and March, caused by currents and gales of wind. They were met with by Anjou and Wrangell, and the information supplied by Gerrit de Veer confirms the accuracy of the Russian reports. The continuous succession of heavy snow-storms with which Barents was visited during the Novaya Zemlya winter also proves the existence of open water at no great distance. When the Arctic regions are in their normal condition during winter, an un-

interrupted frozen surface is accompanied by a clear dry atmosphere, while a different state of the ocean produces atmospheric results of an opposite character. The snow-storms during the Novaya Zemlya winter are the natural consequences of the water-holes on the Siberian coast. The same thing, from a similar cause, was experienced by Hayes at Port Foulke, and by McClintock at Port Kennedy.

We have no authentic account of any vessel having visited the spot where Barents wintered until 1871. The voyage of Barents, though the first, remained the only one which had rounded that N.E. point of Novaya Zemlya; and the house of Barents was unvisited for 278 years. But the spell was broken in 1871. On May 10, Elling Carlsen, a Norwegian captain, who had been engaged in the North Sea trade for eighteen years, sailed from Hammerfest, in a sloop of sixty tons, called the 'Solid.' He reached the 'Ice Haven' of Barents on September 7, and on the 9th he saw a house standing at the head of the bay. He found it to be 32 feet long by 20 broad, and the planks of which it was composed were  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick by from 14 to 16 inches broad. The materials had evidently belonged to a ship, and amongst them were several oak beams. Round the house were standing several large puncheons, and there were also heaps of reindeer, seal, bear, and walrus bones. The interior is described by Captain Carlsen

exactly  
Gerrit  
the ed  
standin  
exactly  
articles  
halberd  
places.  
by Cap  
Barents  
Iron frame  
with sh  
Two ships'  
per, fou  
iron fra  
of a cop  
Copper bar  
time fas  
Bar of iron.  
Iron crowb  
Long gun-b  
Two small  
square e  
Two borers  
long.  
Chisel.  
Padlock.  
Caeking-iro  
Three gouge  
Six files.  
Plate of zinc  
Earthenware  
Tankard, wi  
Lower half  
Six fragmen

exactly as represented in the curious old drawing in Gerrit de Veer's narrative, which was reproduced in the edition of the Hakluyt Society. The row of standing bed-places along one side of the room was exactly as shown in the drawing, and several of the articles represented in the drawing, the clock, the halberd, and the muskets were still in their old places. The following is a catalogue of things found by Captain Carlsen in the winter quarters of Barents:—

Iron frame, over the fire-place, with shifting bar.	Clock.
Two ships' cooking-pans of copper, found standing on the iron frame, with the remains of a copper scoop.	Bell of clock.
Copper bands, probably at one time fastened round pails.	Striker.
Bar of iron.	Rasp.
Iron crowbar.	Small auger.
Long gun-barrel.	Small narrow pieces of copper band.
Two smaller gun-barrels, one square externally.	Two salt and pepper-pots, about eight inches high.
Two borers or augers, 3 feet long.	Two pairs of compasses.
Chisel.	Fragment of knife with iron handle.
Padlock.	Three spoons.
Cauking-iron.	Borer.
Three gouges.	Hone.
Six files.	Wooden tap.
Plate of zinc.	Bronze tap.
Earthenware jar.	Two wooden stoppers for gun muzzles.
Tankard, with lid of zinc.	Two spear or ice-pole heads.
Lower half of another tankard.	Four navigation instruments.
Six fragments of pepper-pots.	A flute.
	Lock with key.
	Another lock.
	Sledge-hammer head.

Tin meat-strainer.	Clock weight.
Pair of boots.	Twenty-six pewter candlesticks and fragments; six in perfect preservation.
Sword.	Pitcher of Etruscan shape, beautifully engraved.
Fragments of many engravings, with Latin couplets under them.	Upper half of another pitcher.
Three books in Dutch.	Wooden trencher, coloured red.
A small piece of metal.	Alarum of clock.
Nineteen cartridge cases, with tops and strings attached, some still full of powder.	Three scales.
Iron chest with lid, and intricate lock-work.	Four medallions, circular, about 8 inches in diameter, three of them mounted in oak frames.
Fragments of metal handle belonging to the chest.	A string of buttons.
Grindstone.	Hilt, and a foot of blade, of a sword.
Iron weight of 8 lbs.	A halberd head.
Small cannon-ball.	Two carved pieces of wood, one with the haft of a knife in it.
Gun-lock, with hammer and flint.	

The house in which Barents and his gallant crew had wintered can never have been entered by human foot during nearly three centuries that have since elapsed. There stood the cooking-pans over the fire-place, the old clock against the wall, as shown in the drawing, the arms and tools, the drinking vessels, the instruments, and the books that had beguiled the weary hours of that long night, two hundred and seventy-eight years ago. The 'History of China' points to the goal which Barents sought, while the 'Manual of Navigation' indicates the knowledge which guided his efforts. Stranger evidence never told a more deeply-interesting story.

Cap  
Haven  
the eas  
the sam  
blowing  
to the l  
Toward  
very ser  
and the  
set in, c  
they pa  
succeede  
Carlsen  
On t  
complete  
more at  
happene  
chased t  
of Capta  
Governn  
for them  
servation  
Mr.  
publishin  
these Ea  
1 'Nov  
vaarders na  
1871 door  
gelicht do  
Archivaris

Captain Carlsen finally sailed from the 'Ice Haven' on September 14, and made his way down the eastern side of Novaya Zemlya. He encountered the same weather as Barents had done; a S.W. gale blowing the ice off the shore until a shift of wind to the N.E. brought it back and beset the vessel. Towards the end of the month the position became very serious, as the young ice was beginning to form and they were beset, but fortunately a south wind set in, driving the ice northwards, and on October 6 they passed through Burroughs Strait, and thus succeeded in circumnavigating Novaya Zemlya. But Carlsen very narrowly escaped the fate of Barents.

On the 4th of November 1871, Captain Carlsen completed his adventurous voyage by anchoring once more at Hammerfest; and Mr. Lister Kay, who happened to be there on his way to Lapland, purchased the relics of Barents, and also obtained a copy of Captain Carlsen's log and chart. The Dutch Government, by paying Mr. Kay the price he gave for them, have secured the precious relics for preservation in the native land of the great navigator.

Mr. De Jonge has since done good service by publishing the results of his careful examination of these Barents relics.<sup>1</sup> He and his countrymen feel

<sup>1</sup> 'Nova Zembla. De voorwerpen door de Nederlandsche Zeevaarders na hunne overwintering aldaar in 1597, achtergelaten en in 1871 door Kapitein Carlsen teruggevonden.' Beschreven en toegelicht door Zhr. Mr. J. K. J. De Jonge, Adjunct. Rijks Archivaris's Gravenhage, 1872.

an affectionate pride in the glorious deeds of their 'Sea fathers,' and will cherish these memorials of a very noble achievement with careful reverence. They have been deposited in the Naval Museum at the Hague, where a house, open in front, has been constructed for their reception, in exact imitation of the woodcut, at page 17 of this volume. In a pamphlet, published at the Hague in 1872, Mr. De Jonge first proves the authenticity of the relics, then gives an account of the voyage of Barents, and of his wintering in Novaya Zemlya, then considers the question whether any voyager had visited the wintering place before 1871, and lastly gives a detailed description of each relic, appending several historical and antiquarian notes.

The most important point in Carlsen's voyage is his correction of the north-eastern prolongation of Novaya Zemlya. To the north of the Matosken Strait he met another Norwegian captain, named F. Mack, in a vessel from Tromsø, and they agreed to keep company. Mack was supplied with good instruments from the Meteorological Institute at Christiania, and the result of their observations was that the north-eastern end of Novaya Zemlya is incorrectly laid down in modern maps. It is placed in  $73^{\circ}$  E., while the observations of Mack and Carlsen give  $67^{\circ} 30'$  E. as its longitude. On September 3, the two vessels parted company in a thick fog. The map of this

extremi  
with the  
of the  
Jonge g  
the error  
recent n  
Russians  
Barents,  
Vlaming  
lauded n  
of Vlami

Mr. I  
note on t  
per dial,  
drawn. H  
determini  
the famo  
vented su  
by which  
time when  
was very  
tude by  
object, he  
the astrol  
relic is th  
Plancius.  
is a trans  
ship, bein



extremity of Novaya Zemlya, by Carlsen, agrees well with that published by Gerrit de Veer, the historian of the voyage of Barents in 1598; and Mr. De Jonge gives a map showing the two, together with the erroneous prolongation to the eastward on other recent maps. Mr. De Jonge then shows that the Russians have never visited the winter quarters of Barents, and that, though the Dutch navigator Vlamingh was very near them in 1664, he never landed nor saw the house. The account of the voyage of Vlamingh is given by Witsen.

Mr. De Jonge gives an extremely interesting note on the old clock, and another on a curious copper dial, through the middle of which a meridian is drawn. He believes this dial to be an instrument for determining the variation of the compass. Plancius, the famous cosmographer and tutor of Barents, invented such an instrument to work on an astrolabe, by which to calculate the longitude at sea. At the time when the expedition sailed, in 1596, Plancius was very busy with his theory of finding the longitude by the variation of the compass. With this object, he constructed a copper dial to be fixed on the astrolabe; and it is probable that this interesting relic is the only extant example of the invention of Plancius. Of the three books among the relics, one is a translation of the work of Medina on seamanship, being the edition of 1580. An improved



edition was published at Amsterdam in 1598, a proof that the ship sailed between those years, for a careful pilot like Barents would be sure to take out the latest edition of such a work. Mr. De Jonge considers this to be additional proof of the authenticity of the relics. The other books are a chronicle of Holland, and a Dutch translation of Mendoza's 'History of China.'

These are perhaps the most valuable relics in an antiquarian point of view; but not the least interesting are the flute, which will still give out a few notes, and the small shoes of the poor little ship's boy, who died during the winter.

AMONG the  
been und  
Polar re  
Hudson;  
examined  
to it, se  
edge from  
Nothi  
history of  
in his val  
probable  
appears fi  
Company,  
a passage

<sup>1</sup> Genera  
son of anot  
London, in  
and had a  
Muscovy Cor  
by John Mer

## CHAPTER III.

## HENRY HUDSON.

AMONG the most important voyages that ever have yet been undertaken in the direction of the unknown Polar region are, undoubtedly, those of Henry Hudson; for this able and persevering seaman examined the whole extent of the ocean which leads to it, searching for an entrance along the pack edge from Greenland to Novaya Zemlya.

Nothing whatever is certainly known of the early history of Hudson, although General Meredith Read, in his valuable 'Historical Inquiry,' has made some probable conjectures as to his parentage.<sup>1</sup> He first appears fitting out a little cockboat for the Muscovy Company, called the 'Hopewell' (80 tons), to discover a passage by the North Pole. On May 1, 1607, he

<sup>1</sup> General Read's view is that the great navigator was a grandson of another Henry Hudson, who died, when an Alderman of London, in 1555. Henry, the navigator, was a citizen of London, and had a house there, and was bred up in the service of the Muscovy Company.—*An Historical Inquiry concerning Henry Hudson, by John Meredith Read, Jun. (Albany, 1856).*

weighed anchor at Greenwich. When we consider the means with which he was provided for the achievement of this great discovery, we are astonished at the fearless audacity of the attempt. Here was a crew of twelve men and a boy, in a wretched little craft of eighty tons, coolly talking of sailing right across the Pole to Japan, and actually making as careful and judicious a trial of the possibility of doing so, as has ever been effected by the best equipped modern expeditions. Nor was Hudson ignorant of the difficulties and dangers of such a voyage, for the result of the three expeditions of Barents were known to him, and he had with him the best existing charts.

Imagine this bold seaman sailing from Gravesend, bound for the North Pole, in a craft about the size of one of the smallest of modern collier brigs. We can form a good idea of her general appearance, because three such vessels are delineated on the chart drawn by Hudson himself. The 'Hopewell' was more like an old Surat buggalow than anything else that now sails the seas, with high stern, and low pointed bow; she had no head sails on her bowsprit, but to make up for this, the foremast was stepped choek forward. There was a cabin under the high and narrow poop, where Hudson and his little son were accommodated, and the men were crowded forward. Thus equipped and provided for the voyage,

Hudson  
and pas  
He can  
which  
ice near  
stand a  
22nd.  
yet he  
extensive  
marked  
could see  
seeing.'  
his latitu  
73° N. I  
steering  
came in s  
as he call  
sang of  
78° 30' N  
westward  
amongst s  
continued  
many day  
to the no  
He gave t  
point of  
time he fo  
of Spitzb

Hudson, as we have seen, sailed from Greenwich and passed the Shetland Islands on May 26, 1607. He came in sight of the east coast of Greenland, which he describes as a very high land with much ice near the shore, on June 13, and continued to stand along it with a northerly course, until the 22nd. Although he was stopped in this direction, yet he considered the time well spent, seeing that extensive land had been discovered which was not marked on any chart, and he adds 'for aught we could see, it is like to be a good land and worth the seeing.' He named it 'Hold with Hope,' and found his latitude, when in sight of it on the 22nd, to be  $73^{\circ}$  N. Hudson then left the Greenland coast, and, steering in a north-easterly direction for five days, came in sight of a part of Spitzbergen, or Newland as he called it, which he supposed to be the Vogel-sang of Barents. The ice was found in latitude  $78^{\circ} 30'$  N. trending away from Spitzbergen to the westward; and the little craft was 'in many dangers amongst so huge a quantity of ice and fogge.' Hudson continued to examine the coast of Spitzbergen during many days, constantly attempting to make a passage to the northward, but always stopped by the ice. He gave the name which it still bears, to the N.W. point of Spitzbergen—Hakluyt Headland. At one time he found his latitude to be  $81^{\circ}$ , to the northward of Spitzbergen, when the land he sighted was pro-

bably the Seven Islands; he observed that the sea was in some places green, and in others blue, and he says, 'our green sea we found to be freest from ice, and our azure blue sea to be our icie sea.' Scoresby considers this to be accidental, and he ascertained the green colour to be caused by myriads of minute *medusa*, 110,592 in a cubic foot.

Having completed the examination of the western side of Spitzbergen, which he describes as very high mountainous land, like rugged rocks, with snow between them, Hudson formed the magnificent design of sailing round the north end of Greenland, and returning to England by Davis Strait. With this object he again examined the sea between Spitzbergen and Greenland, towards the end of July, but judged, from the strong ice-blink along the northern horizon, that there was no passage in that direction. He, therefore, after sighting Spitzbergen, determined to return to England, and, on his way homewards, he discovered an island in  $71^{\circ}$  N. which he named 'Hudson's Tuethes.' There cannot now be any doubt that this island, discovered by Hudson, is the same as has since so improperly been called Jan Mayen, after a Dutch skipper, who, on very weak authority, is said to have seen it some years afterwards, in 1611. The island is about 30 miles long, by 9 miles broad, and at its northern end rises up the remarkable volcanic peak of Beerenberg, 6,870

feet high  
in the T

The  
both in a  
Hudson  
Greenlan  
between  
and in th  
northward  
the ice;  
Scoresby i  
highest la  
sailed for  
The pract  
that his ac  
horses in t  
ment of a r  
to flourish

In 160  
to attempt  
Novaya Ze  
hands. Re  
men had s  
namely, Jo  
boatswain,  
captain's s  
sailed from  
ice, in latit

feet high. The little 'Hopewell' was safely anchored in the Thames again on September 15.

The results of this voyage were very important, both in a geographical and a commercial point of view. Hudson had discovered a portion of the east coast of Greenland; he had examined the edge of the ice between Greenland and Spitzbergen twice, in June and in the end of July; and he had sailed to the northward of Spitzbergen, until he was stopped by the ice; reaching almost as high a latitude as Scoresby in 1806, which was  $81^{\circ} 12' 42''$  N. Hudson's highest latitude by observation was  $80^{\circ} 23'$ ; but he sailed for two more days in a north-easterly direction. The practical consequence of Hudson's voyage was that his account of the quantities of whales and sea-horses in the Spitzbergen seas led to the establishment of a rich and prosperous fishery which continued to flourish for two centuries.

In 1608, Hudson fitted out a second expedition to attempt a passage between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya. His crew consisted of fourteen hands. Robert Juet was the mate; and two of the men had sailed with Hudson in his former voyage, namely, John Cooke, now promoted to the rank of boatswain, and James Skrutton. John Hudson, the captain's son, was also on board. On April 22 they sailed from the Thames, and reached the edge of the ice, in latitude  $75^{\circ} 29'$ , on June 9. Hudson hoped

to bore his ship through the pack, so he stood into it for several leagues, but found the ice ahead to be firm and thick, and was obliged to give up the attempt. He then sailed along the pack edge to the eastward, always keeping the ice in sight on his port beam, and watching for an opening until the 26th, when he reached the coast of Novaya Zemlya, in latitude  $72^{\circ} 25' N$ . He had thus ascertained that the barrier of ice between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya was impenetrable, as on his former voyage it had proved to be between Greenland and Spitzbergen. It was quite clear that for 'Search-thrifts,' 'Hopewells,' and such like craft, the portals of the unknown region were firmly closed. It remains to be seen whether a sharp-bowed screw steamer will be able to force them open. Stout Henry Hudson had failed, and his additional laurels were to be won elsewhere; but he had done all that the boldest mariner could do, with nothing but a little 'Hopewell' under his feet; and no explorer has done much more in the same direction, since that 25th of June 1608, when he sighted Novaya Zemlya, and turned his vessel's head to the south. As a Polar explorer we shall meet him no more. He examined a part of the Novaya Zemlya coast, and arrived at Gravesend on August 26. During this second voyage, Hudson observed numerous pieces of drift wood floating in the gulf stream, from the North Cape to latitude  $75^{\circ} 30' N$ .

Hu  
It is ple  
ledged  
Mrs. Hu  
an appoi  
in the y  
in the se  
After  
commenc  
Poole ma  
in 1609,  
morses,  
of Spitzl  
Poole; an  
from Hul  
far as 8  
Headland,  
the whalin  
years Rob  
discoveries

'Being  
who was left  
employing a  
ceiving that  
in regard th  
wealth, resolv  
go to the voy  
'Mrs. Hud  
mate in the  
apparel and  
*Papers, Colom*



Hudson, as is well known, was foully murdered. It is pleasing to find that his services were acknowledged by the bountiful old East India Company. Mrs. Hudson was left very poor, and the Court gave an appointment to her son on board one of their ships, in the year 1614, because the brave father perished in the service of the Commonwealth.<sup>1</sup>

After the voyages of Hudson, the whale fishery commenced in the Spitzbergen seas. Captain Jonas Poole made four voyages for the Muscovy Company, in 1609, 1610, 1611 and 1612, for killing whales and morses. Horn Sound, and Bel Sound, in the south of Spitzbergen, still retain the names given by Poole; and, in 1612, he tells us that a skipper from Hull, named Thomas Marmaduke, went as far as 82° N.; two degrees beyond Hakluyt's Headland. Baffin was in the Spitzbergen seas with the whaling fleet in 1613, and in the two following years Robert Fotherby was sent up to make new discoveries, with Baffin as his pilot. In 1614,

<sup>1</sup> 'Being informed that Mrs. Hudson, the widow of Mr. Hudson, who was left in the North-west discovery, desired their favour for employing a youth, a son of his, she being left very poor, and conceiving that they were partly obliged in charity to give assistance, in regard that his father perished in the advance of the Commonwealth, resolved to recommend him to the care of some one who is to go to the voyage.' (*April 9, 1614.*)

'Mrs. Hudson's son recommended to the care of Hunt, master's mate in the "Samaritan": five pounds to be laid out upon him in apparel and necessaries.' (*April 19, 1614.*)—*Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series. East Indies. 1513-1616, paras. 709 and 711.*



Fotherby and Baffin, in the ship 'Thomazen,' sailed a few miles to the north of Spitzbergen, until they reached 80° and odd minutes;<sup>1</sup> and in the same year some islands to the eastward of Spitzbergen were discovered by four other ships belonging to the Muscovy Company. In 1615 Fotherby was despatched by Sir Thomas Smith to seek a passage to the northward, in the 'Richard,' of twenty tons. As usual they were stopped by the Polar pack near Hakluyt's Headland, and like Hudson before them, they examined the pack edge for a considerable distance to the westward, but could find no opening. Master Fotherby, however, was a man of a hopeful disposition, and though he could not deny that the sea between Greenland and King James his Newland (Spitzbergen), was much pestered with ice, yet he 'would not seem to dissuade this worshipfull Companie from the yearly adventuring of 150*l.* or 200*l.* till some further discoverie be made of the said seas and lands adjacent.' For the next century and a half we must seek for any further information respecting the Spitzbergen seas in the annals of the Dutch and English whaling trade; and

<sup>1</sup> 'Purchas' iii. p. 466. This is all that we know of Baffin's voyage of 1614. Dr. Petermann, in a letter to the President R. G. S. dated Nov. 7th, 1874, says it is highly probable that, in this voyage, Baffin sighted the west coast of the land discovered by the Austrian Expedition in 1873. It will be seen that there is not the shadow of a reason for supposing anything of the kind.

several  
light on  
the unkn  
They will  
the mean  
a notable  
auspices o  
Since  
to seek str  
taken no p  
But at las  
by the eage  
Wood had  
stakes,' un  
officer's disc  
in 1669. C  
year, and G  
also served o  
mate was no  
On his retur  
through the  
borough's na  
that appears  
the expediti  
plan to Char  
for discovery  
East; the s  
probable for

several points of considerable interest, as throwing light on the border territory between the known and the unknown, may be obtained from these sources. They will be considered in the next chapter; but in the meanwhile it is necessary to give an account of a notable attempt to reach the North Pole, under the auspices of the Merry Monarch's Admiralty.

Since Henry VIII. had sent divers cunning men to seek strange regions in 1527, the Government had taken no part in these northern voyages of discovery. But at last the Admiralty was warmed into action by the eager persuasions of a master's mate. John Wood had served as master's mate in the 'Sweepstakes,' under Sir John Narborough, during that officer's discreditable voyage to Patagonia and Chili, in 1669. Cloudesley Shovel, then in his twentieth year, and Grenville Collins, the future hydrographer, also served on board the 'Sweepstakes.' The master's mate was not a man to hide his light under a bushel. On his return he published 'Captian Wood's Voyage through the Streights of Magellan,' in which Narborough's name is not once mentioned, and, for all that appears to the contrary, Wood was commanding the expedition. In 1676 Mr. John Wood offered a plan to Charles II. and his brother the Duke of York, for discovery of a passage to the Indies by the North-East; the success of which he represented to be probable for the following reasons. He urged, in

the first place, that the old Dutch navigators, Rijp and Barents, had always maintained that, by steering north-east from the North Cape of Norway, and keeping between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya, at a distance from both, a sea free of ice might probably be found. This idea arose from the erroneous belief of the old navigators that ice could only be formed in the neighbourhood of land. Wood's second reason is that Hendrich Hamel, in his narrative of a captivity in the Corea, says that whales were found in the sea of Tartary with European harpoons in them. The rest of his argument is founded on absurd stories about Dutch whalers having sailed to and beyond the North Pole. His inducements to undertake the voyage were the honour of the king, the interests of his country, and want of employment at home, together with his aversion to an idle life. These arguments were irresistible to Mr. Samuel Pepys, then Secretary to the Admiralty, and Captain Wood was put in command of the 'Speedwell' frigate, with the 'Prosperous' pink, as a tender. Wood's old shipmate, Grenville Collins, went out as master of the 'Speedwell,' and the expedition sailed from England on the 28th of May 1676.

At noon on the 22nd of June, when on a meridian about midway between the North Cape and Novaya Zemlya, and in latitude  $75^{\circ} 59' N.$ , they sighted the

edge of  
and W.M.  
the ice t  
seeing r  
found to  
of Novay  
the 'Spe  
a wreck.  
'Prospero  
24th of A  
Grenville  
voyage ga  
no passage  
Novaya Ze  
The vo  
Wood, con  
extent of  
east coast  
Barents, u  
respecting  
of the latte  
can be gat  
the narrati  
ments the v  
seventeent

edge of the Polar pack right ahead, extending E.S.E., and W.N.W. Wood then stood along the edge of the ice to the eastward, examining it carefully, and seeing many openings, which he sailed into and found to be bays. On the 26th he came in sight of Novaya Zemlya, and in the night of the 29th, the 'Speedwell' ran on a reef of rocks and became a wreck. Wood and his men went on board the 'Prosperous,' and arrived in the Thames on the 24th of August. In his letter to Nicholas Witsen, Grenville Collins says, that 'the proceedings of the voyage gave him full satisfaction that there was no passage between Greenland or Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya.'

The voyages of Hudson, Poole, Fotherby, and Wood, completed the examination of the whole extent of the Polar pack ice, extending from the east coast of Greenland to Novaya Zemlya; while Barents, until quite lately, was the sole authority respecting the state of the ice on the northern coast of the latter islands. All further information that can be gathered from the experience of whalers, and the narratives of modern expeditions, merely supplements the work of those intrepid navigators of the seventeenth century.

## CHAPTER IV.

DUTCH AND ENGLISH WHALING VOYAGES IN THE  
SPITZBERGEN SEAS.

THE voyages of Hudson led the way to a great and flourishing whaling trade, in which many nations competed for pre-eminence, and which opened one of the most interesting chapters in the history of English and Dutch commercial enterprise. Henceforth, for more than two centuries, that part of the frontier of the unknown region which extends from Spitzbergen to Greenland, was annually frequented by fleets of whalers. The edge of the Polar ice, in this direction, is therefore well known; but as the main object of those who frequented it was connected with the slaying of whales and morses, and not with discovery, the increase to our information from the whaling annals is necessarily limited. Our chief concern with these voyages will rest upon the discussion as to the highest latitude that has been attained on the Spitzbergen meridians, and as to the state of the ice at the pack edge. There have been,

however  
carefully  
consider  
culture.

pre-emin

In th  
Muscovy

whales in

of Jonas

was the l

which we

part of th

Wiche, Ra

and others

of the wor

means. I

covered H

eastward

sent a pi

Island, an

N. This

crew of tw

old chart

pulling up

thousand s

<sup>1</sup> These ar  
as made by fo

however, several whaling captains who have observed carefully and systematically, and who have combined considerable ability and intelligence with scientific culture. Among them the name of Scoresby stands pre-eminent.

In the years following Hudson's first voyage the Muscovy and East India Companies sent ships to kill whales in the Spitzbergen seas, and after the voyages of Jonas Poole and Robert Fotherby, Captain Edge was the leading spirit in these whaling expeditions, which were set forth annually during the greater part of the reign of James I. The names of Richard Wiche, Ralph Freeman, Deicrowe, Heley, Barkham, and others, preserved in bays and straits, are those of the worthy merchant-adventurers who provided the means. In 1613 and 1614 the English whalers discovered Hope Island, and other islands to the south-eastward of Spitzbergen.<sup>1</sup> In 1616 Captain Edge sent a pinnace to the eastward, to explore Edge Island, and other land on the east side, as far as 78° N. This pinnace was a boat of twenty tons, with a crew of twelve men. She is portrayed on the curious old chart of Spitzbergen in Purchas's 'Pilgrimes,' pulling up Stor Fiord. The pinnace's crew killed a thousand sea-horses on Edge Island, and got 1,300

<sup>1</sup> These are the discoveries referred to by Purchas (iii., p. 466), as made by four ships in the year of Baffin's voyage, 1614.

tons (barrels?) of oil by August 14. In 1613 the Dutch followed the example; and the Dutch and English seamen often came to blows over the exclusive right of the fishery. One of the English expeditions of this period discovered a large island to the eastward of Spitzbergen which was never visited again until three Norwegian sealing vessels reached it in 1872. As Dr. Petermann has endeavoured to throw doubt upon this English discovery, it is right to vindicate the claim of the bold adventurers of the Muscovy Company, by giving the particulars of their voyage. It is thus recorded in Purchas:—

‘In the yeare 1617 the Company set out for Greenland fourteene sayle of ships, and their two pinnasses, furnished with a sufficient number of men and all other provisions fitting for the voyage, under the command of Thomas Edge . . . They employed a ship of sixtie tunnes, with twenty men in her, who discovered, to the eastward of Greenland, as far to the northwards as seventie-nine degrees, an iland which he named Wiches Iland, and divers other ilands as by the map appeareth, and killed store of sea-horses there, and then came into Bel Sound, where he found his lading of oyle left by the captayne, which he tooke in. This yeare the Hull men set a small ship or two to the eastwards of Greenland, for the Hull men still followed the steps of the London-

ers, and  
which i  
raltie d  
same co  
Gree  
to the S  
again sig  
mann di  
Island,’ a  
did this  
to have b  
east, and  
Wiche Isl  
it is incor  
Purchas,  
conclusiv  
above ext  
tioned; a  
saying tha  
under the  
But the a  
Purchas, s  
discovery s  
latitude o  
‘King Ka  
any doubt,  
English in



ers, and in a yeare or two called it their discoverie, which is false, and untrue, as by oath in the Admiraltie doth appeare. The Dutch likewise practise the same course.'

Greenland was the name applied, in those days, to the Spitzbergen group. When Wiche Island was again sighted by Von Heuglin in 1870, Dr. Petermann discarded the old and true name of 'Wiche Island,' and re-christened it 'King Karl Land.' He did this on the ground that Wiche Island is stated to have been sighted from Stone's Foreland bearing east, and that, as there is no land in that direction, Wiche Island never had any existence; and also that it is incorrectly placed on an old chart, published by Purchas, as regards latitude. These pleas can be conclusively disposed of. As may be seen from the above extract, Stone's Foreland is not even mentioned; and there is no authority whatever for saying that the map in Purchas was prepared by or under the authority of Edge or any of his officers. But the account of the discovery, in the text of Purchas, settles the question. We are told that the discovery ship went as far north as 79°, the exact latitude of the large island named by Petermann 'King Karl Land;' which is thus proved, beyond any doubt, to be the Wiche Island discovered by the English in 1617. It was named after Mr. Richard



Wiche, an eminent London merchant, who was one of the founders of the East India Company.<sup>1</sup>

In subsequent years there were frequent collisions

<sup>1</sup> Richard Wiche or Wyche was a merchant of London, of the Skinners' Company, and among the foremost of those patriotic adventurers who did so much to foster the commerce of England during the reigns of Elizabeth and James I. We find him in the list of undertakers of the first voyage to India, in 1599, when he subscribed 200*l.*, and undertook the contract for beans and mustard. The East India Company received their charter of incorporation on December 31st, 1599, when privileges for trading with India were granted by the great Queen to the Earl of Cumberland and 215 knights, aldermen, and merchants, including Richard Wiche, who was on the first committee of directors. Mr. Wiche also assisted in the formation of the North-West Company, in 1612, and was an active member of its committee when the whaling fleets, under Captain Edge, were despatched to the Spitzbergen seas. Hence the island in 79° N., east of Spitzbergen, discovered in 1617, was very appropriately named Wiche Island. Mr. Wiche married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Richard Saltonstall, who was Lord Mayor of London in 1598, by whom he had twelve sons and six daughters. He died on November 20th, 1621, and was buried at St. Dunstan's in the East. His posterity did credit to the name of the worthy merchant-adventurer for several generations. One son, Sir Peter Wyche, was Ambassador to Constantinople and a Privy Councillor. His son (also Sir Peter) was Envoy to Muscovy in 1688, Resident at Hamburg, and a Fellow of the Royal Society. At the request of the Royal Society he translated 'A Short Relation of the River Nile,' from the Portuguese, which was ordered to be printed by Lord Brouncker, the President, in November 1688. A great-grandson of old Richard, Sir Cyril Wyche, was Envoy to Russia, created a baronet in 1729, and died in 1756. Another son of Richard Wiche probably settled at Haselbech, in Northamptonshire, and his descendants were lords of the manor of Haselbech for four generations. William Wiches, of Haselbech, was member for Northampton, and died in 1742.—*See Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series. East Indies.* 1513-1616, paras. 253, 257, 267, 268, 273, 281, 289. *See also Stow's Survey of London.*

with t  
and m  
for ma  
hands  
But  
were in  
the voy  
1622, t  
is show  
the who  
with the  
named,  
main isl  
Smith's  
Waygat  
burgoma  
Land, ca  
the whol  
Swedes ;  
Island, an  
shore ; an  
discovere  
again, or  
Thus  
mapped  
principal  
properly  
ancient E

with the Dutch fleet, and the English found it more and more difficult to hold their own. Eventually, for many years, the trade fell almost entirely into the hands of the Hollanders.

But during the time that the English mariners were in the ascendant in the Spitzbergen seas, from the voyage of stout Henry Hudson in 1607 to about 1622, they did excellent geographical work; which is shown on the chart of Purchas. Here we have the whole of the west and north sides of Spitzbergen, with their fiords and off-lying islets delineated and named, as well as part of the strait between the main island and North-East Land, called Sir Thomas Smith's Inlet, but which was afterwards named the Waygat or Hinlopen Strait, after a rich Amsterdam burgomaster of that name. We have North-East Land, called Sir Thomas Smith's Island. We have the whole of what is now called Stor Fiord by the Swedes; with the west and south sides of Edge Island, and Alderman Freeman's Inlet on its northern shore; and we have WICHE ISLAND far to the east, discovered by the English in 1617, but never seen again, or at least delineated on a map, until 1870.

Thus was the greater part of Spitzbergen fairly mapped by the English, and names given to the principal features. Some of those features were improperly named again by the Dutch, but the more ancient English names ought on all occasions now to

be adopted, except, of course, those given by Barents, which have a prior claim. The old names should be restored on all new maps.

Commodore Jansen, of the Dutch Navy, makes the following interesting remarks on the Spitzbergen fishery of his countrymen: 'When our whalers first came to Spitzbergen, they met with the whales in great quantities, enjoying all the luxury of this most exquisite feeding ground, the best perhaps in the whole Arctic region. The whales were found sporting in open water off shore, with their huge backs above water, or taking their *siesta* in a calm bay, surrounded by abundance of food. This was a most glorious time for the whales—the paradise of their history. In spite of the yearly increase of whalers, and the great number of whales that were killed on the same spot, they always resorted to this favourite ground. During this first period, called the "Shore Fishery," we had an oil-boiling establishment at Smeerenburg, on Amsterdam Island, near the N.W. point of Spitzbergen. Every year our whalers went straight to this island; each vessel had six or seven boats, and a large complement of men, who were employed in killing whales, bringing them ashore, and making oil as fast as possible. Thousands and thousands of whales were killed, and at last, from about 1640-50, they ceased for a time to come at all to the west coast of Spitzbergen. As soon as the

scarcity  
Whalin  
to their  
out on  
any isla  
whaling  
burg an  
that a gr  
the N.W  
that dir  
whales t  
horrible  
whaling-  
the whal  
similar b  
in the ice  
ice betwe  
"West Ice  
"West Ice  
this West  
sometime  
abundant  
Spitzberg  
smaller an  
common y  
was great  
called a "  
was not s

scarcity of whales was felt, the directors of the Dutch Whaling Company made great efforts to follow them to their place of retreat. Several ships were sent out on exploring expeditions, but they did not find any islands besides those round Spitzbergen, nor any whaling-ground as easy and profitable as Smeerenburg and its vicinity had been. It had been remarked that a great number of whales took their flight round the N.W. point of Spitzbergen to the east, and in that direction our whalers went in search of the whales that came no more to the vicinity of that horrible slaughter-place, Smeerenburgh. This new whaling-ground was called "*to the Eastward*," and the whale that was caught there differed from a similar black whale that took its flight to the west, in the ice-bearing southerly Greenland current. The ice between Spitzbergen and Greenland was called "*West Ice*," and the whales that retreated into it the "*West Ice Whales*." After the havoc at Smeerenburg this *West Ice Whale* became shy, cunning, wild, and sometimes desperate. The other whale was more abundant in unusual years, when the ice east of Spitzbergen drifted in great quantities, and with smaller and flatter floes, much lower down than in a common year. Such an unusual year, in which there was great abundance of this particular whale, was called a "*South Ice*" year. This *South Ice Whale* was not so shy and cunning as the *West Ice Whale*,

which leads to the conclusion that the *South Ice* years must have been very unusual. I do not believe that any ship went to the east coast of Spitzbergen from the south, &c. I am sure that no ship has ever been in the ice, between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya, unless along the coast of Novaya Zemlya. In ordinary years, our whalers were obliged to go in search of whales in the *West Ice*, where many ships were lost, and in about 1650 the whaling business was made a free trade. Every year from 100 to 200 ships went along the Greenland ice up to Prince Charles' Island, on straight to  $79^{\circ}$  or  $79^{\circ} 30'$  N., very seldom higher or lower, and steered from thence west, in the ice-bearing southerly current. In a *South Ice* year, however, they did not go so far north, but steered east as soon as they detected that it was such a year. The real ice-fields, 36 miles long, are found 224 miles west of Spitzbergen, and the whalers penetrated through loose ice until they reached them. They then drifted with the field down to  $75^{\circ}$ , and, if they had a full cargo, returned home. If not, they went back again to  $79^{\circ}$ , to make the same circuit again, or else they tried the whaling-ground to the eastward of Spitzbergen.

\* Thennis Ys, one of the most experienced navigators in the seas near Novaya Zemlya, was of opinion that no vessel had been higher than  $82^{\circ}$ , owing to the large fields of ice which are nearly always found

to the  
can be s  
sailed n  
Zemlya,  
where B  
land the  
direction  
and there  
from No  
to the no  
more sm  
The state  
tions, dep  
afterwards  
dition to

But th  
north of N  
He says:—  
tain Corne  
longitude  
forty mile  
open water  
and from  
go three d  
birds there  
it appears

<sup>1</sup> See Com  
p. 178.

to the north of Novaya Zemlya, although no land can be seen. In 1664, Captain William de Vlamingh sailed along the north and north-east coast of Novaya Zemlya, round to the east, and reached the bay where Barents wintered in 1596, though he did not land there. From thence he sailed in an E.S.E. direction, in latitude  $74^{\circ}$  N., and saw no ice, but here and there a floe. He also went in a N.W. direction from Novaya Zemlya, as far as  $82^{\circ} 10'$ , and in going to the north the water invariably became more and more smooth, and there was less and less current. The state of the sea, with reference to ice obstructions, depended on prevailing winds. Vlamingh was afterwards selected to command an exploring expedition to New Holland.\*

But the most extraordinary Dutch voyage to the north of Novaya Zemlya is that recorded by Witsen.<sup>1</sup> He says:—'I am informed with certainty that Captain Cornelis Roule has been in  $84\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$  or  $85^{\circ}$ , in the longitude of Novaya Zemlya, and has sailed about forty miles between broken land, and saw a large open water behind it. He went on shore with his boat, and from a hill it appeared to him that they could go three days more to the north. He found lots of birds there, and very tame.' No dates are given, but it appears that Witsen received the account when

<sup>1</sup> See Commodore Jansen's Paper, in the R.G.S. Proceedings ix. p. 178.

his work was in the hands of the printer (1705) and he had no time to make enquiries.

In the year 1624 a small Dutch vessel of eighty tons, and a crew of ten men, commanded by Captain Williamszoon, with Jacob Jacobszoon as steersman, attempted to sail to the Pole. They reached to 3° N. of Spitzbergen, and then sailed along the edge of the Polar pack, but found no opening in any direction. So the good skipper Williamszoon was convinced that it was impossible to come under the 'Polum Arcticum,' and he wisely returned to his whaling-ground. His attempt aroused a desire to make the discovery in others, and two captains named Sybrandt and Claas Corneliszoon tried their luck, but were equally unsuccessful. Toris Carolus, who himself made two voyages to the north, published his sailing directions in 1634, in which he stated that 83° N. was the highest latitude that had ever been reached.

It would seem, from the above notes, that the Dutch frequenters of Spitzbergen had made no material addition to knowledge of the group up to the end of the seventeenth century. They never went beyond the Seven Islands and Hinlopen Strait, on the north coast, and, in a bad year, they went round to the east, by doubling the south point of Spitzbergen, and proceeding to a great fishery in Disco Bay, off Edge Island. This is quite clear from what Frederick Martens tells us, who went to

Spitzbe  
the gro  
work.

We saw  
understa  
they go  
of the da  
Waygat g

But a

Martens,

and Outsg

as have no

Captain C

to the north

hindrance

in an open

afterwards

high land

East Lan

Gilies Lan

North-East

anchored in

This inform

whaling cap

Daines Barr

<sup>1</sup> Published

<sup>2</sup> It appears  
Sante, that Cor



Spitzbergen in 1671,<sup>1</sup> and wrote the best account of the group previous to the publication of Scoresby's work. He says: 'Then follow the Seven Islands. We saw no ships go any further, neither could I understand that ever any ship did go further, nor can they go so far every year towards the east, because of the danger of the ice. It is unknown whether the Waygat goeth through the country or no.'

But about thirty-five years after the time of Martens, two Dutch captains, named Cornelis Gilies and Outsger Rep, made voyages to the eastward, such as have never been equalled up to the present day. Captain Gilies, in 1707, passed more than a degree to the northward of the Seven Islands without any hindrance from ice, then sailed east for some leagues in an open sea, then bent his course south-east, and afterwards south. In latitude 80° N. he saw very high land about 25 miles to the east from North-East Land, which has since been known as Gilies Land. He then ran along the east side of North-East Land, entered Hinlopen Strait, and anchored in Lomme Bay, where he took two whales. This information was collected from Walig and other whaling captains at Helder, in 1775, and is given by Daines Barrington.<sup>2</sup> It exactly agrees, in all respects,

<sup>1</sup> Published by the Hakluyt Society in their volume for 1855.

<sup>2</sup> It appears, from the list of whaling captains, by Gerret Van Saute, that Cornelis Dirkzoon Gilies made voyages to Spitzbergen



with Van Keulen's chart. Thus the Dutch ascertained that the two inlets discovered and named by the English after Sir Thomas Smith and Alderman Freeman, were in reality straits, and they called them Hinlopen and Walter Tymens respectively. The Dutch also discovered the Seven Islands, the east coast of North-East Land, Gilies Land, and three islands off the east-coast of Edge Island, which were named Rijk Ys Islands. But they never saw the Wiche Island of the English, farther east, and that land was so clean forgotten, that both Scoresby and the Captain of the 'Recherche,' in their maps, put 'Wiche Land' as another name for the Rijk Ys Islands.

The Dutch knowledge of Spitzbergen is embodied in the chart of the Van Keulens (father and son), which went through several editions, and was the best authority on the subject throughout the

from 1700 to 1714, in a ship belonging to the town of Jhisp, in North Holland. His most successful year was 1705, when he got sixteen whales. In 1707 he seems to have sacrificed whaling for discovery; for, according to the list, he got no whales in that year. In the fourteen years he caught 122 whales. Outsger Rep is probably the Outsger Pieterszoon Rep of the list, who made voyages from 1700 to 1702 only, so that his discoveries cannot have been in the same year as those of Gilies. (See *Alphabetische Naam-lyst van all de Groenlandse en Straat Davissche Commandeurs, door Gerret van Saute. Haarlem, 1770.*) Walig, who furnished the information respecting the voyage of Gilies, is the Jan Simonszoon Walig of the list. He made thirty-one voyages to Spitzbergen, from 1714 to 1746, and used the charts prepared by Gilies.

eighte  
died i  
Keulen  
last ed  
after th  
and she  
its title  
paragin  
the pos  
referring  
the acc  
Van Keu  
Tobiesen  
a mistake  
tenants i  
different  
work. H  
every fea  
Dutch cha  
in Hinlop  
The I  
during th  
maintaine  
returns ar  
appears th  
ships ann  
year (1684

eighteenth century. John Van Keulen, the father, died in about 1705, and the son, Gerhard Van Keulen, issued his last publication in 1728. The last edition of their Spitzbergen chart was published after the return of Captain Gilies and Outsger Rep, and shows their discoveries. (Their names are on its title.) Dr. Petermann has written rather disparagingly of Van Keulen's chart, and has altered the position of Gilies Land from  $80^{\circ}$  to  $81^{\circ} 30'$ , referring to Barrington as his authority. But the account in Barrington agrees exactly with Van Keulen's chart,<sup>1</sup> and with the bearings taken by Tobiesen in 1864, so that the alteration is certainly a mistake. Mr. Foster, who was one of the lieutenants in Parry's expedition of 1827, gives a very different estimate of the value of Van Keulen's work. He says: 'We recognised distinctly almost every feature of the lands delineated in the old Dutch chart,' and he adds that several of the glaciers in Hinlopen Strait were faithfully laid down.

The Dutch whale fishery continued to flourish during the period that the gallant little Republic maintained its maritime greatness. The statistical returns are given from 1669 to 1775, from which it appears that between 1675 and 1690 over a hundred ships annually made the Spitzbergen voyage, in one year (1684) the large number of 242 vessels having

<sup>1</sup> See p. 49.

sailed. From 1672 to 1674 the war put an end to the fishery for a time, and again in 1691. The average loss of ships was 10 every year, and in 1678 as many as 18 were wrecked. After 1691 the number of whalers fell off. In 1700 there were 173, in 1707 the number that sailed was 131, and in 1717 there were 194. In 1769 there were 110, in 1775 the number fell to 88, and from that year the fishery gradually fell off, until it was finally extinguished at the breaking out of the French revolutionary war. The chief authority on the whale fishery of Holland, the Dutch Scoresby, is Zоргdrager, a daring skipper as well as an author, who made voyages in a ship belonging to Zaandam, from 1700 to 1705.<sup>1</sup>

Thus the whaling trade of the Hollanders gradually came to an end in the last half of the last century. Many names round the Spitzbergen shores, and great numbers of graves remain as memorials of their former hardihood. Treurenberg, the great bay on the northern coast, is from *Treuren*, to mourn; and Parry found numerous Dutch graves on every point, with dates from 1640 to 1738. It is a pity

<sup>1</sup> *Cornelis Gysbertszoon Zоргdragers Groenlandsche Visschery. Amsterdam, 1720. 4to. pp. 330, with maps and illustrations. See also a valuable recent prize essay on the same subject:—Geschiedenis der Noordsche Compagnie door Mr. S. Muller, Fz. Uitgegeven door het Provinciaal Utrechtsch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetenschappen. Utrecht, 1874.*

that the  
enterpr  
achiven  
Arctic e  
of Vlan  
left am  
rightful  
other co  
shalling  
unknown  
Mr. I  
pains to  
nected wi  
vessels ha  
the Pole.  
fabulous t  
could have  
first is sup  
bell (the  
years befo  
the weathe  
Campbell  
years after  
lander, wh  
been to 89  
Mr. Olden  
Wheatly, w  
that they l

that the Dutch should not resume their Spitzbergen enterprises, and, reviving the memory of former achievements, once more take their place among Arctic explorers. Surely the countrymen of Barents, of Vlamingh, and of Linshoten, have the old spirit left among them, and are ready to assume their rightful part in the same rank with the explorers of other countries, who are now gathering and marshalling their forces for an onslaught upon the vast unknown Polar region.

Mr. Daines Barrington, who, in 1773, took great pains to collect every story he could pick up connected with this subject, gives six instances of Dutch vessels having been alleged to have nearly reached the Pole. They are all, however, so obviously fabulous that it is astonishing how any sane man could have been found to give credit to them. The first is supplied by one Dallie, who told Dr. Campbell (the editor of Harris' 'Voyages') that, fifty years before, he went in a ship to  $88^{\circ}$  N., where the weather was warm, and there was no ice. Dr. Campbell told the story to Mr. Barrington thirty years afterwards. The second came from a Hollander, who once swore to a Mr. Grey that he had been to  $89^{\circ} 30'$  N.; and Mr. Grey told the story to Mr. Oldenburg in 1663. The third is from a Mr. Wheatly, who had been told by three Dutch skippers that they had heard of a Dutch ship having been in

89° N. The fourth is from a Mr. Reed, who told Mr. Barrington that, fifteen years before, he had himself been told by one Hans Derrick,<sup>1</sup> that he had been in 86° N. with five other ships. The fifth instance is given by Captain John Wood, as his fifth reason for believing that he could sail to the North Pole. It is supplied by a Captain Goulden, who is said to have told the King in 1676 that he had heard from two Dutch skippers, twenty years before, that they had been in 89° N. They added, that four journals were kept on board the two ships, and that they agreed within four minutes.

But the sixth instance is the most absurd of all, although the authority for it is no less a person than Mr. Moxon, the hydrographer to the King's most excellent Majesty.

It appears that about twenty-two years before Mr. Moxon told the story, or in 1654, the credulous old gentleman went into a drinking house at Amsterdam to drink a cup of beer, and sat down by the public fire, among several other tipplers. Presently a sailor came in, and, seeing a friend over his beer, whom he supposed to be with the Greenland fleet, he enquired what accident brought him home so soon. 'Oh!' said the beer-drinker, 'we sailed to the North Pole and back.' This startled worthy Mr. Moxon, who

<sup>1</sup> A Hans Dirkszoon made voyages in a vessel from Krimpen, between 1753 and 1769. See *Alphabetische Naam-lyst*, &c., p. 49.

joined  
was  
he ha  
and t  
how r  
his qu  
open s  
that t  
mer. A  
were e  
not in  
lieved  
truth, f  
person,  
This  
publish  
the tru  
story to  
a second  
Wh  
therasel  
reply to  
proceed  
always t  
The  
fishery  
1820. F  
by Act o

joined in the conversation, asking if the statement was really true. Upon which the wag replied that he had not only been to the Pole, but  $2^{\circ}$  beyond it; and then the Dutch sailors evidently resolved to see how much the stranger could swallow. In answer to his questions, they told him that there was a free and open sea round the Pole, that they saw no ice, and that the weather was as hot as at Amsterdam in summer. At last the hydrographer thought that, as they were engaged in discourse with each other, he could not in modesty interrupt them longer; but he believed the Dutch sailor 'spoke matter of fact and truth, for he seemed a plain, honest and unaffectitious person, and one who could have no design upon me.'

This conversation was gravely written out, and published with a map, some silly arguments to prove the truth of the ale-house chaff, and a still sillier story to cap the whole. It found many readers, and a second edition appeared in 1697.

When Mr. Barrington asked the Dutch skippers themselves, he got the simple truth from them. In reply to his enquiries, they said, 'We can seldom proceed much higher than  $80^{\circ} 30' N.$ , but almost always to that latitude.'

The most flourishing period of the English fishery in the Spitzbergen seas was from 1752 to 1820. Bounties of forty shillings per ton were granted by Act of Parliament, and from 1733 to 1785 the

sums paid in bounties amounted to 1,266,430*l*. The quantity of shipping thus employed increased rapidly and in 1778 as many as 255 sail of whalers were employed in the Spitzbergen seas. As they usually ranged as high as 80° and 81° N. latitude, and as many of the whaling captains were not very accurate observers, there were numerous statements of vessels having gone still farther north, and all these stories were industriously collected by Mr. Barrington. But the English statements were far more modest than the Dutch, and 84° 30' was the highest latitude that was ever mentioned in them. Yet they were nearly all given from memory, either by voyagers who had themselves made the observations, or by others who had had intercourse with them. In the former case more than half were from oral testimony, given at a distance of eighteen to thirty years from the time when the respective voyages were performed.

The Polar pack drifts south during the summer and autumn, and no navigator has ever alleged that he has actually bored through it. The edge of this pack varies its position in the different seasons, in the Spitzbergen meridians. Sometimes it is close down upon Hakluyt Headland; at others it is much farther north: possibly in very extraordinary seasons it may not be met with before even the 83rd degree is reached. But wherever it may be, it is quite certain that no vessel has ever yet sailed beyond its

edge, and  
may have  
is no rea  
been nor  
Swedes i

The v  
the north  
nity, from  
latitudes  
vessel had  
would have  
5,000*l*. wa  
beyond the  
cap. 6).  
tempting  
arrangeme  
offered for  
By the new  
to receive  
87° N. 3,00  
It is satisf  
not been re  
which have  
and 25 Vic  
Althoug  
much towa  
northward,  
the careful



edge, and in this way, in remarkable seasons, some may have been in  $81^{\circ}$ ,  $82^{\circ}$ , and even  $83^{\circ}$ . Yet there is no really authentic instance of any vessel having been north of  $81^{\circ} 42'$ , the latitude attained by the Swedes in 1868.

The whalers received an inducement to push to the northward whenever there was a good opportunity, from the reward offered for attaining very high latitudes; and we may be well assured that if any vessel had succeeded, the proofs of such a voyage would have been forthcoming. In 1776 a reward of 5,000*l.* was offered to the first person who should sail beyond the 89th degree of latitude (Act 16 Geo. 3, cap. 6). In 1818 the inducement was made more tempting by a revision of the former Act, and an arrangement by which proportionate rewards were offered for partial success. (Act 58 Geo. 3, cap. 20.) By the new Act the first ship that sailed to  $83^{\circ}$  N. was to receive a reward of 1,000*l.*, to  $85^{\circ}$  N. 2,000*l.*, to  $87^{\circ}$  N. 3,000*l.*, to  $88^{\circ}$  N. 4,000*l.*, and to  $89^{\circ}$  N. 5,000*l.* It is satisfactory to find that this excellent law has not been repealed in the recent Acts of Parliament, which have swept away a vast number of old Acts (4 and 25 Vic. cap. 101, and 26 and 27 Vic. cap. 125).

Although the whaling voyages have not done much towards an extension of our knowledge to the northward, yet to the great work of Scoresby, and to the careful observations of himself and his father, we



are indebted for the most useful account of the Spitzbergen seas, and of the ice in them, up to the edge of the Polar pack.

Dr. Scoresby found that the edge of the ice, during the winter and early spring, extended in a line from the east coast of Greenland to the northward of Jan Mayen Island, crossing the meridian of Greenwich between the 71st and 72nd degrees of latitude, according to the year, then passing up north for several degrees and leaving a bay, and finally stretching away east to Novaya Zemlya. The deep bay thus left to the eastward of the Greenwich meridian, which is probably caused by the Gulf-stream, forms the route by which the whalers proceed to their fishing-ground, and is called the 'Whale-fisher's bight.' When the ice in the spring extends from the head of this bay to Spitzbergen, it is called a *close season*; and when navigation is open along the west coast, as far as Hakluyt Headland, it is an *open season*. In an *open season* a large channel of water lies between the land and the ice, from 20 to 50 leagues in breadth, as far as 79° to 80°, where the ice generally closes round again, and touches the islets to the northward of Spitzbergen; but even in an *open season* the ice appears again on the east side of Spitzbergen, and extends thence to Novaya Zemlya. In a close season there is a barrier of pack-ice extending from the south side of Spitzbergen, and the

whalers e  
boring th  
the other  
Such  
first appr  
all obstru  
however,  
side of Sp  
on the me  
of latitude  
Greenland  
with in the  
caused by  
current from  
N.E. side o  
opened on  
line of the  
degree in t  
direction, to  
coast of Gr  
a line of m  
rising from  
feet, and t  
glaciers, wh  
but they ar  
which drifts  
extensive fie  
seas in May

whalers enter it without hesitation, and persevere in boring their way through it until the open water on the other side is reached.

Such is the usual state of the ice when the whalers first approach it in April: but by the end of June all obstructions so far south have disappeared. It is, however, very remarkable, that while, on the west side of Spitzbergen, the ocean is annually navigable on the meridians of  $5^{\circ}$  to  $10^{\circ}$  E. to the 80th degree of latitude, in all other parts of the distance from Greenland to Novaya Zemlya the pack is usually met with in the 74th or 75th degree. This, no doubt, is caused by the Gulf-stream, and by the set of the current from the N.E., which drives the ice on to the N.E. side of Spitzbergen, while a navigable lane is opened on its western shores. In the summer the line of the Polar pack extends from about the 80th degree in the meridian of Spitzbergen, in a S.W. direction, to the 74th or 75th degree on the east coast of Greenland. The Spitzbergen coast presents a line of mountainous peaks, ridges, and needles, rising from the sea to a height of 3,000 and 4,000 feet, and the intervening valleys are filled with glaciers, which occasionally send off small icebergs; but they are neither numerous nor bulky. The ice which drifts from the Polar region in the form of extensive fields, begins to appear in the Spitzbergen seas in May and June, and is of most formidable

character. These fields are often 30 miles broad and 100 in length. They are 10 to 15 feet thick when flat, but when pressed up and hummocky their thickness is often as much as 40 to 50 feet. Scoresby says they are not unfrequently in single sheets of solid transparent ice, near 40 feet in thickness. They drift away to the S. and S.W., and when they come in contact with each other the pressure is fearful, a noise is heard like long resounding peals of thunder, and ridges of broken-up ice rise high up into the air. Numbers of vessels have been destroyed by the pressure between two fields, and when large fleets frequented these seas as many as twenty-three have been lost in a single season.

All the speculations of early navigators on the possibility of reaching the Pole were founded on the false idea that ice was only formed in the neighbourhood of land, and never in the open sea. Scoresby, however, found that ice was formed in the Spitzbergen seas during nine months of the year; and that neither calm weather nor the proximity of land were essential for its formation. The land does not afford any assistance, nor even shelter that cannot be dispensed with during the operation of freezing, and Scoresby often saw ice grow to a consistence capable of stopping the progress of the ship, with a brisk wind even when exposed to the waves of the Atlantic. Dr. Walker, of the 'Fox,' gives the temperature at which

the surface  
Kane found

The  
performed  
meridians  
manded by

They  
tion, on A  
to be of ex  
elder Seon  
apprehensi  
the value o  
perienced  
discerned i  
There was  
horizon wh  
cluded hop  
ice-blink  
blueish grey  
skirting the  
cation of wa  
a transie  
the watchf  
perceived o  
water in s  
he knew it  
swell, which  
to the sur

the surface freezes in Baffin's Bay at  $28\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ . Dr. Kane found it to be  $29^{\circ}$  in Smith Sound.

The most interesting voyage to the far north, performed by an English whaler on the Spitzbergen meridians, is that recorded of the 'Resolution,' commanded by Captain Scoresby, in 1806.

They entered the ice, in the good ship 'Resolution,' on April 28, in latitude  $76^{\circ}$  N., and found it to be of extraordinary width and compactness. The elder Scoresby pressed into ice which, to ordinary apprehension, was impenetrable. But now was shown the value of experience and intelligence. The experienced eye of the veteran ice navigator alone discerned indications of open water to the northward. There was a strong 'ice-blink' along the northern horizon which, to all minds on board but one, precluded hope. But Scoresby, narrowly scanning this 'ice-blink' from the main-topmast head, discerned a blueish grey streak *below* the 'ice-blink,' and closely skirting the horizon. He knew this to be an indication of water beyond the pack, yet it might merely be a transient lane or pool, and of no extent. But the watchful veteran detected another sign. He perceived occasionally a very light motion of the water in contact with lumps of ice near the ship. He knew that this could only arise from a distant swell, which must proceed from an open sea either to the south or north. The distance he had pene-

trated into the ice, and the unmixed 'ice-blink' astern, convinced him that it did not come from the south. With conviction came the resolution to push on through the formidable body of consolidated ice still before him. Every effort was made, boats were hoisted and lowered to break the ice ahead; channels were cut with ice-saws; the crews towed, tracked, and sallied the ship by running in a body from one side to the other. At length, in  $80^{\circ}$  an open sea was reached. It was bounded on the north in about  $81^{\circ} 30'$  by the solid Polar pack, but was 50 or 60 miles wide, and extended for an unascertained distance from E.N.E. to W.S.W. The fact was that, from reasons due probably to prevailing winds, a great mass of ice had broken off from the main pack, and drifted south very early in the spring, before the main pack began to move, thus leaving this broad open lane, which would of course disappear when the main body began to move latter in the season. Meanwhile Scoresby sailed across it to the edge of the northern pack, taking several whales; and, at midnight on the 24th of May, a careful observation gave him a latitude of  $81^{\circ} 12' 42''$  N. Next morning his latitude by dead reckoning was  $81^{\circ} 30'$  N. in  $19^{\circ}$  E., where the ice was fixed and solid to the north, but there was open sea from E.N.E. to S.E., with a water sky.

The whalers have made us familiar with the

nature of  
and Spitz  
supply the  
mation re  
region th  
desire to  
well as to  
through a  
example v  
followed, a  
highest ho

At pre  
Peterhead,  
months of  
from Jan M  
to kill seals

In Feb  
46,252 seal  
577 tons of  
besides the  
with a tota  
value of the

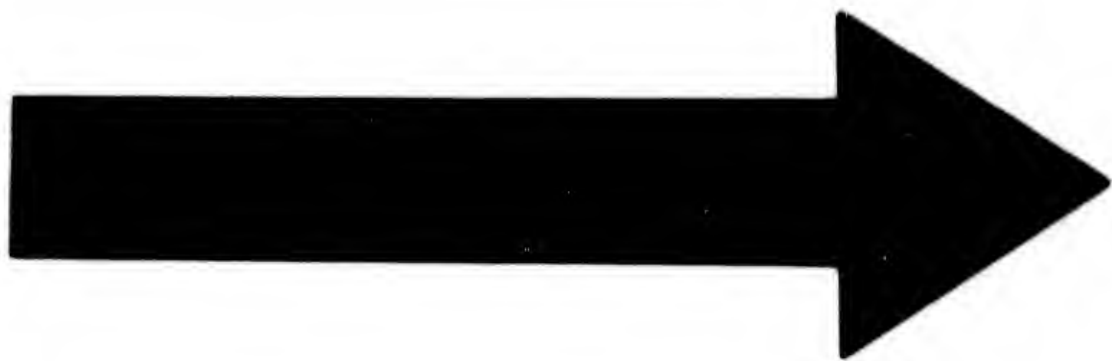
The ship  
proceed up  
only, sailin  
Spitzbergen  
to the Norw

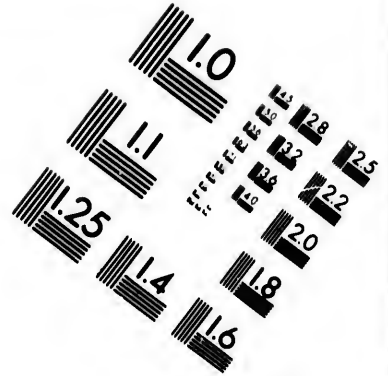
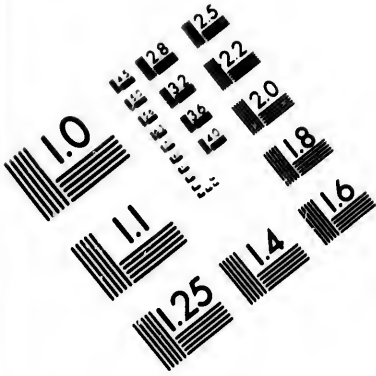
nature of the ice between the east coast of Greenland and Spitzbergen, and the valuable works of Scoresby supply the best and most interesting mass of information respecting all the phenomena of the Arctic region that has yet been published. His strong desire to render his observations useful to science, as well as to the practical navigator, induced him to go through a special course of study, and he thus set an example which in many instances has since been followed, and has led to results which reflect the highest honour on the mercantile marine.

At present the whaling fleet, from Dundee and Peterhead, proceeds to the edge of the ice in the months of February and March, which then extends from Jan Mayen Island in a north-easterly direction, to kill seals.

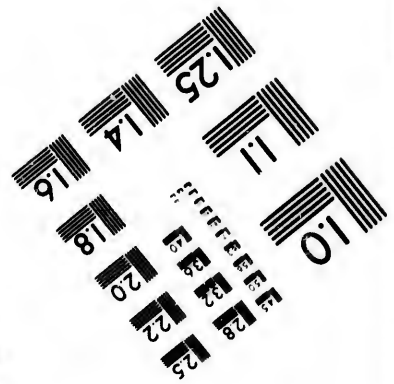
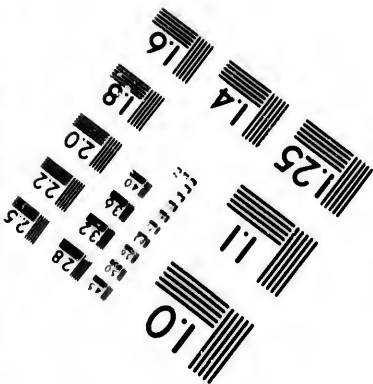
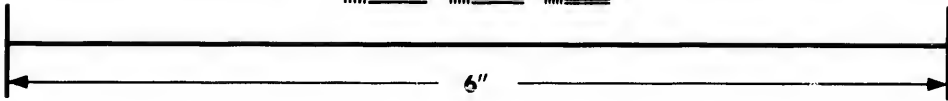
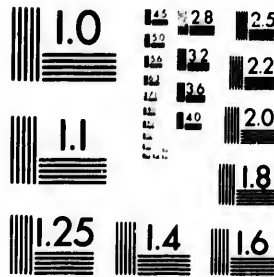
In February and March of 1874, there were 46,252 seals killed at the edge of the ice, yielding 577 tons of oil; the value of which was 20,195*l.*; besides the 46,252 skins, averaging 4*s.* 6*d.* each, or with a total value of 10,401*l.* So that the total value of the seal fishing for 1874 was 30,601*l.*

The ships return in May, and most of them then proceed up Baffin's Bay for the whaling. A few only, sailing from Peterhead, now frequent the Spitzbergen seas in the summer, which are thus left to the Norwegian sealing fleet.





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503



15 128  
12 132  
11 136  
10 140  
9 144  
8 148  
7 152  
6 156  
5 160  
4 164  
3 168  
2 172  
1 176

18  
17  
16  
15  
14  
13  
12  
11  
10  
9  
8  
7  
6  
5  
4  
3  
2  
1

## CHAPTER V.

THE SPITZBERGEN ROUTE—TCHITSCHAKOFF—PHIPPS—  
BUCHAN—CLAVERING—LUTKE.

DURING the last hundred years several Government expeditions, sent by Russia, England, Sweden, and Germany, have examined the pack edge between Greenland and Novaya Zemlya. The lead was taken by the Russians.

The Russian plan was to form a depôt in Bell Sound, on the coast of Spitzbergen, where five houses were erected by Lieutenant Nemtinoff in the summer of 1764, and where stores were landed; and thence to push through the ice, if possible, to the Pacific. Three ships (the largest 90, the two others 72 feet long) were built by an Englishman named Lambe, at Archangel, and on May 9, 1765, the expedition sailed under the command of Captain Vassili Tchitschakoff. He found the west coast of Spitzbergen blocked up with an unusual quantity of ice, with which he continued to do battle during two months; but could never reach higher than  $80^{\circ} 26' N$ . He returned to Archangel, and was sent with the same ships to make

another  
May 1  
heavy  
a latit  
hopeles  
at Bell  
progress  
to the n  
In  
revived  
collected  
English  
papers b  
of Febru  
proposal  
far navig  
and 'orde  
undertake  
countenan  
that coul  
horse' an  
strongest  
for the se  
appointed  
was Hora  
comprehe  
tion the u  
1 Enter

another attempt in the following year, sailing on May 19. He again found an impenetrable barrier of heavy ice north of Spitzbergen, and after attaining a latitude of  $80^{\circ} 30' N.$  he gave the matter up as hopeless. A party of Russians had twice wintered at Bell Sound in charge of the stores, during the progress of these unsuccessful attempts to penetrate to the north.

In England, the idea of Polar discovery was revived by Mr. Daines Barrington, who assiduously collected every scrap of information from Dutch and English whalers on the subject, and read a series of papers before the Royal Society. In the beginning of February 1773 he induced that body to submit a proposal to the King for an expedition to try how far navigation was possible towards the North Pole; and 'orders were given that it should be immediately undertaken, with every encouragement that could countenance such an enterprise, and every assistance that could contribute to its success.' The 'Racehorse' and 'Carcass' bombs were fixed upon as the strongest of His Majesty's ships, and as best adapted for the service, and Captains Phipps and Lutwidge appointed to command them. One of the volunteers was Horatio Nelson;<sup>1</sup> and when those who cannot comprehend the value of their scientific results question the utility of Arctic expeditions, they may well

<sup>1</sup> Entered as captain's coxswain on board the 'Carcass.'

be told that the education received in voyages of discovery in the ice conduces to the formation of naval character, and that the Polar pack taught lessons which bore fruit off Cape Trafalgar.

The expedition sailed from the Nore on June 2, 1773, and sighted the coast of Spitzbergen on the 28th. The two ships were stopped by the ice off Hakluyt Headland as usual, and attempted a passage to the westward; but the ice was quite fast in that direction, and a westerly course was given up after they had reached  $2^{\circ}$  E., in latitude  $80^{\circ} 36'$  N. Captain Phipps then stood into every opening he could find to the northward; but was soon stopped, at every attempt, by solid fields of ice. There was a great swell from the south-west. During the last ten days of July, Captain Phipps continued to search for an opening along the pack edge, running into all the bays, going round every point of ice, and forcing the ships by press of sail as far as possible through the loose pack. Captain Lutwidge, from the top of a high mountain on one of the Seven Islands, saw one continued plain of smooth unbroken ice for a distance of twelve leagues to the east and north-east, bounded only by the horizon.

Soon afterwards a midshipman named Walden was sent to land on an island to report upon the state of the ice, and Captain Phipps named it Walden Island. This was on August 6. The ice at the pack

edge v  
highest  
of the  
point,  
Islands,  
closed  
island o  
line ext  
and had  
any direc  
was to be  
pedition  
having m  
nation of  
through i  
change of  
northern e  
It was  
Phipps wer  
and when,  
counts of a  
another att  
who had re  
the interior  
commander  
hitherto im  
named the  
'Trent' (2

edge was 24 feet thick, when they attained their highest latitude in  $80^{\circ} 48'$ , north of the central part of the Spitzbergen group; and their most easterly point, on August 7, was  $20^{\circ}$  E., near the Seven Islands, where the ice, in heavy fields and floe pieces, closed round until it rested upon the north-east island of Spitzbergen. They had thus examined a line extending over twenty degrees of longitude, and had found no opening in the Polar pack in any direction. It was quite evident that no passage was to be found north of Spitzbergen; and the expedition returned to England in September, after having made a very careful and persevering examination of the ice, and having attempted to bore through it at every point that offered the remotest change of success. Captain Brook surveyed the northern coast of Spitzbergen in 1807.

It was generally supposed, however, that Captain Phipps went out in a peculiarly unfavourable season; and when, in 1817, the whalers brought home accounts of a remarkably open sea, it was resolved that another attempt should be made. Captain Buchan, who had recently returned from an expedition into the interior of Newfoundland, was selected as the commander of this new and final assault upon the hitherto impenetrable barrier. Two old whalers, named the 'Dorothea' (370 tons), and the brig, 'Trent' (250 tons), were bought, provisioned for

two years, and commissioned—the former, by Captain Buchan, the latter by the gallant Franklin, then a lieutenant. The late Admiral Beechey, and that veteran Arctic explorer, Sir George Back, served on board the ‘Trent.’

The expedition left the Thames on April 25, 1818, and a leak in the ‘Trent’ was almost immediately found to increase to an alarming extent. Its cause, a bolt-hole having been left open, was not discovered until they were in the ice. In May, the ‘Dorothea’ and ‘Trent’ were stopped by the main pack in latitude 80°, and took refuge in Magdalena Bay, at the north-west corner of Spitzbergen. Early in June they again put to sea, and were driven into the pack by a heavy swell from the south, where they were beset in the very position that all other expeditions from the time of Hudson had been stopped. On again examining the edge of the ice, early in July, a channel was found, which both vessels entered under full sail; but it soon came to an end, and the vessels were again beset by the close pack. Desperate efforts were made to bore through the ice, the men dragged the vessels along whenever the slightest opening occurred, all sail was set, and in this way they at last reached their highest latitude, in 80° 34’ N. But the whole body of ice was drifting south, and after strenuous exertions, by warping and dragging, they found they had actually lost twelve miles of northing

at the  
experie  
feet th  
warks.  
injury.  
miles wi  
to get l  
thorough  
done on  
then det  
direction  
vessels w  
drove the  
‘Doroth  
counters  
sprung an  
to aband  
The exp  
of about  
accomplis  
it from 10  
equally in  
The v  
‘Griper’ (C  
dulum obs  
of the ec  
Spitzberge  
May 11, 18

at the end of the day. During this time both vessels experienced some very severe nips. The ice was 15 feet thick, and was often piled up above the bulwarks. The 'Dorothea' especially sustained serious injury. At this time they had penetrated for thirty miles within the pack, and it took them ten days to get back to the open water to the southward, thoroughly convinced that nothing more could be done on the Spitzbergen meridians. Captain Buchan then determined to examine the pack edge in the direction of Greenland, and on July 30 the two vessels were caught in a furious gale of wind, which drove them to take refuge in the pack again. The 'Dorothea' sustained so much damage from her encounters with the ice—so many of her beams were sprung and timbers broken—that it became necessary to abandon the enterprise and return to England. The expedition of Buchan effected the examination of about the same extent of the pack edge as was accomplished by his predecessor Phipps, sailing along it from 10° E. to 10° W. ; but both found the barrier equally impenetrable.

The voyage of Clavering and Sabine in the 'Griper' (gun-brig), for the purpose of making pendulum observations, resulted in a further examination of the edge of the pack between Greenland and Spitzbergen. The 'Griper' sailed from the Nore on May 11, 1823, and anchored in a Spitzbergen harbour

near Hakluyt Headland, on June 30, where Captain Sabine landed with his instruments. While the pendulum observations were in progress, Captain Clavering determined to examine the ice, and, getting under way on July 5, sailed due north from Cloven Cliff for twenty-five miles, and found the pack edge extending east and west as far as the eye could reach, in latitude  $80^{\circ} 20' N.$  He then examined the ice to the westward for sixty miles (to  $11^{\circ} W.$ ); but found it closely packed, and no opening in any direction. In the end of July, the 'Griper' sailed for the east coast of Greenland.

While these renewed efforts were being made to penetrate the icy barrier between Greenland and Spitzbergen, the Russian Government was prosecuting similar researches between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya. These researches were conducted by Admiral Lutke, who was employed in surveying the coast of Novaya Zemlya from 1821 to 1824. In 1821 he examined the west coast of Novaya Zemlya as far as  $74^{\circ} 45' N.$ , where it was free from ice. In 1822 he got as far as Cape Nassau, in  $76^{\circ} 35' N.$ , in August, but found the ice accumulated there to such an extent that it was impossible to proceed farther. An attempt to round Cape Nassau in the same month was equally unsuccessful from the same cause. In 1824 he sailed with orders to attain as high a latitude as possible, at a distance from the coast. He arrived

at the  
and ex  
longitu  
still str

Thu

chakoff,  
many h  
the outc  
of Spit  
Dutch s  
the sam  
Zemlya.

the other  
to bore o  
stupendo

A gre

the impr  
and it oc  
Arctic w  
Parry, th  
portant a  
travelling  
only effici  
suggested  
Parry, as  
took, and  
journey;  
system of



at the edge of the Polar pack in latitude  $75^{\circ} 30'$  N., and examined it to westward as far as  $43^{\circ} 49'$  E. longitude (in latitude  $76^{\circ} 5'$  N.) whence he saw it still stretching away to the westward.

Thus, while Hudson, Poole, Fotherby, Tchitschakoff, Phipps, Scoresby, Buchan, Clavering, and many hundreds of whalers had carefully examined the outer edge of the mighty Polar pack to the north of Spitzbergen, the voyages of Barents and other Dutch seamen, of Hudson, Wood, and Lutke effected the same object between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya. Hudson in one direction, and Buchan in the other, made very gallant but fruitless endeavours to bore or force their way through the close pack of stupendous floes and fields of ice.

A great mass of experience had sufficiently proved the impracticability of sailing to the North Pole; and it occurred to those two most eminent of our Arctic worthies, Sir John Franklin and Sir Edward Parry, that the true way of effecting this most important and interesting exploration was by means of travelling with sledges over the ice. Thus was the only efficient method of Arctic exploration at length suggested by the two highest of Arctic authorities. Parry, as it turned out, was wrong in the route he took, and in the time of year he selected for his journey; but he laid the foundation of that thorough system of Arctic investigation by means of sledges

which has since borne such rich fruit, and which has been brought to perfection by the genius of Sir Leopold M'Clintock. The exploration of fifty miles of coast by M'Clintock and one of his sledge parties is worth more to science than the discovery of 500 miles by a ship. In the one case the coast is accurately laid down, and the nature of its fauna, flora, geology, and physical characteristics is fully ascertained. In the latter, a coast is seen and very inaccurately marked by a dotted line on a chart, and that is all. Until the art of sledge-travelling was discovered, Arctic exploration was in its infancy.

Parry's proposal to attempt to reach the Pole, by means of travelling with sledge-boats over the ice, or through any spaces of open water that might occur, was approved by the Admiralty, and on April 3, 1827, he sailed in the 'Hecla,' with the intention of making the attempt on the meridian of Spitzbergen. After rounding Hakhyt Headland, the 'Hecla' attained the very high latitude of  $81^{\circ} 5' N.$ , with nothing but loose drift ice to the northward, and no appearance of the main pack. This was on June 14. But Parry's object was to reach a secure harbour, and not to press to the northward in his ship; and he at last succeeded in finding a good anchorage for the 'Hecla,' in a bay which was called Hecla Cove, on the northern shore of Spitzbergen— $79^{\circ} 55' N.$  and  $16^{\circ} 53' E.$

The  
attemp  
future c  
which s  
emulati  
cove wh  
mand of  
Ross in  
grand bu  
On a fin  
ture four  
'Enterpr  
started fo  
Beverley,  
Edward I  
and two r  
boats wer  
7 feet car  
timbers o  
of the fra  
in order t  
sions with  
of waterp  
fir plank,  
plank, all  
each side  
with meta  
entirely re

Then commenced that bold and interesting attempt, which, though unsuccessful, has supplied future explorers with information of great value, and which should excite in them a spirit of generous emulation. The 'Hecla' was safely moored in the cove which bears her name, and left under the command of Lieutenant Crozier, the future colleague of Ross in his Antarctic voyage, and of Franklin in his grand but fatal discovery of the North-West Passage. On a fine afternoon on June 21, with the temperature four degrees above freezing, the two boats, the 'Enterprise' and 'Endeavour,' were manned, and started for the North Pole. Parry himself, with Mr. Beverley, was in the first, while James Ross and Edward Bird officered the second. Ten blue-jackets and two marines formed the crew of each boat. The boats were flat-bottomed, with the extreme breadth of 7 feet carried well forward and aft, 20 feet long, with timbers of tough ash and hickory. On the outside of the frame, a new system of planking was adopted, in order to secure elasticity in the frequent concussions with the ice. It consisted first of a covering of waterproof canvass, coated with tar, then a thin fir plank, then a sheet of felt, and lastly, a thin oak plank, all secured to the timbers by iron screws. On each side of the keel there was a strong runner shod with metal, like that of a sledge, on which the boat entirely rested when on the ice. A hide span, across

the fore part of the runners, had two horsehair drag-ropes attached to it. The boats had two thwarts, a locker at each end, a light framework along the sides, for containing provisions and spare clothes, a bamboo mast and tanned duck-sail, fourteen paddles, and a steer-oar. They started with seventy-one days' provisions. The weather was calm and clear, and as they paddled past the Seven Islands, the prospect looked very favourable, with loose sailing ice ahead; but on the 23rd they came to the close pack, and were obliged to haul the boats upon a floe in  $81^{\circ} 12' 51''$  N.

The travelling operations then commenced. The weight of each boat was 1,539 pounds, and the total weight, with provisions, 3,753 pounds, or 268 pounds per man, besides four light sledges weighing 26 pounds each. The daily allowance for each man was, ten ounces of biscuit, nine of pemmican, one of cocoa, and a gill of rum. They slept in the boats, with the sails as awnings, and travelled during the night.

Parry's journey was one of the most laborious and disheartening that can be conceived, and required an astonishing amount of resolute determination both in officers and men. The season was of a most exceptional character. More rain had fallen than during seven previous summers taken together, and the great Polar field-ice, generally met with in

80° or  
the ice  
broken  
by the  
extent,  
and the  
journeys  
pools of  
constant.  
The rain  
on the 1  
many pla  
men call  
immense  
close toge  
at both e  
distance,  
he caused  
through t  
reached a  
ice becomi  
from 30 to  
nothing b  
the 20th t  
long, 15 t  
the margi  
some time  
was bay ice

80° or 81°, had not even begun to drift south. Thus the travelling was over the loose pack, which was broken into small pieces, and was rotted and decayed, by the unusual rainfall. The floes were of small extent, and intersected by high ridges of hummocks; and the men had to make three and sometimes four journeys, with the boats and provisions; while the pools of water which divided them, necessitated the constant lurching and hauling up of the boats. The rain had caused large pools of water knee-deep on the floes, the snow was soft and heavy, and in many places there were large patches of what the men called 'penknife ice.' This is composed of innumerable needle-like crystals placed vertically close together, from 5 to 10 inches long, and pointed at both ends. Parry describes it as looking, at a distance, like green velvet, and he fancied it must be caused by heavy drops of rain falling downwards through the ice. It was not until July 7 that they reached a level floe; and on the 11th they found the ice becoming much heavier, with ridges of hummocks from 30 to 40 feet high, from the summits of which nothing but ice was to be seen in any direction. On the 20th they hauled over a floe about half a mile long, 15 to 20 feet thick, with huge hummocks at the margin, indicating a tremendous pressure at some time or other. Between the heavy floes there was bay ice, only two or three feet thick, which had

formed during the previous winter in the interstices of the pack. On the 22nd they came to floes three miles square, and fifteen to twenty feet thick, and here at last they seem to have been getting near that heavy Polar pack which every other expedition had met with, when in sight of the northern shores of Spitzbergen.

But it was too late. August was approaching, and the southerly drift of the ice was increasing to such an extent that they lost by drift almost as much as they gained by many hours of laborious and fatiguing work at the drag-ropes. The southerly drift exceeded four miles a day. It was useless to continue such fruitless exertions, and Parry at last determined to retrace his steps. His highest latitude was reached on July 23, and was found to be  $82^{\circ} 45'$  N. From this point there was a strong yellow ice-blink always overspreading the northern horizon, showing that the Polar pack was still stretching away far to the northward; for the yellow tinge denotes field-ice. They were now 172 miles from the 'Hecla,' but they had travelled over 292 miles of ground—200 by water before reaching the ice, and ninety-two over the loose pack. The boats returned to Hecla Cove, after an absence of sixty-one days, on August 21; and the 'Hecla,' sailing a few days afterwards, arrived in the Thames on October 6. Parry saw no sign of land from his extreme northern

point;  
in lati  
the eas  
have b  
the isla  
and Foy  
covered  
Foster s  
south as  
Fanshaw  
a small g  
By th  
obstacles  
attained  
reached, c  
chief reas  
dinary sea  
were seve  
experienced  
them was  
he had w  
light sledg  
he might  
southerly d  
ing due ne  
sions were  
involved i  
too small,

point; but there was mud in some holes in the ice, in latitude  $82^{\circ}$  N. Parry saw distant high land to the east of the Seven Islands, which must no doubt have been Cape Platen, on North-East Land, and the islands of Outsger Rep, Charles XII., and Broch and Foyne to the north-east of it, the last two discovered by Mr. Leigh Smith in 1871. Lieutenant Foster surveyed a part of Hinlopen Strait, as far south as  $79^{\circ} 33'$  N., and gave the names of Cape Fanshawe and Foster Islands to a point of land and a small group in that strait, at his farthest point.

By this noble attempt Parry, in spite of all the obstacles and difficulties which opposed his progress, attained the highest latitude that has ever been reached, of which there is authentic evidence. The chief reason of his want of success was the extraordinary season, and the unusual rainfall; but there were several errors in his travelling system which experience would have corrected. Foremost among them was the choice of a season for travelling. If he had wintered in Hecla Cove, and started with light sledges and boats on runners early in February, he might have made good progress each day if the southerly drift of the ice had not commenced marching due north at a regular daily rate until his provisions were half consumed. Another mistake was involved in the daily allowance of food, which was too small, as experience soon proved; and the weight



of 264 pounds per man was too heavy. But these points could only be learnt by experience, and Sir Edward Parry has the credit of having been the pioneer of arctic travelling, and of pointing out the true way of exploring the unknown polar regions. His party still retains the glory of having reached the highest northern latitude that has yet been attained by civilised man.

SWEDISH A

MEN—NO

1872-73

SINCE the 1  
has been de  
the edge of  
lish yatchsm  
the western  
been well k  
brief allusio  
abled thous  
last 276 ye  
lying islands  
necessary;  
directed to  
and least kn  
The great  
of two ocean  
tions. The



## CHAPTER VI.

*THE SPITZBERGEN ROUTE.*

SWEDISH AND GERMAN EXPEDITIONS—ENGLISH YACHTSMEN—NORWEGIANS—THE SWEDISH EXPEDITION OF 1872-73—LEIGH-SMITH.

SINCE the last voyage of Parry, much exploring work has been done in the seas round Spitzbergen, and at the edge of the Polar pack, by the Swedes, by English yachtsmen, by Germans, and Norwegians. Thus the western and northern coasts of Spitzbergen have been well known for nearly three centuries; and a brief allusion to the natural causes which have enabled thousands of vessels to visit them during the last 276 years, while the eastern coast and its off-lying islands still await thorough exploration, is now necessary; for modern efforts have mainly been directed to extending our knowledge of the eastern and least known side of Spitzbergen.

The great Spitzbergen archipelago feels the effects of two ocean currents flowing from opposite directions. The Polar stream flows from east to west

along the coast of Siberia, receiving great harvests of drift-wood from the Asiatic rivers. It then sweeps round the north end of Novaya Zemlya, and drifts the Polar ice and the Siberian trees upon the north-eastern and eastern shores of Spitzbergen and its out-lying islands. Hence the eastern side is blocked up with ice during most seasons, and its beaches are covered with drift-wood. The Polar current also carries the ice down between Spitzbergen and Greenland, and along the east coast of Greenland to Cape Farewell, at the maximum rate, according to Scoresby, of from eight to twelve miles a day. The warm current, from the Atlantic, forks off the south end of Spitzbergen. One portion flows on to the Novaya Zemlya coast, where it eventually mingles its water with the Polar current. The other branch flows up the west coast of Spitzbergen, and keeps it comparatively free from ice, although the ice streaming out of the Spitzbergen fiords edges it off to some distance from the land. Meeting the Polar current, its greater specific gravity, caused by its containing more salt than the Polar water, makes it plunge into the depths, and for a time become a submarine current, flowing in a direction contrary to that of the Polar current. Salt water weighs 28 per cent. more than distilled water, and the Gulf Stream contains thirty-five thousandths of salt to thirty-three thousandths in the Polar current. Moreover, bodies of

water  
their te  
beneath  
without  
some se  
north-we  
the surfa  
he found  
and once  
that the  
Stream w  
lighter th  
becomes f  
branch of  
submarine  
waters wit  
owing to t  
and eventu  
hammer ha  
down the  
contains A  
account for  
Spitzbergen  
side still re  
explorer.

The Sw  
been contin  
consecutive

water in rapid motion do not readily interchange their temperatures, so that a warm stream might flow beneath a cold stratum for a considerable distance without mixing. When Mr. Leigh Smith obtained some sea temperatures at various depths, off the north-west point of Spitzbergen, while the water on the surface was only a degree or two above freezing, he found the temperature at 500 fathoms to be  $52^{\circ}$ , and once even  $64^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit. Scoresby also suggests that the warm stratum is an extension of the Gulf Stream which, on meeting with water near the ice lighter than itself, sinks below the surface and becomes for a time a counter under-current. The branch of the Gulf Stream, which thus becomes a submarine current, slowly and gradually mixes its waters with the Polar streams, as it loses its velocity owing to the tendency of the warmer water to rise; and eventually becomes a part of it. Thus, Forchhammer has ascertained that the cold current flowing down the east coast of Greenland from the north contains Atlantic water. These oceanic movements account for the ease with which western and northern Spitzbergen have been explored, while the eastern side still retains many of its secrets, and invites the explorer.

The Swedish investigations in Spitzbergen have been continued under Professor Nordenskiöld, in five consecutive expeditions during 1858, 1861, 1864,

1868, and 1872. The expeditions have been sent with a view to making zoological, botanical, and geological collections, and to instituting a preliminary survey for measuring an arc of the meridian from the most northerly islands to the extreme south point. The expedition of 1864, conducted by M. Nordenskiöld and M. Duner, made astronomical observations at eighty different places on shore; and fixed the height of numerous mountains, the loftiest being Horn's Sound Peak, which was found to be 4,560 feet above the sea. The Swedes pressed farther east, on the north coast, than either Phipps or Parry, and rounded Cape Platen, to the east of the Seven Islands. They also, in 1864 and 1868, went down Hinlopen Strait nearly to its south-eastern entrance, and sighted land to the eastward, which has been called 'Swedish Foreland,' but which they at first believed to be the Gilies Land of Van Keulen's chart. It was in reality Wiehe Island. In 1868 the Swedes had an iron steamer, the 'Sophia,' in which they attained a latitude of  $81^{\circ} 42'$  N. in the meridian of  $18^{\circ}$  E. during the month of September.

The observations of the Swedes on the subject of the possibility of sailing or steaming through the Polar pack, confirm those of all the explorers that have gone before them since the day of Barents and Hudson. M. Nordenskiöld says: 'The field of drift ice to the north of Spitzbergen consists of ice so

close  
its wa  
propo  
of the  
sidera  
some  
coast o  
Septem  
water i  
see from  
always  
Polar B  
and ther  
trary to a  
tion. A  
Basin, wh  
is filled w  
which, d  
large ape  
however,  
would be  
an attempt  
passage of  
that passag  
to reach ev  
west side,  
the 80th d

closely packed together, that even a boat cannot force its way between the pieces, still less a vessel, though propelled by steam. In autumn the southern boundary of the ice moves, after long southerly winds, considerably to the north. Vessels can therefore sail at some period of almost every year along the north coast of Spitzbergen, in a tolerably clear sea; and in September and October it may happen that open water is to be found as far northwards as you can see from the vessel. The eastern coast is nearly always blocked up with ice. The idea that the Polar Basin is composed of an open sea, only here and there covered with drift ice, is in itself so contrary to all experience that it scarcely merits refutation. All experience seems to prove that the Polar Basin, when not covered with compact unbroken ice, is filled with closely-packed unnavigable drift ice, in which, during certain very favourable years, some large apertures may be formed, which apertures, however, do not extend very far to the north. It would be particularly unwise to choose the spring for an attempt to pass through the Polar pack and the passage of east Spitzbergen. At that time, and by that passage, it would be difficult, if not impossible, to reach even  $78^{\circ}$  of north latitude; whereas, on the west side, one can every year depend upon reaching the 80th degree of latitude; and in favourable years

it might be possible, in September and October, to sail even a couple of degrees higher.'

Dr. Petermann incited his countrymen in Germany to join the noble band of Arctic explorers; and at his own risk he fitted out a small vessel called the 'Germania,' which sailed from Bergen on May 24, 1868, under the command of Karl Koldewey, a native of Hoya, in Hanover. The whole crew only numbered eleven men. Unable to approach the east coast of Greenland, he made for the Spitzbergen seas, and attained a latitude of  $81^{\circ} 5' N$ . Captain Koldewey then sailed down Hinlopen Strait in August, sighting Wiche Island, and returned to Bergen on September 30, 1868.

In 1870 the Baron von Heuglin and Count Zeil sailed for Spitzbergen in a vessel commanded by the Norwegian captain Nils Isaksen, and first explored Stor Fiord, between the main land of Spitzbergen and Edge and Barents Islands. Van Heuglin also examined the whole extent of Alderman Freeman's Strait (Walter Thymen's Strait of the Dutch), which divides Edge from Barents Island, and rounded the north-easternmost point of Edge Island, which has been named Cape Heuglin. On August 16, 1870, Von Heuglin ascended a hill near the Cape, about 1,200 feet high, called Mount Middendorf, and sighted extensive land on the eastern horizon, consisting of a range of peaks half covered with snow,

with  
discov  
Dr. Pe  
has al  
Wiche  
the sou  
discove  
sisting  
occasion  
apparen  
is from  
Heuglin  
ing the  
comming  
Stream  
sioning t  
island.<sup>2</sup>

Amor  
been the  
the Spitz  
coast of  
islands, ex

<sup>1</sup> See p. 4

<sup>2</sup> 'Reisen  
M. Th. von  
mann. 8vo.

<sup>3</sup> See 'Se  
the Northern  
1861.)

with land behind them. He believed this to be a discovery, and to be part of a great continent, and Dr. Petermann named it King Karl Land. But, as has already been explained, it is undoubtedly the Wiehe Island discovered by the English in 1617.<sup>1</sup> On the southern shores of Freeman's Strait Von Heuglin discovered a vast accumulation of drift-wood, consisting of large stems of larch and birch, with occasional fragments of wreck. This drift-wood is apparently deposited by the current, the set of which is from the east and north-east. According to Von Heuglin, the current thence turns southward, washing the eastern shores of Edge Island, and finally commingling with the northward branch of the Gulf Stream in about the latitude of Bear Island, occasioning the prevalence of storms and mist round that island.<sup>2</sup>

Among English yachtsmen, Mr. Lamont has been the earliest and most persistent navigator of the Spitzbergen seas.<sup>3</sup> In 1861 he was off the south coast of Edge Island, and among the thousand islands, extending as far as the Ryk Ys Islands of

<sup>1</sup> See p. 40.

<sup>2</sup> 'Reisen nach dem Nordpolarmeer in den Jahren 1870-71, von M. Th. von Heuglin.' Erster Theil. (Braunschweig: G. Westermann, 8vo. 1872.)

<sup>3</sup> See 'Seasons with the Sea-horses; or, Sporting Adventures in the Northern Seas.' By James Lamont, F.G.S. (Hurst & Blackett, 1861.)



the Dutch, which Scoresby had supposed to be Wiehe Island. Mr. Birkbeck also made a yacht voyage to Spitzbergen in 1864, accompanied by Professor Newton of Cambridge and Mr. Graham Manners Sutton; and he hired a Norwegian sloop to accompany him. The two vessels separated off Stor Fiord. Mr. Newton, in the yacht, tried in vain to sail up the Fiord; while the sloop held on the N.E. as far as the Ryk Ys Islands, and sighted distant land to the eastward, which must have been Wiehe Island. The sloop was stopped by the ice, and had to return without doing as much as had been hoped.

But the most interesting voyages of recent times are those which have been undertaken by Mr. Leigh Smith, with a view to attaining the highest possible latitude, and of exploring the unknown lands to the eastward of Spitzbergen. In the year 1871 he was accompanied by the Norwegian Captain Ulve, and he was fortunate in finding a very favourable season for his purpose. He sailed down Hinlopen Strait in August, and reached a position at its south-eastern outlet, where Koldewey had been in 1868. He discovered this position, formerly supposed to be a peninsula, to be an island, having walked round it while out shooting, at one spell of eighteen hours. It is marked on the map as Waygat or Wilhelm Island. From this point he could see the land on the opposite shore, stretching far away a little north

of east,  
This d  
able pr  
East La  
usual, s  
visited  
rounded  
to the e  
was still  
visible  
observati  
enlarged  
southern  
farther to  
He subse  
the latitu  
was the  
ship, exe  
by the S  
Leigh Sm  
yacht the  
season.  
ice, and  
northern-  
undertook  
referred to  
It is,  
captains,



of east, and the farthest point was named Cape Mohn. This discovery of Smith and Ulve gives a considerable prolongation to the southern shore of North-East Land. The eastern sea was blocked with ice as usual, so Mr. Smith returned to the north coast, and visited the Seven Islands in September. He then rounded Cape Platen, and sailed about forty miles to the eastward, where the coast of North-East Land was still trending towards the east. The farthest visible point has been named Cape Smith. His observations have considerably altered the shape and enlarged the area of North-East Land; both the southern and northern shores extending very much farther to the eastward than was previously supposed. He subsequently, on the meridian of  $18^{\circ}$  E., attained the latitude of  $81^{\circ} 24'$  N., in September 1871. This was the highest that had then been reached in a ship, except by Scoresby in 1806 ( $81^{\circ} 30'$  N.), and by the Swedes in 1868 ( $81^{\circ} 42'$  N.). In 1872 Mr. Leigh Smith again sailed for Spitzbergen in his yacht the 'Samson,' but it was an unfavourable season. His vessel was considerably injured by the ice, and he was unable to get farther east on the northern-east coast than Weyde Bay. In 1873 he undertook a third voyage, which will be more fully referred to presently.

It is, however, to the hardy Norwegian sealing captains, and to Professor Mohn of Christiania, who

has watched over and utilised their work, that nearly all our knowledge of the eastern side of Spitzbergen is due. The fishery has been carried on by Norwegians since about 1820; but for many years they kept to the western side, and only by degrees extended their operations along the northern coast. They called the passage between the Seven Islands and the north cape of North-East Land the 'Northern Gate,' and the south-eastern outlet of Hinlopen Strait the 'Southern Gate;' and both were usually blocked up with ice. Captain Carlsen was the first to venture through the 'Northern Gate' in 1863, and he completed the circumnavigation of Spitzbergen. His was the first vessel that ever sailed round that group of snow-clad mountainous islands. She was a brig called the 'Jan Mayen.' On August 2, 1863, Captain Carlsen passed the Seven Islands, and on the 14th he had rounded the extreme point of North-East Land, and was beating through the channel between the main land and the 'High Island' (Groot Hoog Eyl) of the Dutch chart. On the 16th he sighted (Gilie's) Land; and on the 18th the 'Jan Mayen' sailed along the coast of Barents and Edge Islands, and past the entrance of Alderman Freeman's Strait. On the 21st she sailed round Hope Island, thus completing the circumnavigation; a feat which has never been performed before or since. Captain Carlsen has thus circumnavigated both Spitzbergen

and N  
he has  
brilliant  
Society  
In  
import  
Gate,' a  
thus cor  
Land, b  
August  
schooner  
Mathias  
to pass t  
point of  
when abo  
sighted G  
visited is  
vious year  
it in 170  
the whole  
ing days  
secured o  
the Dutch  
way they c  
ice coming  
sage at Wa  
was impos  
make their

and Novaya Zemlya, and for this great nautical feat he has received a gold watch, as a recognition of his brilliant achievements, from the Royal Geographical Society.

In 1864 the Norwegians made another most important voyage, passing through the 'Northern Gate,' and returning in boats by the 'Southern Gate,' thus completing the circumnavigation of North-East Land, but they left their vessels behind. Early in August 1864 Captain Tobiesen, in command of the schooner 'Æolus,' fell in with Capts. Aarström and Mathias off the Seven Islands, and they determined to pass the 'Northern Gate' and round the eastern point of North-East Land in company. On the 7th, when about twelve miles N. by W. of that point, they sighted Gilies Land, bearing S.E. by S. That unvisited isle, never seen except by Carlsen in the previous year since the stout Dutch skipper discovered it in 1707, remained in sight during the 7th and the whole of the 8th of August; and in the following days a great number of seals and walruses were secured on High Island, the Groot Hoog Eyl of the Dutch. But when they tried to return by the way they came, the Norwegians found so much drift-ice coming from the north, and blocking up the passage at Walrus Islands, that escape in that direction was impossible. The three vessels then tried to make their way to the southward, along the east

coast of North-East Land, which, as the Dutch described it, is bordered by a continuous ice-field. They could not reach the 'Southern Gate' in their vessels, so they were obliged to take to their boats, and abandon their valuable property, including seals and walruses worth 1,100*l*. The boats went up Hinlopen Strait, and all along the northern and western sides of Spitzbergen, to Ice Fiord, a distance of 700 miles, before they were picked up—Tobiesen by a sealing vessel; Aarström and Mathias by the 'Axel Thoresen,' of the Swedish Expedition. This remarkable adventure turned the attention of the Norwegians to Eastern Spitzbergen, as a new country abounding in seals and walruses; and it was suggested that it would be easier to reach it by sailing directly east from Bear Island, instead of going round Spitzbergen to the 'Northern Gate.' In fact, it was said that such a voyage was made by a Hammerfest captain in 1854, who actually landed either on Gilies or Wiche Island.

In July 1872 Captain Altmann found the eastern side of Spitzbergen freer from ice than he had known it for twenty years. He sailed from Ryk Ys Islands on the 26th, and on the 28th he sighted what he supposed to be Gilies Land, but which was really Wiche Island, discovered by the English in 1617.<sup>1</sup> The ice was packed close in shore, but Altmann sailed

<sup>1</sup> See p. 50.

along the  
three islands  
the three  
ice islands  
in 78° 4  
Capt  
sighted  
August 1  
morning  
collect d  
coast tre  
in a lofty  
an upright  
Beyond t  
direction,  
but there  
tance from  
three sepa  
land could  
mountains  
after Capt  
it, and saw  
the south  
southern an  
the edge of  
There was  
and some  
lated to a h

along the land, which appeared to be composed of three large and several small islands. On his map the three islands are named Bear, Gilies, and Fast-ice Islands, the southernmost point of the latter being in  $78^{\circ} 43' N.$

Captain Nils Johnsen, in the schooner 'Lydiana,' sighted the same land, in latitude  $78^{\circ} 10' N.$ , on August 16, and anchored close to it on the following morning. He landed, with some of his men, to collect drift-wood for fuel, which was plentiful. The coast trended on from N.E. to S.W., and terminated in a lofty hill, which rose sheer out of the sea like an upright wedge. It was named Cape Tordenskiold. Beyond this promontory the land takes a westerly direction, and appeared to curve into a deep bay, but there was a thick fog at the time. At some distance from the land three prominent hills looked like three separate islands, but, on a closer approach, low land could be seen to connect them. One of these mountains, crowning the north-east point, was named after Captain Johnsen. He climbed to the top of it, and saw the two other conspicuous hills, one to the south west, and the highest to the west. The southern and eastern shores were free from ice, but the edge of the pack was close in shore to the north. There was a vast mass of drift-wood on the beach, and some fragments of wreck, which had accumulated to a height of 20 feet above high-water mark.

Although decayed with age, some of it answered capitally as fuel. The greater portion consisted of the trunks of fir trees; and their position favoured the conclusion that the land must have been upheaved to the height of 20 feet at some comparatively recent period. Among other animals a fine reindeer was shot, in such good condition that there must be good store of pasturage somewhere on the island.

Captain Nilsen, in the schooner 'Freia,' sighted the same land on July 27, and noticed its steep cliffs, rising to a height of 1,000 to 1,200 feet. On the 31st the 'Freia' was off a small island at the extreme eastern point of the group, named Abel Island on the chart. To the east and north the sea was free from ice, except that a chain of bergs was drifting south. Sailing along the northern coast of the island, Nilsen saw that the Bear and Gilies Islands of Altmann were continuous. On this westward voyage great masses of ice were seen to the north, some of them 200 feet high and half a mile long. He sailed westward until he sighted Cape Torell, and then retraced his steps. On August 8 he sighted a high mountain on the re-discovered land, and thence followed the coast-line to the south-west. He must thus have circumnavigated the new land, but on the chart his track is shown as returning round the eastern point.

The  
Haarfa  
year I  
anniver  
that ki  
shown,  
the Eng  
In 1  
from Tr  
from Va  
They ave  
and carry  
year five  
towns, sa  
the Spitz  
yachts f  
(shark) t  
Tromsö, f  
fishery for  
fifty vesse  
aggregate  
Since t  
prise by C  
with a ski  
honour to  
ingly cont  
tife invest  
by year,

The high mountain seen by Nilsen was named Haarfagrehangen after Harold Haafagre; for in the year 1872 the Norwegians celebrated the 1000th anniversary of their union into one kingdom under that king. This large island, as has already been shown, was discovered, and named Wiche's Land by the English, in 1617.

In 1871 there were thirty-three sailing vessels from Tromsö, twenty-four from Hammerfest, and one from Vardö, engaged in the Arctic sealing trade. They average from thirty-five to forty tons apiece, and carry crews of ten or twelve men. In the same year five ships, including two steamers from southern towns, sailed from Tromsö to catch white whales in the Spitzbergen seas, besides one or two sailing yachts from Christiania; and the 'haakjewing' (shark) trade was represented by eight ships of Tromsö, fishing on the Spitzbergen bank. This same fishery for sharks, which yields cod-liver oil, employed fifty vessels from Hammerfest and Vardö, with an aggregate of 1,070 tons and 277 men.

Since the temporary abandonment of Arctic enterprise by Great Britain, Sweden and Norway have, with a skill and a resolution which do the highest honour to the gallant Scandinavian nation, perseveringly continued, year after year, to prosecute scientific investigations within the Arctic circle. Year by year, too, the Swedes and Norwegians have



acquired experience in ice navigation; and their steady determination to achieve success is a sure sign that they will eventually attain their end.

The Swedish expedition of 1872-73 was mainly equipped with the aid of funds subscribed in Göttenburg, under the superintendence of Professor Nordenskiöld, and it sailed from Tromsö on July 21, 1872. It was composed of the steamer 'Polhem,' the brig 'Gladan,' and the steamer 'Onkel Adam.' The 'Polhem' is a Government steamer, hitherto employed, during the winter, on postal service between the island of Gothland and the mainland of Sweden, and she is specially adapted for forcing her way through the ice. She was built in 1858, is 108 feet long by 20 feet extreme beam, draws 8 feet of water, and is propelled by a high-pressure engine of 60 horse-power, consuming, at full speed of 9 knots, 15 cubic feet of coal. She carries 1,960 cubic feet of coal, sufficient for from 131 to 164 hours' consumption. The 'Polhem' was commanded by Lieutenant Palander, of the Swedish Royal Navy, and was manned by officers and men of the same service. She was to remain out during the winter. She was accompanied by the Government transport brig 'Gladan,' and the steamer 'Onkel Adam,' freighted at Göttenburg; which vessels took out a dwelling-house, reindeer, supplies of moss and coal, and were to have returned to Sweden before the winter set in.

(Co  
Norder  
Lieuten  
nine Sw  
have re  
the sum  
panied  
the 'Gla  
numerar  
Besic  
1,500 po  
during th  
winter q  
the kitch  
One of th  
bench an  
There wer  
house, ada  
visions and  
sufficient f  
costumes f  
For the s  
pemmican  
cooking ap  
ing bags, a  
weighing  
and two l  
for the bo



Commander Palander and his officers; Professor Nordenskiöld, Dr. Envall, Professor Wykander, Lieutenant Parent, an Italian officer; two engineers, nine Swedish seamen, and four Laplanders, were to have remained throughout the winter; but during the summer the expedition was also to be accompanied by Dr. Kjellman, a naturalist, the crews of the 'Gladan' and 'Onkel Adam,' and several supernumeraries.

Besides coal, the expedition was supplied with 1,500 pounds of photogene oil, for lighting and fuel during the sledge journeys. The dwelling-house, for winter quarters, consisted of six rooms, including the kitchen, larder, bathing-room, and potato cellar. One of the rooms was fitted up with a carpenter's bench and turning lathe, and other appliances. There were also three large sheds attached to the house, adapted for observatories; the supply of provisions and clothing was abundant, the former being sufficient for two years, and the latter including Lapp costumes for the winter for the whole of the party. For the sledge travelling parties, 900 pounds of pemmican were provided, concentrated rum, and cooking apparatus, with photogene oil, warm sleeping bags, and sailcloth tents. Three light ice-boats, weighing respectively 150, 200, and 300 pounds, and two larger boats, built with double planking, for the boat equipment, and all were provided with

ash-wood sledges. Fifty reindeer were shipped at Tromsö, most of them from Kola, in Lapland; the reindeer of that district being the most hardy, and the best for driving. But reindeer, though hardy, are very sensitive to change of climate. Experienced Laplanders, to drive and attend the reindeer, and four or five reindeer dogs to assist in watching them, accompanied the expedition, and 3,000 sacks of reindeer moss were taken for forage. Unluckily all the reindeer escaped soon after they were landed. Professor Nordenskiöld took out a complete set of magnetic instruments by Lonant of Munich; a magnetic variation instrument by Wrede; a transit instrument by Estel; a portable meridian compass by Repsold; a register apparatus connected by electric regulated clockwork; three chronometers in cases, and two pocket chronometers; pendulum apparatus; sextants; a theodolite for geodetic measurements; all requisite appliances for zoological, botanical, and mineralogical researches; and photographic apparatus.

The plan of the expedition was to pass the autumn on the eastern side of Spitzbergen, and to winter in Mussel Bay, or off Parry Island.

Unfortunately the two vessels attached to the expedition which were intended to return in the autumn of 1872, were detained by the ice, and were obliged to winter in Spitzbergen, with the 'Polhem.' The exploring vessel, by having to maintain other

ice-bou  
in her r  
gate of  
on the  
reached  
boats.  
mainder,  
consistin  
a small i  
northern  
excited in  
tering in  
measures v  
1872 the  
Otto, saile  
obliged to  
intense co  
then made  
He sailed  
days sensib  
cold soon  
sails were l  
with ice in  
on, and can  
seeing the  
the sky whi  
same day.  
the prospec

ice-bound craft through the winter, was thus crippled in her resources. Six fishing-vessels, with an aggregate of 58 men, were also frozen in, off Grey Point, on the northern coast, and eighteen of their men reached Ice Fiord by sailing along the coast in open boats. Two of the vessels escaped, with the remainder, in November. The Swedish expedition, consisting of three vessels, wintered in Mussel Bay, a small inlet on the east side of Wyde Bay, on the northern coast of Spitzbergen. Much sympathy was excited in Norway by the news of the fishermen wintering in Ice Fiord, and immediate but unavailing measures were adopted for their relief. In November 1872 the steamer 'Albert,' commanded by Captain Otto, sailed from Norway for Ice Fiord, but was obliged to return owing to bad weather and the intense cold. Captain Kjelsen, in the 'Isbiorn,' then made another gallant attempt to effect a rescue. He sailed from Tromsö on December 24, and the days sensibly shortened as he went northward. The cold soon rendered navigation very difficult; the sails were like boards, and the shrouds were covered with ice in thick masses. Still they stood gallantly on, and came in sight of Bear Island on January 8, seeing the ice light—the luminous appearance in the sky which is always seen over the ice—on the same day. The vessel was now one mass of ice, and the prospect of reaching Spitzbergen seemed very

slight. The attempt was therefore very unwillingly relinquished, and on January 14, 1873, the 'Isbiorn' was safely anchored again off Tromsö. Nothing daunted, a third vessel sailed for the rescue in the end of the same month. This was the seal-hunter 'Groenland,' commanded by Captain Jacob Melsom. She arrived off Bel Sound, in Spitzbergen, on March 6, and the captain forced his vessel, under full steam, through the pack ice, up to the entrance of Ice Fiord, where she was stopped. It was impossible to approach the land, and the captain was obliged to give up his plan of sending a rescuing party over the ice, to the interior of the Fiord. The ice was a mixture of bay and old pack, covered with hummocks, and the vessel was ten miles from land. She ran the risk of being blown off while the sledge party was away. Captain Melsom died on April 27.

The 18 men who retreated to the house in Ice Fiord, found it well stocked with fresh and salt provisions, and provided with a good stove. Their fate was discovered last summer, by Captain Mack. They all died during the winter, and a diary which they had kept from October 7, 1872, to April 19, 1873, revealed the cause of the disaster. They had preferred salt to preserved meat, and had taken no regular exercise. Their death is a most striking proof of the necessity for discipline and proper authority, in Arctic expeditions; and, with the fate

of these  
to the  
McClint  
who adv  
winter in  
The  
naval dis  
all the re  
themselves  
wholesome  
engaged in  
collections  
end of Apr  
skiöld star  
Skirting th  
rounded Ca  
ing across t  
They return  
29. In the  
and Mr. D  
with fresh  
'Polhem' r  
this occasio  
Leigh Smit  
Swedish exp  
advancing to  
Mr. Leigh  
10, 1873, or

of these poor Norwegians before their eyes, added to the experience derived from the expeditions of McClintock, Ross, Kane, Hayes, and Hall, persons who advocate the despatch of private expeditions to winter in the ice incur a very serious responsibility.

The Swedish expedition, with the advantage of naval discipline, only lost two men during the winter, all the rest enjoying good health. They occupied themselves with severe bodily exercise, and a wholesome diet was enforced. The officers were engaged in scientific pursuits, and made very rich collections in botany, zoology and geology. In the end of April Captain Palander and Professor Norden-skiöld started on a sledge journey with 14 men. Skirting the north coast of North-East Land, they rounded Cape Platen, and then struck inland, marching across the snow-covered hills back to Mussel Bay. They returned, after an absence of 60 days, on June 29. In the summer they were visited by the 'Diana,' and Mr. Leigh Smith generously supplied them with fresh provisions; and on August 6, 1873, the 'Polhem' returned to Tromsö. For his services on this occasion, King Oscar II. conferred upon Mr. Leigh Smith the order of the Pole Star. The Swedish expedition thus failed in its main object of advancing to the Pole, over the ice.

Mr. Leigh Smith sailed from Dundee, on May 10, 1873, on his third voyage of discovery in the

Spitzbergen seas. The 'Samson,' his own yacht, in which he made the voyage of 1872, sailed from Hull on May 1, under the command of Captain W. Walker (who formerly had the whaling steamer 'Polynia'), laden with stores. She was to be stationed in Cobbe's Bay, near the north-west point of Spitzbergen, and if any accident happened to Mr. Leigh Smith's vessel, his party would thus have had a second ship to fall back upon. Mr. Leigh Smith's steamer for the exploring work was the 'Diana,' belonging to Mr. Lamont. She is well strengthened for ice navigation with an iron stem-piece and iron pieces on the bows, for several feet above and below the water-line; but she is scarcely large and heavy enough for boring and churning the floes. Her tonnage is 103, and she has an engine of 50 horse-power. She had twenty hands on board, all told. Captain Fairweather, the sailing master of the 'Diana,' is an experienced and intelligent young seaman, who was first mate of the 'Victor' in 1872, in Baffin's Bay. He now commands the whaler 'Active.' Mr. Leigh Smith was also accompanied by the Rev. Mr. Eaton as naturalist, by Lieutenant Chermiside, R.E., and by Mr. Richard Potter. The 'Diana' first proceeded to Jan Mayen Island, and thence worked northwards along the edge of the ice. After relieving the Swedish expedition, Mr. Leigh Smith made several attempts to push to the north and east,

but was  
able, a  
shores  
partly  
Hinlopp  
land, a  
Lieuten  
photogra  
an unsuc  
rounding  
the 'Dia

In the  
sportsman  
Baffin's I  
bergen, b  
northern  
graphical

The ex  
this third  
tional pro  
made in c  
by the Spi

This ro  
been advo  
navigable  
it may be  
stock argu

I belie

but without success. The season was very unfavourable, and the ice was pressed upon the northern shores of Spitzbergen. He, however, reached and partly surveyed the Seven Islands, again explored Hindopen Strait and the south shore of North-East Land, and took several interesting deep sea soundings. Lieutenant Chernside also made some excellent photographs of Arctic scenery. Finally, they made an unsuccessful attempt to reach Wiehe Island, by rounding the southern extremity of Spitzbergen, and the 'Diana' returned to Dundee in September 1873.

In the summer of 1874 Mr. Rickaby, a young sportsman, who had previously been for a cruise in Baffin's Bay, went out in the 'Samson' to Spitzbergen, but the ice was closely packed upon the northern shore; and he returned without any geographical result.

The experiences of the Swedish expedition, and of this third voyage of Mr. Leigh Smith, furnish additional proofs that but very little progress can be made in exploring the unknown North Polar area by the Spitzbergen route.

This route for North Polar discovery has usually been advocated by those who believe in a vast navigable ocean, free of ice, round the Pole; and it may be as well, in this place, to glance at their stock arguments.

I believe no one really thinks that the Gulf



Stream, after passing under many hundreds of miles of a cold super-stratum of water, emerges from the depths and reaches the surface at so warm a temperature near the North Pole as to melt the ice far and wide. The Gulf Stream slowly mingles with the Polar current, and eventually its waters go south again along the east coast of Greenland, on the surface.

But there are two other arguments which deserve passing notice.

One is, that the sun, with greater power than it has at the Equator, pours its rays on the North Pole without intermission for six months. Scoresby answered this argument fifty years ago. He pointed out that in Northern Spitzbergen the sun also has greater power than at the Equator, and shines for four months without intermission. Yet, in that region, the average annual temperature is 17° Fahrenheit, and ice forms on the sea during ten months out of twelve. The difference that the other two months would make is inappreciable, seeing that the four months of sun make so little. Speculators on this question have left many points out of consideration. The dryness of the Polar atmosphere is equally the cause of the great heating power of the sun's rays, and, by reason of the more rapid terrestrial radiation, of the excessive cold.

The other argument is much more generally

adopted.  
It is the  
drift aw  
wide ap  
way of p  
Sir Jann  
and renc  
space wh  
false, na  
meeting  
The Ant  
line of in  
left open  
moving in  
there is a  
ice cliff  
does noth  
voyage of  
Antarctic  
the ice m  
76° N., th  
open water  
open sea fe  
pack whic  
water to t  
passed thro  
line of imp  
If no o



adopted, and appears at first sight more plausible. It is that the enormous fields and floes of ice which drift away to the south during the summer, leave a wide space of open sea round the North Pole. By way of proof, it is urged that in the Antarctic regions Sir James Ross pushed through 800 miles of pack ice, and reached an open sea to the south of it; being the space whence it had drifted. But the analogy is false, as Admiral Collinson well pointed out at a meeting of the Royal Geographical Society in 1865. The Antarctic pack was drifting away from a solid line of immovable grounded ice cliffs, and of course left open water in its rear, because there was no moving ice further south to take its place. Unless there is a continent or a similar immovable line of ice cliff at the North Pole, the North Polar pack does nothing of the kind. The exact analogy to the voyage of Sir James Ross is that of Scoresby. The Antarctic pack, in latitude  $75^{\circ}$  S., is analogous to the ice met by whalers in the early spring in  $75^{\circ}$  to  $76^{\circ}$  N., through which they can usually pass. The open water north of Spitzbergen is analogous to the open sea found by Ross in the south; and the Polar pack which Scoresby found bounding that open water to the north, from whence the ice he had passed through had drifted, is analogous to Ross's line of impenetrable ice barrier.

If no open Polar basin exists, the reason is, that

there is no extent of land or grounded ice barrier on the Spitzbergen meridians, to the north of that group, from whence the ice could drift and leave an open sea. This may be assumed for two reasons. One is that the masses of Siberian drift-wood on the Spitzbergen Islands and elsewhere would be intercepted if there was an extensive continent in their way; the other is that, as Parry advanced to his extreme point in  $82^{\circ} 45' N.$ , he found the water north of Spitzbergen rapidly becoming of very great depth. The North Polar land, if it exists, will probably be found in islands stretching north of the extreme north point on the west side of Kennedy Channel; and this is one reason why the route by Smith Sound should be selected for a Government Arctic Expedition.

The North Polar pack, drifting south, according to Scoresby, between Spitzbergen and Greenland, at the maximum rate of eight or ten miles a day, if there is no extensive land to the north, of course extends to far beyond the North Pole, as far as ice is formed on the other side, in  $75^{\circ}$  or  $74^{\circ}$ , a width of some 1,000 miles. The open sea left, by its drift would not be at the North Pole, but on the coasts of Wrangell Land and Siberia, where the drift commences. No doubt, in the summer thaws, there is a great expansion of the ice, which causes open lanes and pools, at times of considerable extent; and other

open s  
throug  
lead to  
sea rou  
New  
the exa  
east of  
ably cor  
taking a  
when to  
much hi  
able seas  
valuable  
regard to  
explorers  
a limited

open seas would be caused by winds and currents throughout the year; but the above considerations lead to the conclusion, that a great permanent open sea round the North Pole is chimerical.

Nevertheless, there is much that is interesting in the examination of the deep sea to the north and east of Spitzbergen. With a good screw steamer, ably commanded by an experienced ice navigator, taking advantage of every opening, and knowing when to charge the ice and when to forbear, a very much higher latitude might be reached in a favourable season than has hitherto been achieved. Most valuable observations might then be made with regard to currents and sea temperatures; and future explorers may yet do good work in this direction to a limited extent.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE EAST COAST OF GREENLAND.

For ages it was supposed that one of the Norman colonies of Greenland had been established on the eastern side of that continent, and had been isolated for centuries by the pack ice. The voyages sent out for the purpose of re-discovering this lost colony went to the threshold of the unknown region; for it is formed, in one part, by the eastern coast of Greenland. But, in his recent exhaustive demonstration of the authenticity of the voyages of the Venetian brothers Zeno, Mr. Major has fully established the fact, that the 'East Bygd' of the Normans was on the west, and not on the east coast of Greenland.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Major's investigations have appeared in his introduction to the voyage of the Zeni issued by the Hakluyt Society in 1873. 'The Voyage of the Venetian brothers Nicolò and Antonio Zeno to the Northern Seas in the 14th Century, comprising the latest known accounts of the lost Colony of Greenland; and of the Northmen in America before Columbus. Translated and edited, with Notes and an Introduction by R. H. Major, F.S.A., &c.' (Hakluyt Society, 1873).

M  
review  
unkno  
a notio  
century  
noble r  
expense  
discover  
before h  
been a m  
to this  
Zeno wa  
nately fe  
and Cait  
sessions b  
his servic  
Nicolò Z  
inviting l  
from that  
from Anto  
tinguished  
narrative  
derived.  
The v  
Antonio Z  
Nicolò Zen  
the value  
of the let

Mr. Major's discoveries are so interesting that a review of our knowledge of the threshold of the unknown region would be very incomplete without a notice of them. At the close of the fourteenth century, a member of one of the most ancient and noble families in Venice, Nicolò Zeno, at his own expense, went on a voyage, rather of curiosity than discovery, into the Northern Seas. For two centuries before his time the Flanders voyage from Venice had been a matter of annual occurrence, but chance gave to this voyage a very peculiar interest. Nicolò Zeno was wrecked on the Faroe Islands, but fortunately fell in with Henry Sinclair, Earl of Orkney and Caithness, who was bent on increasing his possessions by naval conquests, and who took Zeno into his service as pilot of his fleet. After a year or two, Nicolò Zeno sent a letter to his brother Antonio, inviting him to join him, which he did; and it is from that letter of Nicolò's, and subsequent letters from Antonio to a third brother, Carlo (a very distinguished man in Venetian history), that the narrative of the movements of the two brothers is derived.

The whole story had been written out by Antonio Zeno; but a descendant of his, named Nicolò Zeno, born in 1515, when a boy, not knowing the value of these papers, tore them up, but some of the letters surviving, he was able from them sub-

sequently to compile the narrative as we now have it, and which was printed in Venice in 1558. There was found also in the palace an old map, rotten with age, illustrative of the voyages. Of this he made a copy, unluckily supplying from his own reading of the narrative what he thought was requisite for its illustration. By doing this in a blundering way, unaided by the geographical knowledge which enables us to see where he goes astray, he threw the whole of the geography which he derived from the narrative into the most lamentable confusion, while those parts of the map which are not thus sophisticated, and which are consequently original, present an accuracy far in advance by many generations of the geography even of Nicolò Zeno junior's time, and confirm in a notable manner the site of the old Greenland colony. In these facts we have not only the solution of all the discussions which have arisen on the subject, but the most indisputable proof of the authenticity of the narrative; for it is clear that Nicolò Zeno junior could not himself have been the ingenious concocter of a story the straightforward truth of which he could thus ignorantly distort upon the face of the map.

The story, as we have it, comprises, in the first instance, some insignificant expeditions in the Faroe and Shetland groups, but fortunately treats at greater length of a much more important subject, viz., a

visit to  
interes  
with  
raneous  
of the  
much  
Denmar  
voyage  
of the  
importa  
ignoranc  
mistakes  
most pre  
have ans  
Greenlan  
nothing l  
colony, a  
Iceland, v  
bishop o  
some large  
land, calle  
a nucleus  
and on rea  
taken. C  
rocks as th  
of these va  
covered, by  
that the

visit by Nicolò Zeno to Greenland, disclosing some interesting facts which, brought into harmony with recent observations, present a contemporaneous proof of the whereabouts of the lost colony of the Ostrebygd, about which there has been so much dispute, and to verify which the King of Denmark sent out Captain Graah on his famous voyage of 1828-30. In illustration of this portion of the subject, Mr. Major has adduced a highly important geographical discovery of his own, the ignorance of which led Captain Graah into great mistakes, and caused him to miss the value of a most precious early document which otherwise would have answered the question which he went out to Greenland for the purpose of solving. This was nothing less than a chorography of the old Greenland colony, and sailing directions for reaching it from Iceland, written by Ivar Bardsen, the steward of the bishop of the colony. In this route he speaks of some large rocks midway between Iceland and Greenland, called Gumbjorns Skerries, which had formed a nucleus for the ice coming down from the north, and on reaching which a south-west course was to be taken. Captain Graah denied the existence of these rocks as thus described, and so forfeited the guidance of these valuable sailing directions. Mr. Major has discovered, by a legend in the 1507 edition of Ptolemy, that the island, of which these rocks form the



summit, was blown up by a volcanic eruption in 1456: and in a map by Van Keulen, of about the date 1700, the reef, 60 miles in length, formed thereby, is laid down by the name of Gombar Scheer, with soundings at the north and south ends of 25 fathoms, whereas the nearest soundings northward range from 70 to 100 fathoms. Mr. Major further shows that Ivar Bardsen's chorography had only to be read with common attention to indicate the site of the old colony beyond all dispute.

The most prominent and interesting item in the story relating to Greenland, is the description of a monastery dedicated to St. Thomas, the cells of which were heated from a natural spring of hot water, which was used also by the monks for dressing their meat and baking their bread. The monks had likewise gardens covered over in the winter time and warmed by the same means, so that they were able to produce flowers and fruits and herbs, the same as if they lived in a temperate climate. Many other advantages are described as accruing to the monks from their judicious employment of this warm water supplied by nature. In corroboration of this fact, and its valuable bearing on that much-vexed question the site of the lost Scandinavian colony in Greenland, the testimony of Ivar Bardsen becomes most valuable, for after mentioning a monastery dedicated to St. Olaus and St. Augustine,

he says  
Rafuion  
water.  
Oumarto  
of the o  
has ascer  
South G  
to his k  
which is  
ancient e  
admirably  
Bardsen's  
blished, m  
graphy of  
The di  
and St. T  
same mona  
northern r  
southern e  
as St. Thom  
Antonio  
Sinclair ter  
Nicolò, and  
to us, as co  
men who ha  
the west, v  
America. T  
of one of th



he says that in a bay of neighbouring fiord, called Rafnfiord, are some small islands abounding in hot water. These are no doubt the hot springs of Ounartok, near which some remains of the buildings of the old colonists have been found, and Mr. Major has ascertained from Dr. Rink, the late Inspector of South Greenland, that there are no other hot springs to his knowledge in the district of Julianashaab, which is now definitely proved to be the site of the ancient colony. The position of Ounartok coincides admirably with the site of the monastery in Ivar Bardsen's chorography, and this point being established, may serve as a basis for tracing the topography of the entire colony.

The difference between the names of St. Olaus and St. Thomas, given by the two authors to the same monastery, is easily explainable, for the strange northern name of St. Olaus would sound to the southern ear of the Venetian like nothing so much as St. Thomas.

Antonio Zeno remained in the service of Earl Sinclair ten years after the death of his brother Nicolò, and the most interesting fact which survives to us, as coming from him, is the report of fishermen who had discovered some populous countries in the west, which are, beyond all question, North America. They found Latin books in the possession of one of the chiefs, but these were no longer under-

stood. The people made beer—which was a ‘kind of drink that North people take as we do wine.’ Their foreign intercourse was with Greenland, whence they imported furs, brimstone, and pitch.

All this is in harmony with what we know of the Scandinavian settlements in North America, in Pre-Columbian times, and the fishermen’s report is a *résumé* of the knowledge acquired by the Northmen in their expedition to the west and south-west. It was in the year 1001 that North America was discovered by Lief, son of Eric the Red. The tracts of country then discovered were called Helluland, *i.e.*, State Land, supposed to be Newfoundland; Markland, *i.e.* Woodland, supposed to be Nova Scotia; and Vinland or Vineland. There is much uncertainty about the two former, but the site of Vinland is less problematical, for, as we learn from one of the old writers, that the length of the day was nine hours, it gives us the latitude of  $41^{\circ}$ , and whereas the name was given by the old discoverers from finding the vine growing wild there; the more recent English discoverers, for the reason, but quite independently, gave the name of Martha’s Vineyard to the large island close off the coast, in latitude  $41^{\circ} 23'$ .

There is one locality on the Zeno map which has given rise to the greatest perplexity. It is a large island called Icaria, lying where certainly no island does lie—at an equal distance between Iceland,

Friscan  
to be N  
some p  
was the  
Mr. Ma  
by reas  
expediti  
verificat  
the Faro  
the fleet  
storm wi  
abated t  
original  
expression  
that they  
‘upon an  
repulsed b  
island, an  
it is man  
entered w  
sponding e  
point of ar  
place, they  
the condu  
them to l  
northwards  
it along th  
the shore, a

Frisland or Faroe Islands, and Estotiland, supposed to be Newfoundland. Many have imagined it to be some part of America, but Johann Reinhold Forster was the first to suggest that it meant Kerry, and Mr. Major has proved that he was right, although by reasonings that Forster had not adduced. An expedition was organised by Earl Sinclair for the verification of the fishermen's story, but after leaving the Faroe Islands for the west, and when well at sea, the fleet was driven they knew not whither by a storm which lasted eight days. After the storm abated they discovered what is described in the original Italian as 'da Ponente terra.' Now this expression is susceptible of two renderings, either that they came upon 'an island to the westward,' or 'upon an island on its western side'; but, as when repulsed by the natives, they sailed round about the island, and came into a harbour on its eastern side, it is manifest that the harbour which they first entered was on the west, and in a position corresponding exactly with Kerry in Ireland. This peculiar point of arrival, and the name Icaria, which, at that place, they were told was the name of the country; the conduct of the natives, who would not allow them to land, and who, as the fleet made its way northwards along the east coast of the island, pursued it along the hill tops and howled the strangers off the shore, all go to show that Kerry and Icaria are

identical. After leaving the north point of the island, the fleet sailed six days to the westward without seeing land, a fact which accords with the situation of Ireland, but not with any part of America, or any other country otherwise answering the conditions.

The anomalous position of the island on the map, whether due to Antonio Zeno or to the handiwork of his descendant Nicolò Zeno in his touching up of the map, is easily explained by the entire ignorance of the former as to where the fleet was after being beaten about for eight days by the storm. With this episode and the return of the remnant of the fleet to Frisland the Zeno narrative virtually concludes. The many riddles which it embodies, it must be acknowledged, have at length met with a complete solution at the hands of Mr. Major. If the realities which Mr. Major has detected had been made clear to people's minds, as they easily might have been, three hundred years ago, Martin Frobisher would have avoided the blunder of taking Greenland for Zeno's Frisland, which really meant the Faroe Islands; a host of learned commentators during that period would have been saved from confusing themselves and others by wild speculations; the site of the lost Greenland colony would have been established long ago on the highest possible authority; and the kings of Denmark, from Frederic II. downwards, would have been spared the necessity of sending out a great

number  
boute w  
trious //  
superflu  
occupyin  
of Ten  
been prof  
charge of

Yet th  
for the cr  
side of Gre  
expedition  
successive  
able to re  
the eastern  
were discoy  
have seen,<sup>1</sup>  
with Hope,  
in 1654, a  
also been in  
his name on

The val  
Archives of  
the east coas  
called 'Land  
farther nort  
coast was sig

number of unsuccessful expeditions; many an elaborate work from the pens of some of the most illustrious *literati* in Europe, would have been rendered superfluous; and the name of a noble gentleman, occupying the exalted position of one of the Council of Ten in the Republic of Venice, would have been protected from the unwarrantable and infamous charge of being guilty of falsehood and forgery.

Yet there was some good in all this blundering, for the erroneous belief in a lost colony on the east side of Greenland led to the despatch of several Arctic expeditions. No less than eight were sent out by successive kings of Denmark, but none of them were able to reach the coast along the southern part of the eastern side of Greenland; though some islands were discovered by Captain Donnell. Hudson, as we have seen,<sup>1</sup> sighted the land which he called 'Hold with Hope,' but much farther to the northward; and in 1654, a Dutch skipper named Gale Hamke, had also been in sight of land. A bay was marked with his name on the old Dutch charts.

The valuable chart by Van Keulen, in the State Archives of the Hague, shows land forming part of the east coast of Greenland, in latitude 77° 10' N., called 'Land van Edam,' discovered in 1655. Still farther north, in 78° 20' N., another part of the coast was sighted in 1670, and marked on the chart

<sup>1</sup> See p. 29.

116 SCORESBY ON THE EAST COAST OF GREENLAND.

as 'Land van Lambert.' Scoresby has the great merit of having forced his way through the ice floes which encumber the approach to land, in June 1822, and of having surveyed a line of coast from Gale Hamke's bay in  $75^{\circ}$  down to latitude  $69^{\circ}$ . He found a line of bold mountains, averaging a height of 3,000 feet, with precipitous cliffs rising from the beach, and rugged sharp rocks and peaks forming their outline against the sky. There were many openings or sounds, and he supposed that the coast, which he examined for a distance of 400 miles, consisted of an assemblage of islands. The body of ice off shore was a hundred miles wide, and there were chains of immense bergs, the produce of the stupendous glaciers of the interior; still there was little difficulty in sailing along the channel close in shore.

From Scoresby's southern point in  $69^{\circ}$  N., there is a long stretch of coast-line still undiscovered; but the southern end of the east coast of Greenland was explored by Captain Graah of the Danish Navy, who left Copenhagen on this duty in 1828. He organised his expedition, consisting of two woman's canoes and two kayaks, at Nenortalik, the Greenland settlement nearest to Cape Farewell, and started on March 20, 1829, with four Europeans and twelve Esquimaux. On reaching the eastern coast, they found masses of ice piled upon the beach in such a way as to render their progress very slow; and Captain Graah sent

back a  
and for  
took pla  
his sma  
 $65^{\circ} 18'$   
insurmo  
retreat t  
passed th  
N.; and  
of Green  
 $60^{\circ}$  and  $61^{\circ}$   
tauts were  
more furth  
to  $69^{\circ}$  the  
the coast o

I have  
with Capt  
completing  
bergen, sui  
end of Jul  
made to pr  
eastern coa  
was stoppe

<sup>1</sup> The work  
the Royal Geog  
of an Expediti  
King of Denm  
translated from  
(Map. 8vo.) Lc

<sup>2</sup> See proce

back all the party except six Esquimaux, two men and four women, with one frail boat. This separation took place on June 23, in  $61^{\circ} 46' 40''$  N., and, with his small party, he had advanced as far north as  $65^{\circ} 18'$  by July 28. He was at last stopped by an insurmountable barrier of ice, and was obliged to retreat towards the end of August. Captain Graah passed the winter at a place called Nugarlik in  $63^{\circ} 22'$  N.; and returned to the settlements on the west side of Greenland in the summer of 1830. Between  $60^{\circ}$  and  $65^{\circ}$ , on the east coast, from 500 to 600 inhabitants were found: and they reported that there were more further north. But from Graah's furthest north to  $69^{\circ}$  the most southern point reached by Scoresby, the coast of east Greenland is still unknown.<sup>1</sup>

I have already mentioned that the 'Griper,' with Captains Clavering and Sabine on board,<sup>2</sup> after completing the pendulum observations at Spitzbergen, sailed for the east coast of Greenland in the end of July 1823. On the 28th an attempt was made to press through the ice, which isolates this eastern coast, in latitude  $77^{\circ} 30'$  N., but the vessel was stopped by an unbroken field of ice 60 miles

<sup>1</sup> The work of Captain Graah was translated and published by the Royal Geographical Society in 1837, with a map. 'Narrative of an Expedition to the east coast of Greenland, sent by order of the King of Denmark in search of the lost colonies, by W. A. Graah, translated from the Danish by G. Gordon Macdougall for the R. G. S. (Map. 8vo.) London, 1837.'

<sup>2</sup> See preceding page.



long. On August 2 the 'Griper' again entered the ice, in latitude  $75^{\circ} 30' N.$ , and passed through sailing ice, along the margin of the solid fields, to the south-west, thus at last succeeding in reaching the Greenland coast. While passing through the ice barrier, no indication whatever was observed of a southerly current. The mainland, consisting of lofty, bold, and precipitous mountains cut by bays and deep fiords, was laid down between the parallels of  $76^{\circ}$  and  $72^{\circ}$ , the most northerly land bearing  $N. 20^{\circ} W.$  Captain Clavering also explored the bay of Gale Hamke, in  $74^{\circ} N.$ , which is correctly laid down, as regards latitude, on an old chart engraved by Pieter Goos in 1666, twelve years after the voyage. Here some Esquimaux were met with, a most important discovery, as there is reason to believe that they must have come from the unknown region to the north, and not from the south. Captain Clavering was careful to retain old names in the construction of his chart of the new coast line.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> His own names are :

- |                         |                          |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Shannon Island.      | 8. Ailsa.                |
| 2. Cape Philip Broke.   | 9. Ardencaple Inlet.     |
| 3. Pendulum Islands.    | 10. Cape Borlase Warren. |
| 4. Cape Dresbrowe.      | 11. Jordan Hill.         |
| 5. Bass Rock.           | 12. Loch Fine.           |
| 6. The Haystack (rock). | 13. Forster Bay.         |
| 7. Roseneath Inlet.     |                          |

The old names are: Hudson's 'Hold with Hope,' Bay of Gale Hamke, Brontekoe Isle.

The  
on the  
Messrs.  
and So  
of Mr.  
whose re  
to believ  
that a  
The crow  
Gibbs, th  
exclusive  
Greenlan  
despatche  
steamers  
Hambro'  
Mr. Tayle  
Ekalumiut  
at so advan  
most south  
are not ope  
by the Arc  
operation  
least have  
On Septem  
Hambro,' i  
estimated  
the ice wa  
shaped to t



The last expedition to search for the lost colony on the east coast of Greenland was undertaken by Messrs. Antony Gibbs and Sons, the eminent London and South American merchants; at the suggestion of Mr. T. W. Tayler, a chemist and enthusiast, whose readings of Icelandic literature had led him to believe that the lost colony might be found, and that a flourishing trade might be re-established. The crown of Denmark granted a charter to Messrs. Gibbs, through the agency of Mr. Tayler, for the exclusive right of trading with the east coast of Greenland. On August 21, 1863, an expedition was despatched from Gravesend, consisting of two iron steamers entirely unfortified, called the 'Baron Hambro' and 'Caroline,' under the leadership of Mr. Tayler, with a view of forming a settlement at Ekalumiut, in latitude  $63^{\circ}$  N. The reason for sailing at so advanced a period in the year was that, as the most southern ports on the west coast of Greenland are not open until the ice has been carried past them by the Arctic current, it was believed that the same operation must have cleared the east coast, or at least have rendered it accessible somewhat earlier. On September 5 land was sighted from the 'Baron Hambro,' in the vicinity of Ekalumiut, which was estimated to be at a distance of forty miles. But the ice was so closely packed that a course was shaped to the north, and in  $63^{\circ} 30'$  an attempt was

made to work into the pack, which, however, was found to be so close as to be impenetrable, and with great difficulty the vessel was extricated. On September 8, another fruitless attempt was made at the ice, in  $62^{\circ} 30'$ , and on the 10th yet another effort was made in  $61^{\circ}$ , with a like result. It had become painfully manifest that it was useless to attempt to find or force a passage through the pack which intervened between the ships and the land, and the only remaining hope was that a gale of wind might drive the ice from the land. On the 11th, a heavy S.W. gale set in and lasted for three days, during which the 'Baron Hamro' and 'Caroline' were obliged to run out to sea. When the wind moderated, they again stood in, and at about 120 miles from the land were stopped by an immense field of ice, along which the steamers coasted at full speed for some hours. At last they doubled the southern point of the ice, and got within twenty miles of the land, in latitude  $60^{\circ}$  N.; but here again they were stopped by an impenetrable barrier of ice, closely packed upon the shore. There was no lane of water between the land and the ice. The attempt was then abandoned, and the expedition returned to England.<sup>1</sup>

But the failure was attributed to the employ-

<sup>1</sup> I have been kindly furnished with these particulars by Mr. John Clark, who accompanied the expedition sent out by Messrs. Antony Gibbs & Sons.

ment of  
adapted  
solved t  
expediti  
1864 wa  
She is a  
power, th  
ice, and v  
the floes.  
Mr. Tayl  
coals had  
ing to th  
ceeded in  
than was  
she could  
made, and  
the 'Erik  
voyages to  
Captain W  
the east co  
merchants  
Gibbs to  
those imm  
century, w  
the Polar P  
Baffin's Ba  
much of he  
they will e  
Arctic wort

ment of vessels which had not been specially adapted for ice navigation, and Messrs. Gibbs resolved to make another attempt, by equipping an expedition on a more adequate scale. The year 1864 was devoted to building the 'Erik' at Dundee. She is a fine steamer, of 412 tons and 70 horsepower, thoroughly well strengthened for work in the ice, and with angle-irons round the bows for churning the floes. The 'Erik,' again under the leadership of Mr. Tayler, sailed from Reykjavik, where a depôt of coals had been formed, in May 1865, then proceeding to the pack edge. Although the 'Erik' succeeded in forcing her way through the ice farther than was done by the two smaller steamers in 1863, she could not reach the land. Two attempts were made, and then the enterprise was finally abandoned, the 'Erik' having since made annual whaling voyages to Baffin's Bay, under the able command of Captain Walker. This interesting attempt to reach the east coast of Greenland reflects honour upon the merchants who undertook it, and entitles the Messrs. Gibbs to take their places in the same rank with those immortal merchant adventurers of the 17th century, whose gallant ships explored the edge of the Polar pack, and first sailed on the north water of Baffin's Bay. It is to such men that England owes much of her commercial and maritime greatness, and they will ever hold an honoured place in the list of Arctic worthies.

After the return of the 'Germania' from Spitzbergen in 1868, another Arctic expedition was organised to explore the northern part of the coast of Greenland. The second expedition sailed from Bremen, on June 15, 1869. It consisted of a screw steamer of 140 tons, which cost 18,000 thalers, and was re-named the 'Germania. Its crew numbered seventeen, while, as consort and storeship, was despatched the brig 'Hansa,' with a crew of fourteen, under the command of Paul Friedrich Hegemann, a native of Hooksiel, in Oldenburg. The whole expedition was put under the command of Koldewey, who took as his flag-ship the 'Germania;' and, in addition, there were attached to both ships several eminent men of science, provided with every requisite necessary for the successful performance of their duties. Here Lieutenant Payer, the future discoverer of Franz Joseph Land, gained his experience; and Mr. Copeland was the Astronomer to the expedition. King William came down and bade them good-bye; a distinguished party gave them a farewell dinner, and out of the good harbour of Bremen they sailed *more Teutonico* to the strains of a brass band. The whole expedition was provisioned for two years. In latitude  $70^{\circ} 46' N.$ , longitude  $10^{\circ} 51' W.$ , the 'Hansa,' which had on board some of the supplies of fuel for herself and consort, got separated from the 'Germania,' and caught in the ice. On October 22

the ice  
Then, h  
with th  
floe, wit  
refuge.  
Christma  
us. In  
south 40  
from lan  
Novembe  
just about  
Shortly a  
split and  
would see  
they were  
righted ag  
they had  
fuel house.  
the Green  
sadness, as  
of ever re  
summer ca  
one sense,  
ice island h  
the melting  
more than  
their sextan  
on their ch

the ice-floes, pressing on every side, crushed her. Then, homeless in the midst of this dreary ice-field, with the winter coming on, the crew built on the floe, with the patent fuel, a house in which they took refuge. In this strangest of all abodes they passed Christmas—not uncheerfully on the whole, they tell us. In two months the current had carried them south 400 miles, and though they were only 30 miles from land, it was impossible to reach it. On November 27, their track-map shows that they were just about half-way between Greenland and Iceland. Shortly after their Christmas festivities, the floe split and ruined their house. For some time it would seem as if their lives hung on a thread. But they were destined for better things. The floe righted again, and they left their boats, to which they had been forced to flee, and again built their fuel house. On January 3, 1870, they were close to the Greenland coast, but could only survey it in sadness, as the broken ice precluded the possibility of ever reaching it. As spring advanced and the summer came, their situation was more cheering in one sense, but more depressing in another. Their ice island had now, by the lashing of the surge and the melting of the ice, got reduced until it was not more than a hundred yards in breadth. By May their sextants told them they had drifted 1,100 miles on their cheerless raft. Finally, on June 14, 1870,

they arrived in safety in their three boats at the Greenland Moravian Mission station of Friedriksthal, in latitude  $60^{\circ}$  N., just on the other side of Cape Farewell. Here they met their countrymen of the Herrnhuttian *Unitas Fratrum*, and once more were safe, after perils, compared with which even Barents' wondrous boat voyage from Novaya Zemlya pales, and Kane's escape from Smith Sound sinks to the dimensions of a boating excursion. Notwithstanding all their hardships, none of the crew died, but one of the party got insane, though, we are glad to hear, only temporarily.

Fairer fortune attended the steam-aided 'Germania.' She succeeded in sailing up the East Greenland coast to as high as  $75^{\circ} 30'$ , but on August 13 was forced to turn again to the southward, and winter among the Pendulum Islands, in latitude  $74^{\circ} 30'$ . From this central point many excursions were made, and though at times the thermometer sank as low as  $40^{\circ}$  below zero (of Fahrenheit), yet musk oxen—strange enough—being abundant (though these animals are unknown on the West Coast, south of Wolstenholme Sound), they passed a not unpleasant winter—as winters in  $74\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$  of N. go. Christmas was absolutely warm (*only*  $25^{\circ}$  below zero), and with open doors they danced and feasted as it had been their wont in festive, Christmas-loving Germany. In Koldewey's words—'By star-

light v  
*Andro*  
mas tr  
the pre  
laid out  
share, a  
holiday  
ness. T  
after on  
March 2  
and Lic  
of the e  
sledge be  
and after  
ship (in  
them to r  
geological  
sceptical  
gained th  
which ha  
Bismarck  
coveries.  
they com  
nate enou  
a branch  
the interio  
tween lon  
its termin

light we danced upon the ice; of the evergreen *Andromeda* (*Cussoipe tetragona*) we made a Christmas tree; the cabin was decorated with flags, and the presents which loving hands had prepared were laid out upon the tables; every one received his share, and universal mirth prevailed.' After this holiday time, the explorers began to think of business. The sledge equipments were got ready, and after one false start, a party of seven set out on March 24, under the command of Captain Koldewey and Lieutenant Payer—one of the scientific corps of the expedition. Dragging the provision-laden sledge behind them, they set their faces to the north, and after reaching a distance of 150 miles from the ship (in latitude  $77^{\circ}$ ), want of provisions compelled them to return. On April 27, laden with zoological, geological, and botanical collections, but decidedly sceptical regarding the 'open Polar sea,' they regained the deck of the 'Germania.' A grim cape—which has been appropriately named after Prince Bismarck—marks the northern limit of their discoveries. As soon as navigation was again opened they commenced their explorations, and were fortunate enough to discover (in about latitude  $73^{\circ} 15' N.$ ) a branching fjord, stretching for a long distance in the interior of Greenland. This they explored between longitude  $22^{\circ}$  and  $28^{\circ} W.$ , without reaching its termination, the leaking boiler of the engine



compelling them to return. It was named Franz Josef, in honour of Lieutenant Payer's Sovereign. Along its shores are peaks (Petermann's and Payer's), respectively 14,000 and 7,000 feet high. On September 11, 1870, they returned to Bremen.

A superb work, published both in German and English, gives the results of the second German Arctic expedition. The Pendulum Islands and adjacent coast of Greenland were the farthest point northward of the German, as it had been fifty years before of the English navigator Clavering. The views of Captain Koldewey, after acquiring Arctic experience while in command of two expeditions, were expressed by himself in May 1871, and are as follow:—

‘One can hardly resist the conviction that the hope of attaining the North Pole by ship, or of finding an open sea around the Pole, are alike among the most improbable of things.

‘I confess that I myself was misled by representations in Dr. Petermann's “Geographische Mittheilungen,” and held it to be at least possible, by following a line of coast, to penetrate by ship far into the central Arctic regions, and then certainly to make one's way to the Pole. A winter in East Greenland, the most careful observation of those mighty masses of ice, their movements

and form  
perature  
literatur  
one-sided  
my comp

‘If i  
possible a  
born's op  
through S

In que  
Sherard O

‘Comm  
unnecessar  
spread ove  
theorist, b  
effect of ev

The op  
in favour o  
Region by  
concurring i

Five wh  
fish in the  
approach th  
steamers.

by Captain  
Captain Joh  
the trade b  
oid sailing



and formation, and of the whole conditions of temperature, and finally the careful study of Arctic literature in its original form, and not by means of one-sided extracts, have radically cured me and all my companions of this idea . . .

‘If its principal object is to be the nearest possible approach to the Pole, I am quite of Osborn’s opinion, that the best way appears to be through Smith Sound.’

In quoting Captain Koldewey’s opinion, Admiral Sherard Osborn makes the following remark:—

‘Comment on this honest seaman’s opinion is unnecessary, and no amount of specious reasoning, spread over any amount of pages, by any mere theorist, be he German or English, can undo the effect of evidence so strong and conclusive.’

The opinions of all English Arctic authorities in favour of the route for exploring the Unknown Region by way of Smith Sound, are thus strongly concurred in by the principal German authority.

Five whalers sailed in 1874 from Peterhead to fish in the Spitzbergen seas. They occasionally approach the coast of Greenland. All but one are steamers. Two, the ‘Eclipse,’ 295 tons, commanded by Captain David Gray, and the ‘Hope,’ 307 tons, Captain John Gray, are steamers built specially for the trade by Messrs. Hall of Aberdeen. Two are old sailing vessels converted into screw steamers,

namely, the 'Jan Mayen,' commanded by Captain Salmon, 337 tons, and 'Windward,' Captain Sellar, 321 tons. The 'Pole Star' 215 tons, Captain M'Dougall, is a sailing vessel. In the summer of 1872 Captain David Gray reported having seen a wide extent of open water, with a water sky to the northward, near the east coast. In 1873 he returned in the end of June with a full ship. In 1874 he reported a great and unusual southerly drift of the ice in the Spitzbergen sea. In May, June, July, and August, its average drift was fully 14 miles a day. In March and April it must have been driving at double that rate. In August Captain Gray was in  $79^{\circ} 45' N.$ , and found the ice all broken up, whereas in  $77^{\circ}$  the floes were lying whole and unbroken, showing that the ice farther north must have been broken by a swell from the north. There was a dark water sky beyond the pack which stopped Captain Gray, in  $79^{\circ} 45'$ , and open water to the horizon. This year would, judging from these appearances, have been a good one for gaining a higher northern latitude than usual, very late in the season.



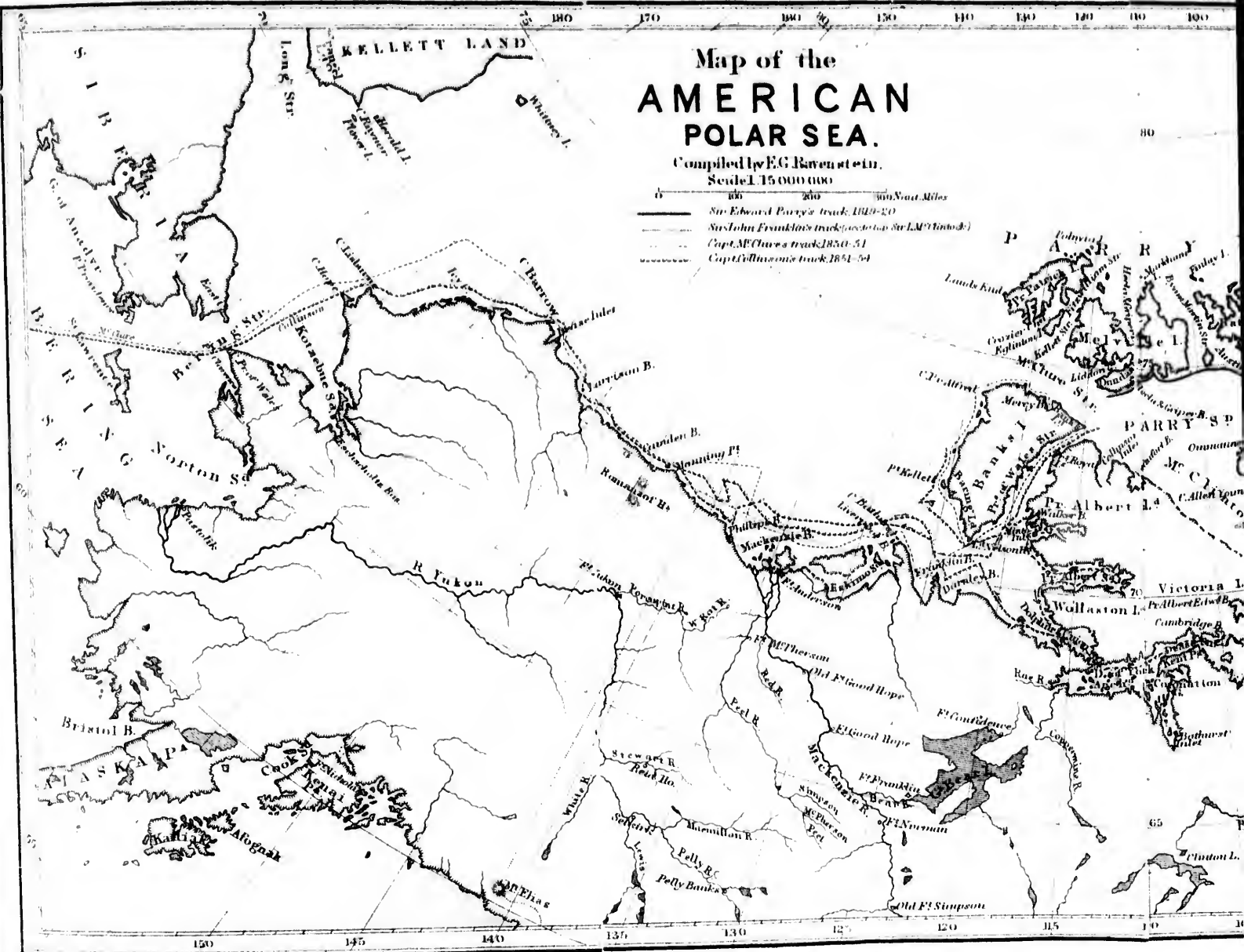


# Map of the AMERICAN POLAR SEA.

Compiled by E.G. Ravenstein.  
Scale 1:15,000,000

0 100 200 300 Nautical Miles

— Sir Edward Parry's track 1819-20  
 - - - Sir John Franklin's track (see also Sir L.M.'s track)  
 . . . Capt. M. Cluise's track 1850-51  
 - - - - - Capt. Villot's track 1851-54



Engraved by J. Hulme for The Threshold of the unknown Region by C.R. Markham C.B. F.R.S.



BAFFIN'S B

HITHERTO  
fruitless  
during the  
Polar pack  
The high  
these atte  
perseveran  
us from h  
bearing th  
barrier.  
examine t  
great dan  
midable p  
encounter  
annual vi  
tion when  
can be org  
means—n

## CHAPTER VIII.

## BAFFIN'S BAY, AND THE PASSAGE OF THE MIDDLE PACK.

HITHERTO our attention has been engaged by the fruitless endeavours of many successive voyagers, during three centuries, to penetrate the mighty Polar pack between Greenland and Novaya Zemlya. The high qualities of the men who were engaged in these attempts, their devoted zeal, their gallant perseverance, their seamanlike work, alone prevent us from becoming wearied with the stories, ever bearing the same burden of an impenetrable ice barrier. It will now be a more pleasant task to examine the voyages up Baffin's Bay, where, through great dangers and hair-breadth escapes, a less formidable pack has for many years been annually encountered, battled with, and overcome. And this annual victory leads to the achievement of a position whence a system of North Polar exploration can be organised, by the only thorough and efficient means—namely, modern Arctic sledge travelling.



The pioneer to this route, the discoverer of the broad strait leading to Baffin's Bay, was that learned navigator and brave seaman John Davis of Sandrudge, in the county of Devon. His undertaking was supported by Sir Adrian Gilbert and many other gentlemen of Devonshire, and his little vessels, the 'Sunshine' (50 tons) and 'Moonshine' (35 tons), sailed from Dartmouth on June 7, 1585. The sight of Greenland was not cheering to the discoverers, for Davis says that 'the lothsome view of this shore, and the irksome noyse of the yee, was such as it bred strange conceites among us,' and he called it 'Desolation.' But his intercourse with the Esquimaux, whom he gratified with music and dancing, was pleasant and satisfactory, and in all respects becoming the character of the good English gentleman, who distributed presents among 'the gentle and loving savages.' He crossed the strait which bears his name, and gave the name of Cape Walsingham to the point on its western side. The second voyage was over much the same ground: but, in his third voyage, in 1587, in the same old 'Sunshine,' Davis pushed farther to the northward, and reached as far as the bold promontory which he named after one of the supporters of the voyage, Hope Sanderson. It is a magnificent headland, 3,300 feet high, to the southward of the Danish colony of Upernavik. Davis thus made known to

future of  
this dire

After  
to discov  
John Ki  
captain  
Denmark  
Gravesen  
tualled a  
merchan  
voyage a  
the coast  
of the co  
over a hi  
last word  
are as fol

'Here  
and this  
mate his  
shallop a  
their shi  
mate his  
with hym  
a plat of  
daggs and  
from the  
they wen  
mornenge



future mariners that there was a wide opening in this direction, leading to the northward.

After the voyages of Davis followed the attempts to discover the North-West Passage by the ill-fated John Knight. He went to Greenland in 1605 as captain of a pinnace belonging to the King of Denmark: and on April 18, 1606, he sailed from Gravesend in a bark called the 'Hopewell,' victualled at the cost of the Muscovy and East India merchants. He seems to have made a prosperous voyage across the Atlantic, and to have landed on the coast of Labrador with paper to make a sketch of the coast line. Captain Knight was seen to walk over a hill, but was never heard of again; and the last words in his journal, in a different handwriting, are as follow:—

• Here Mr. Knight ended writinge in his jornall: and this 26 day of June 1606 the said Knight, his mate his brother and 3 others went into their shallop and rowed to an Iland about 6 myle from their ship comeng to the iland the said Knight his mate his brother and . . . went a shore takinge with hym a compas and other instruments to take a plat of the land: also they took with them swords daggs and mūskets and halfe pykes to defend them from the enemyes yf they should meete withe any they went a shore about 10 of the clocke in the mornenge comandinge the other 2 whom they lefte

in the shallop (whereof the trumpeter was one), to tarry there for them untill 3 a clock in the afternoon: which attendance they performed and stayed untill 11 a clocke at night as they say for neither that night nor at any tyme after notwithstanding they sent a shore agayne and used their best means untill they were assalted by the salvages, could they either see hear or understand what was become of ye said Mr. Knight or the others that went a shore w<sup>h</sup> hym.

The ship returned to England, reaching Dartmouth on September 24, 1606. The original manuscript by Captain Knight, being a narrative of this voyage, a brief abstract of which was printed by Purchas,<sup>1</sup> has been saved from the general destruction of similar precious documents at the India Office.<sup>2</sup> It is a brief and sad story, but it is worth preserving, and will, it is hoped, be printed and edited before long.

One vessel only was destined successfully to follow up the discovery of Davis during the next two centuries, and, unfortunately, but very unsatis-

<sup>1</sup> Purchas his Pilgrimes. Book iv. cap. xvi.

<sup>2</sup> The Directors of the East India and North-West Companies were the same body, and once there must have been many valuable original manuscript journals of Arctic voyages in the archives of the East India Company. For the manuscript of Captain Knight's Journal is marked No. 19. It is the only one that has been rescued from the butter-man.

factory  
No bla  
William  
Islands  
fault—a  
of old  
kept by  
remark,  
too cost  
the par  
can fro  
from Ba  
Journal  
covery;  
26, 161  
Baffin a  
little  
extreme  
after a  
water a  
which  
Esquim  
mariner  
After wo  
and the  
stopped  
'Discov  
Melville

factory and vague accounts are extant of her voyage. No blame, however, attaches to the stout pilot William Baffin, who fully described the sounds and islands he discovered on a map now lost. The fault—and it is a serious one—lies at the door of old Purchas, who received the log and chart kept by Baffin, but threw them aside with the remark, that they were ‘somewhat troublesome and too costly to insert.’ Owing to this misconduct on the part of Purchas we are left to gather what we can from a letter to Sir John Wolstenholme, and from Baffin’s own very ‘Brief and True Relation or Journall.’ From these we learn that the ‘Discovery,’ of 55 tons, sailed from Gravesend on March 26, 1616, with Robert Bylot as master, William Baffin as pilot, and a crew of fifteen men. The little ‘Discovery’ reached Hope Sanderson, the extreme northern point of Davis on May 30, and, after a short stoppage by the ice, got into clear water again, and reached the islands in  $72^{\circ} 45'$ , which he called the Women’s Islands, after some Esquimaux fair ones, young and old, whom the mariners treated with much kindness and courtesy. After working up a lane of water between the land and the pack for several days, Baffin was at last stopped by the ice in  $74^{\circ} 15'$  N. on June 9. The ‘Discovery’ made a fortunate passage through the Melville Bay ice, which has since become so famous,

and reached the 'North Water' on July 1, a detention of only twenty-two days.

After discovering the head of the great bay which bears his name, with its wide sounds or openings, Baffin returned by sailing down the west side of it, and the little 'Discovery' was safely anchored in Dover Roads on August 30. It was exactly 200 years before another vessel forced her way into the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay, and the discoveries of that famous pilot were well-nigh forgotten. On the maps published as late as 1818 we see a circular dotted line to the westward of Greenland, with this legend, 'Baffin's Bay, according to the relation of W. Baffin in 1616, but not now believed.'<sup>1</sup> So the memory of a bold and scientific navigator had to wait many weary years for that full justice which usually comes at last.

Meanwhile, the Dutch opened a whale fishery in Davis Strait in 1719, which proved very remunerative, and comparatively safe, for, in a period of sixty years, out of 6,372 voyages to Davis Strait, only thirty-eight ships were wrecked.<sup>2</sup> English whalers soon began to frequent the same fishery; but, in spite of old Baffin's judicious advice, no vessel ever followed in

<sup>1</sup> See the map at the beginning of Daines Barrington's book of the North Pole, and many others.

<sup>2</sup> 'Generale Lyst den Straat-Davissche Visschery zedert 't jaar 1719-1775.' (Haarlem, 1778).

his track  
to remain  
of the '

It is  
ice and  
season.  
flowing  
into the  
great fl  
this dir  
northern  
In the v  
... drift  
the Atla  
Dr. Kan  
in an un  
Walsing  
ice aver  
1855, t  
Strait i  
and it  
underwa  
Leopold  
be const  
and he  
the win  
was an  
the bay

his track until 1817, and the whales were permitted to remain for two centuries in tranquil enjoyment of the 'North Water.'

It is necessary to describe the usual position of ice and water in Baffin's Bay during the navigable season. A surface current is believed always to be flowing down the bay, bearing vast harvests of ice into the Atlantic, and in the winter and early spring great floes of ice are constantly drifting down in this direction, through the wide openings at the northern end—Lancaster, Jones, and Smith Sounds. In the winter of 1850-51, the American Expedition ... drifted with the ice from Wellington Channel to the Atlantic, at the rate of about twelve miles a day. Dr. Kane supposed that at one time the ice extended in an unbroken sheet from Lancaster Sound to Cape Walsingham, with a breadth of 200 miles. This ice averaged a thickness of 8 feet. In September 1855, the 'Resolute,' abandoned far up Barrow's Strait in May 1854, drifted out into the Atlantic; and it is well known how the gallant little 'Fox' underwent the same process in 1857-58. Sir Leopold M'Clintock found a north-westerly wind to be constantly prevailing from September to April, and he believes that the drift is due to the agency of the wind alone. Captain Maury thought that there was an under-current conveying the warm water up the bay, to appear again on the surface, and form

lanes and pools of open water far up in the Polar region. The existence of this under-current was conjectured from the fact that majestic icebergs are sometimes seen sailing up the bay, near the southern part of the west coast, in the teeth of wind and surface current. This may, however, be caused by strong tides and counter currents.

The drift of the vast masses of ice to the southward invariably causes the existence of a wide open sheet of navigable water in the upper end of Baffin's Bay, and for some distance within Lancaster and Smith Sounds during the summer and early autumn, which is known as the 'North Water.' But there is a formidable mass of ice between this 'North Water' and Davis Strait, averaging from 170 to 200 miles in width, and blocking up the centre of Baffin's Bay, which interrupts the approach to the north-west end, and is known as the 'Middle pack.' This ice consists of some ancient floe-pieces of great thickness, which may have come from a distant part of the Arctic seas, of a wide extent of ice formed during each winter, about 6 or 8 feet thick, and of those magnificent bergs which compose the principal charm of Melville Bay scenery. An immense quantity of this pack is destroyed every summer either by the thaws or by the swell and warmth of the Atlantic as it drifts south. The ice of Baffin's Bay is far lighter than that of the Spitzbergen sea. On an average the

floes in  
thickne  
are not  
parent  
feet in  
ness of  
feet thic

It is  
ing wha  
the Midd  
years 16  
the way  
to follow  
of Leith  
the atten  
1817, fir  
Water' c  
very few  
the barr

In 18  
(385 ton  
covery u  
manded  
sailed fro  
edge of  
thirty-ei  
August 8  
The

floes in Baffin's Bay are hardly a fourth part of the thickness of those round Spitzbergen. The latter are not unfrequently in single sheets of solid transparent ice, from 20 to 30, or even approaching 40 feet in thickness. In Baffin's Bay the average thickness of the floes is only 5 or 6 feet, pieces of 8 or 10 feet thick being of rare occurrence.

It is curious that, although there was a flourishing whale fishery in Davis Strait, the passage of the Middle pack was never attempted between the years 1616 and 1817. Old Baffin had gallantly led the way to the 'North Water,' and no man had dared to follow him. At last two whalers, the 'Larkins' of Leith, and the 'Elizabeth' of Aberdeen, made the attempt, and successfully passed the barrier in 1817, finding so plentiful a fishery in the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay that, from that day to this, very few years have passed without whalers forcing the barrier of the middle pack.

In 1818, the 'Alexander' (252 tons) and 'Isabella' (385 tons) were despatched on an expedition of discovery up Baffin's Bay, by the Government, commanded by John Ross and Edward Parry. They sailed from England on April 18, reached the southern edge of the ice on July 2, and, after a detention of thirty-eight days, reached the 'North Water' on August 8.

The chief merit of this first voyage of John



Ross is, that it vindicated Baffin's claims as a discoverer, and proved that his latitudes were very accurate. Ross, at his farthest point, was too far south to see more than the outline of the land near Smith Sound, but he named the capes on each side of its entrance after his two ships, 'Isabella' and 'Alexander.'

From that time the fleet of whalers pushed for the 'North Water' every summer, and was rewarded by the discovery of a very abundant fishery. No bold mariner had taken the advice of Baffin during 200 years, and the poor whales had found a pleasant retreat in this distant corner of the sea, until they were thus invaded by the modern navigators of the middle pack.

The southern edge of the 'North Water' extends from Pond's Bay on the west side, in a north-westerly direction to Cape York; and there are three routes through the middle pack by which it may be reached. The first and only safe one is called by the whalers the 'North-about Passage' along the Greenland coast: the second is by entering the drifting pack in the centre of the bay. It is called the 'Middle Passage,' and should only be attempted late in the season, when the land ice of Melville Bay is most probably broken up; and the third, called the 'Southern Passage,' is long the west side of Baffin's Bay, and can only be effected very late in the season.

or after a



the 'North





performed, if not in June, then in July or August. On the coast of Greenland, between the parallels of  $73^{\circ}$  and  $76^{\circ}$ , there is a wide indentation, open to the south, called Melville Bay. The ice formed in it, from the lay of the land, is not exposed to the general drift down Baffin's Bay, and remains firmly fixed to the coast, often extending from it to a distance of thirty to fifty miles. The prevailing winds in the early part of the season are from the north, in which case the drifting pack is blown off shore, and leaves a lane of open water along the land-floe of Melville Bay. When the wind is from the south, the pack drifts into Melville Bay; but in that case the land-floe is a source of protection, for, as the drifting ice presses against it, the land ice, being oldest, almost invariably proves the strongest of the two. A dock can then be cut in the land ice, and a ship may ride in safety, until the pressure eases off. Thus, 'by sticking to this land-floe,' as the whalers say, of Melville Bay, a vessel is never at the mercy of a drifting pack, and though there may frequently be long detention, ground is seldom lost, and final success is the reward of perseverance. The main ice is generally met with off Cape Shackleton or the Woman Islands of Baffin, and the 'North Water' commences at Cape York, a distance of about 170 miles.

The earliest passage into the 'North Water' was accomplished on June 12, 1849, and the average

passage of  
effected  
from 181  
failed to  
1832, 18  
'North W  
happens  
as to reac  
to persev  
navigable  
August,  
upon eff  
May and  
the year.  
of the ice  
have bee  
since 18  
failed to  
gable sea  
by the '  
at the e  
she had  
succeede  
very san  
the 'No  
of want  
1857, b  
arriving

passage of the whalers during twenty-three years was effected on July 13. There is not a single instance, from 1817 to 1849, of some of the whalers having failed to get through, and in the years 1825, 1828, 1832, 1833, and 1834 the whole fleet reached the 'North Water' before the middle of June. It so happens that, unless the whalers can get through so as to reach Pond's Bay in July, it is not worth while to persevere, and they give up the attempt. The navigable season, however, continues until the end of August, so that discovery-ships may always count upon effecting the passage at some period between May and September. The best chance is early in the year, and they should never fail to be at the edge of the ice by the middle of June. Discovery-ships have been sent up Baffin's Bay thirty-eight times since 1818, and only on two occasions have they failed to reach the 'North Water' during the navigable season. One of these failures was experienced by the 'North Star' in 1849; but she did not arrive at the edge of the ice until the end of July, and if she had been earlier in the field she would have succeeded without doubt. This is certain, for in the very same year the 'St. Andrew' of Aberdeen reached the 'North Water' on June 12. The other instance of want of success was in the case of the 'Fox' in 1857, but she was still later in the season, not arriving in Melville Bay until the middle of August.

Had she been earlier she would have succeeded : and when McClintock, with that indomitable perseverance which has been his motto ever since he commenced Arctic exploration, again charged the barrier on June 18 in the following year : he was in the 'North Water' by the 27th.

But Melville Bay used to be a place of dread and anxiety for the whaling fleet ; for when a southerly wind brought the drifting pack in violent and irresistible contact with the land-floe, the ships, slowly creeping along its edge, were frequently crushed like so many walnuts. In 1819 as many as fourteen ships were smashed to pieces in this way ; in 1821, eleven ; and in 1822, seven. The year 1830 was the greater season of disaster for the whalers, when nineteen ships were entirely destroyed, occasioning a total loss to their owners of 142,600*l*. On June 19 a fresh gale from the S.S.W. drove masses of ice into Melville Bay, and nipped the whole fleet against the land-floe, about forty miles to the southward of Cape York. In the evening the gale increased, and the floes began to overlap each other. A huge floe then came down upon the devoted ships, and a scene of indescribable horror ensued. In a quarter of an hour several fine ships were converted into shattered fragments ; the ice, with a loud grinding noise, tore open their sides, masts were seen falling in all directions, great ships were squeezed flat and thrown

broadside  
was litera  
had time  
stood that  
in Melvil  
refuge on  
even in 18  
escaped  
Even if a  
other is in  
settlement  
fearful cat  
thousand  
tents were  
Jack had  
remember

Discov  
whalers ;  
fatal to a  
fore, run t  
exploring  
Melville  
been lost  
pleasurabl  
the scene  
round the  
and sky,  
charging

broadside on to the ice, and one whaler, the 'Rattler,' was literally turned inside out. The men only just had time to jump on the ice; but it must be understood that there is little or no danger of loss of life in Melville Bay. The shipwrecked sailors took refuge on board their more fortunate consorts, for even in 1830 the 'Cumbrian' and several other ships escaped by digging deep docks in the land ice. Even if a solitary whaler is destroyed, when no other is in sight, the retreat in boats to the Danish settlements is perfectly safe and easy. When the fearful catastrophe occurred in 1830, there were a thousand men encamped on the ice, the clusters of tents were a scene of joyous dancing and frolic, for Jack had got a holiday, and the season was long remembered as the year of 'Baffin's Fair.'

Discovery-ships are more strongly fortified than whalers: they can endure nips which would prove fatal to any other vessels, and they do not, therefore, run the same risk. The proof of this is, that exploring vessels have passed through the ice of Melville Bay thirty-eight times, and not one has been lost. A good nip merely causes a little pleasurable excitement. The weird beauty of the scenery, the wonderful effects of refraction round the horizon, the brightness of ice and sea and sky, the cutting of docks and blasting and charging of floes, all combine to render the Mel-

ville Bay detention a most enjoyable and exhilarating time. Here may be seen those stupendous icebergs which are among the most sublime of Nature's works, with their brilliant emerald and sapphire tints. Here the majestic movements of irresistible floes may be watched, and that still grander sight when a nip causes the formation of a long ridge of ice hummocks, and huge blocks are reared one upon the other amidst a loud grinding moan. The passage of Melville Bay may be a time of anxiety, but he must be dead to all sense of the beautiful in nature who does not derive an equal amount of pleasure from scenes of such unsurpassed grandeur and interest. Skill and judgment in watching the ice and selecting leads are required in this navigation, but an early arrival in Davis Strait ensures the certainty of reaching the 'North Water' during the navigable season.

The average detention for steamers in Melville Bay has been twenty-two days, many of them under exceptionally unfavourable circumstances; and curiously enough this is exactly the time that it took brave old Baffin to cross Melville Bay in 1616, in a little craft of 55 tons. It will be hard indeed if powerful steamers cannot do as well as this 55 ton fly-boat. We may count upon a successful passage of the middle pack from a consideration of the nature of the ice and the physical

causes v  
that wh  
Water  
former v  
out of t  
Bay wer

Once  
explorat  
Region  
invariab  
summer

Of la  
ice navig  
exposed  
the lot o  
chiefly in  
and the i  
the num  
whale oil  
whaling

In the  
p. 34) here  
part of Hu  
in 1782 on  
512) here  
was 52 w  
1. 1821) 10  
w. 1828) of  
1828) were  
were des. to

causes which influence its movements, from the fact that whalers have almost annually reached the 'North Water' since 1817, and from an examination of all former voyages of discovery, in thirty-six of which out of thirty-eight the ice obstructions in Baffin's Bay were overcome.

Once in the 'North Water,' all obstacles to an exploration, more or less extensive, of the Unknown Region are at an end. From Cape York there is invariably a navigable sea to Smith Sound in the summer months.

Of late years steam has made a great change in ice navigation, and the steam whalers are not now exposed to the same risks and detentions as fell to the lot of the old sailing ships. Whale oil was chiefly in demand for lighting streets and houses; and the invention of gas had the effect of lessening the number of ships sent to the north in quest of whale oil. Although never wholly abandoned, the whaling trade fluctuated for many years;<sup>1</sup> until it

<sup>1</sup> In the Journal of the Statistical Society for 1853 (vol. xvii. p. 34) there are some details of the northern whale fishery from the port of Hull from 1772 to 1852. In 1772 there were 9 whalers, in 1782 only 3, in 1792 there were 20, in 1802 there were 36, in 1812 there were 49, and 1820 was a very prosperous year. There were 52 whalers, which brought back 7,976 tons, worth 239,280*l.* In 1821 10 Hull vessels were lost. In 1834 there were only 5 whalers, of which 6 were lost. From 1835 to 1845 only one or two whalers were sent out; but in 1846 the trade revived, and 14 whalers were despatched. In 1852 there were 14; but from that time the



was found that an Indian fibre, when manipulated with whale oil, could be manufactured into a great variety of useful fabrics. The extension of the manufacture of jute in Dundee caused the revival of the whale fishery in Baffin's Bay. A million bales of jute are now annually imported into Dundee, equal to 143,000 tons; and the bulk of the whale oil is required by the jute manufacturers of Dundee and the neighbourhood. Thus the port of Dundee has now become the centre of the whale-fishing trade; and cargoes of oil from the Arctic regions may be seen discharging alongside of cargoes of jute from Calcutta, both being essential to the prosperity of the port. In 1858 the 'Tay,' a full-rigged ship of 600 tons, was converted into an auxiliary screw whaler, being the first steamer that sailed from Dundee on a whaling voyage. In the following year two new steamers, the 'Dundee' and 'Narwhal' were built expressly for the seal and whaling trade; and the experience of their voyages fully proved the enormous advantage of steam over sails in ice navigation.

trade dwindled, and now there are no whalers from the port of Hull. The best known of the old Hull whalers were the 'True-love' (Captain Parker), which made her first voyage in 1784, and was still going in 1852, the 'Manchester' which made 4 voyages, the 'Ellison' and the 'Molly.' From 1772 to 1852 194 whalers sailed from Hull, of which 89 were lost: they brought back 171,907 tons of oil, worth £,158,980*l.*, and 8,556 tons of bone, worth 1,691,200*l.* Total £,847,680*l.* The average price of oil was 30*l.* a ton, and of bone 26*l.*

gation.  
enterpri  
several c  
vessels w  
there wa  
in the w  
between  
settled in  
called the  
strengthen  
no avail  
and cold.  
with seve

The v  
steamers,  
and provi  
the neces  
dation, m  
and the g  
season's f  
and whale  
from the  
interest i  
of oil mo

A wha  
oil, value  
hundredw  
a ton. A



gation. Messrs. Alexander Stephen & Sons, the enterprising Dundee shipbuilders, have since built several other steam whalers, and some of the sailing vessels were fitted with auxiliary screws. By 1867 there was not a sailing vessel belonging to Dundee in the whaling trade. At first there was a question between wood and iron, but it has now been fairly settled in favour of wooden vessels. An iron whaler, called the 'River Tay,' was built at Kirkealdy, and strengthened in every possible way, but all was of no avail when brought into contact with the ice and cold. She sank on her first trip in Davis Strait, with several of the wooden fleet around her.

The value of the Dundee whaling fleet of ten steamers, with their full equipment of fishing gear, and provisions for a season's voyage, together with the necessary plant in casks and boiling accommodation, may be estimated at 150,000*l.* to 200,000*l.*; and the gross value of the produce of a successful season's fishing in seal-skins, whalebone, and seal and whale oil, at about 100,000*l.*; each of the crew, from the captain to the cabin-boy, having an interest in the success of the voyage, in the shape of oil money.

A whale averages a yield of about ten tons of oil, valued at 40*l.* to 43*l.* a ton; and about twelve hundredweight of whalebone, worth 450*l.* to 500*l.* a ton. At present ten steamers sail from Dundee

for Baffin's Bay. Four are owned by the Dundee Seal and Whale Fishing Company—all built by Messrs. Alexander Stephen & Sons, expressly for the trade—namely, the 'Esquimaux,' of 436 tons and 70-horse power, built in 1865, and commanded by Captain Yule, who now sails on his tenth voyage in her: the 'Camperdown,' of nearly the same size, built in 1860, and commanded by Captain Gravill, the son of an old and much-respected whaling captain, and himself an Arctic seaman of long experience; the 'Narwhal,' under Captain Maclellan; and the 'Polynia,' a smaller vessel of 358 tons, built in 1861, and commanded by Captain Kilgour. The 'Victor' and 'Intrepid' are sailing vessels converted into steamers, and belong to the Tay Seal and Whale Fishing Company. They are commanded by Captains Deuchars and Souter. The 'Arctic,' a fine steamer of 439 tons and 70-horse power, built in 1867, was the property of Messrs. Alexander Stephen & Sons, the Dundee ship-builders. She was commanded by Captain William Adams, a daring and successful ice navigator. The 'Erik,' of 412 tons and 70-horse power, is a well-built, serviceable vessel, built for Messrs. Antony Gibbs and Sons of London in 1864,<sup>1</sup> and now commanded by Captain J. B. Walker, a seaman of sound judgment and long experience. The

<sup>1</sup> See pp. 144-147.

· Ravens  
steamer  
caldy, is  
the Bath  
ice navig  
ice-plate  
They ar  
board;  
doubling  
the bilge  
they can  
8 feet, a  
foree.<sup>2</sup>  
very dif  
sailing  
whaling  
in good  
weeks i  
steamer  
boats at  
whole c  
board w  
It i

<sup>1</sup> The  
<sup>2</sup> I an  
present D  
tow and  
Whale Fi

'Ravensraig,' a sailing vessel converted into a steamer in 1866, owned by Mr. Lockhart, of Kirkcaldy, is commanded by Captain Bannerman. All the Baffin's Bay whalers are well strengthened for ice navigation, and have iron stem-plates, with iron ice-plates carried round the bows, and iron side-plates. They are also strongly fortified and staunch in-board; while the outside planking is covered with a doubling of iron bark<sup>1</sup> from the load line down to the bilge. Their stems have considerable rake, so that they can charge the ice at full speed, rise to it 6 or 8 feet, and then come down upon it with crushing force.<sup>2</sup> Thus the whole system of ice navigation is very different from what it was in the old days of sailing vessels; and now it is very seldom that the whaling fleet does not pass through Melville Bay in good time, so as to have a spare month or six weeks in the 'North Water.' Most of the whaling steamers are ship rigged. Each carries eight whale boats about 25 feet long, manned by nearly the whole crew of sixty men; for very few remain on board when the cry of 'A fall! a fall!' is heard.

It is to be regretted that more pains have not

<sup>1</sup> The hardest wood known, imported from Australia.

<sup>2</sup> I am indebted for the detailed information respecting the present Dundee whaling fleet to the courtesy of Mr. Yeaman of that town, and to Mr. David Bruce, the manager of the Dundee Seal and Whale Fishing Company.

hitherto been taken to collect the information, year by year, which is acquired by the daring and intelligent commanders of the whalers, and which they are so ready to communicate. In 1871 Captain Walker took the 'Erik' up Eclipse Sound and found coal washed down by one of the rivers. In 1872 Captain Adams took the 'Arctic' from Pond's Inlet, by Eclipse Sound and Navy Board Inlet, into Barrow's Strait, and then went up Admiralty Inlet. In the same year Captain Edwards took the 'Victor' some distance up Admiralty Inlet. Discoveries are thus constantly made, and generally plotted on charts with care; and all that is needed for the utilisation of these valuable observations, year by year, is the establishment of a system such as Professor Mohm, of Christiania, has inaugurated with excellent effect in Norway; through which commanders may be induced to record careful observations on every opportunity, and to report them. The knowledge that such observations are valued and appreciated will always be a sufficient inducement.

The first whaler to sail from Dundee in the season of 1873, was the 'Intrepid,' which sailed on Tay on April 30. Most of the others followed on May 1. The 2nd was a Friday; but on the 3rd the 'Arctic' sailed, under the command of Captain Adams, with sixty hands on board. Among them

was C  
senger,  
knowle  
voyage  
how th  
the bo  
Water  
Region  
inlets t  
with w  
under  
sportsm  
quainta

Cap  
import  
Since  
we hav  
fishery  
there l  
that h  
at ab  
in Cap  
whal

CA  
m  
m  
m  
m

was Commander A. H. Markham, R.N., as a passenger, who proceeded to Baffin's Bay to acquire a knowledge of all details connected with a whaling voyage and experience in ice navigation; to learn how these steamers are handled in the ice; to see the bergs and fiords of Greenland, and the 'North Water' with its straits leading to the vast Unknown Region; to examine the little-known harbours and inlets to the westward; to collect, note, and observe with watchful accuracy. Next followed the 'Erik,' under Captain Walker, taking with him a young sportsman, Mr. Rickaby, who wished to make acquaintance with the bears, looms, and dovekeys.

Captain Markham's voyage in the 'Arctic' was an important result of the Arctic campaign of 1873. Since the publication of Scoresby's voyage in 1820, we have had no full account of the English whale fishery from one who was actually engaged in it; and there have been great changes during the 55 years that have elapsed. We, therefore, have a really valuable addition to our knowledge of Arctic matters in Captain Markham's interesting narrative of his whaling cruise in Baffin's Bay.<sup>1</sup> That officer care-

<sup>1</sup> "A Whaling Cruise to Baffin's Bay and the Gulf of Boothia, with an account of the rescue of the crew of the "Polaris," by Albert H. Markham, R.N., Commander, Royal Navy. With an Introduction by Lieutenant-General Sherard Osborn, C.B., F.R.S." (Lampson & Co., London, 1875.)

fully noted all the details of the whale fishery, sharing in the labours and risks, taking the steer oar in the chase after whales, and assisting in the capture of bears and narwhals. He acquired practical experience in the new methods of handling ships in the ice, and saw for himself of what the ironclad bows of a screw steamer are capable, in forcing a way through a pack. His voyage was unusually extended, for the 'Aretic' was the first whaler to penetrate down Prince Regent's Inlet to the Gulf of Boothia. She thus went beyond the furthest points reached by Sir Edward Parry's Expedition in 1824, by Sir James Ross's Expedition in 1848, by Mr. Saunders in the 'North Star' in 1850, by Captain Forsyth in 1850, by Mr. Kennedy in 1851, and within a few miles of that reached by Sir Leopold McClintock in 1858. This is a remarkable exemplification of the improvement which the use of sharp-bowed powerful steamers has introduced in ice navigation. A further striking proof of the change is afforded by the fact that the 'Aretic' passed through Melville Bay in sixty hours, while the expeditions of former days, consisting of sailing vessels, were usually detained there for several weeks.

Captain Markham made several corrections in the charts, especially in Cresswell Bay, and round Cape Garry at the entrance of the Gulf of Boothia, fixing

the posi  
visited  
stores le  
now wo  
season o  
whaling  
ing 260  
returned

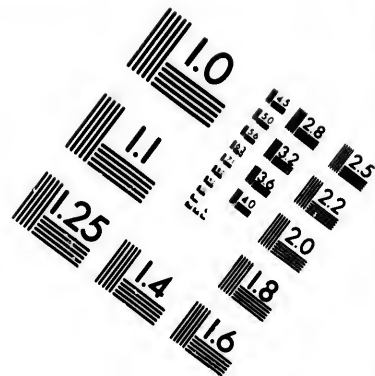
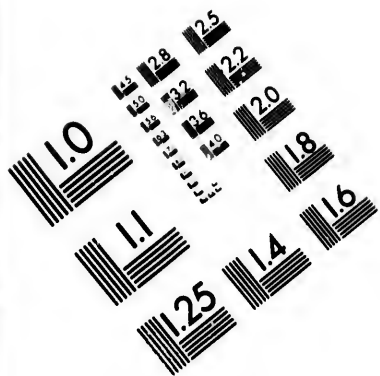
Duri  
were ag  
the 'M  
'Aretic,  
Adams,  
reaching  
30. H  
not long  
which, i  
detentio  
a barrier  
passed t  
demonst  
steam h  
the 'No  
success,  
on board  
bone.  
and ent

the position of that cape with accuracy. He also visited Port Leopold and Fury Beach, examining the stores left there by Ross and Parry, and observing how wonderfully they had been preserved. The season of 1873 was a successful one for the Dundee whaling fleet. The 'Arctic' caught 28 whales yielding 260 tons, and the others, though not so fortunate, returned with good cargoes.

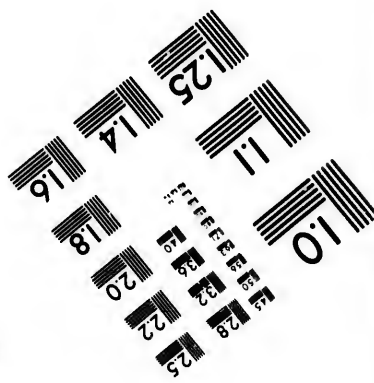
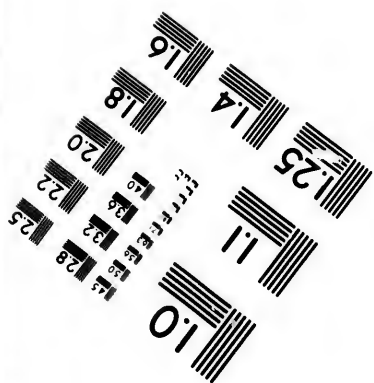
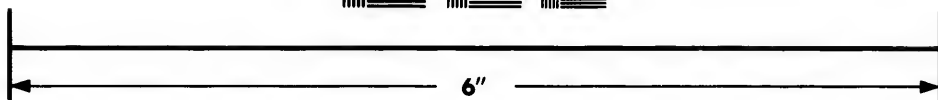
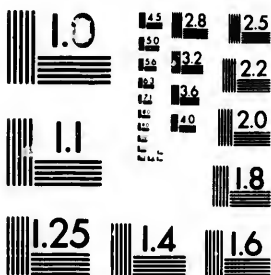
During the year 1874 the ten Dundee whalers were again very successful, and one Peterhead whaler, the 'Mazanthen,' also went up Baffin's Bay. The 'Arctic,' again under the command of Captain Adams, sailed from Dundee on April 28, 1874, reaching the land ice of Melville Bay on May 30. Here the whalers assembled, but they had not long to wait. This once formidable obstacle which, in the days of sailing vessels, used to cause a detention of weeks and even months, no longer forms a barrier to progress. The whole whaling fleet passed through Melville Bay in two days, and again demonstrated the wonderful improvement which steam has caused in ice navigation. After reaching the 'North Water,' Captain Adams met with great success, and by July 2 there were twelve heavy fish on board, yielding 150 tons of oil and ten of whalebone. The 'Arctic' then went up Lancaster Sound, and entered Prince Regent's Inlet, where five more







**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0

5.0  
5.6  
6.3  
7.1  
8.0

whales were taken. Captain Adams then put into Elwyn Inlet, where a large number of white whales were seen in the shoal water, and thirty-two were taken, yielding six tons of oil and two tons of valuable skins. On July 30 the 'Arctic' had gone up Regent's Inlet as far as the south point of Cresswell Bay, where she was stopped by ice; and on August 2 she was off Cape Garry, with several other whalers in company. Afterwards Captain Adams again steamed up the Gulf of Boothia as far as Brentford Bay and Cape Scoresby. The ice was then closing in upon the land, the weather being calm, and the 'Arctic,' 'Intrepid,' and 'Victor,' began to steam down the inlet. The 'Arctic' got as far as Fury Beach, when she was closely beset, in company with the 'Camperdown,' 'Victor,' 'Narwhal,' and 'Intrepid;' and on the 7th a strong gale began to blow from the S.S.E. The ice in which the 'Arctic' was beset drifted until it was brought up on Cape Garry, near the shoal water which was sounded and laid down on the chart by Captain Markham in 1873. Then the seaward ice began to crush heavily upon the ship, and at nine she was hove on her beam ends against the grounded pack. It was discovered that she was making water rapidly, the port bow having been stove in. The water gained rapidly on the pumps, and soon the fires in the engine-room were put out.

All hand  
provision  
pressure  
lably fr  
spread, a  
opened a  
has been  
long and  
made ei  
repaid th  
In 1873  
with the  
officers a  
then, to  
the purp  
tion, the  
his 'W  
'Arctic  
was lost  
best sea  
the use  
rare occ  
It s  
seas, su  
life, as  
very ice  
ensures

All hands were then set to work to save clothes and provisions. The ship was now held up merely by the pressure of the ice; and at 7 P.M. she took fire, probably from the galley forward. The flames rapidly spread, and, when they were at their height, the ice opened and the wreck went down stern first. Such has been the end of the good ship 'Arctic;' after a long and exceptionally successful career. She had made eight most remunerative voyages, and had repaid the cost of construction over and over again. In 1873 she made a memorable voyage; returning with the fullest cargo ever known, and with the officers and crew of the rescued 'Polaris.' It was then, too, that Captain Markham made his voyage for the purpose of acquiring a knowledge of ice navigation, the results of which were given to the world in his 'Whaling Cruise to Baffin's Bay.' Thus the 'Arctic' had done right good service in her day. She was lost through one of those casualties which the best seamanship cannot always prevent, but which the use of steam has, in these days, rendered of very rare occurrence.

It should be remembered, that while in other seas, such casualties usually involve a terrible loss of life, as well as of property, in the Arctic Regions the very ice which causes the destruction of the ship ensures the safety of the crew. Captain Adams and

his fifty-four men were exposed to much hardship, passing the night under a heavy storm of rain, until two tents were erected; and on the 8th they were divided among the four ships within reach. The other ships had experienced severe nips, and the crews got provisions and clothes upon the ice.

The 'Victor' being full, eventually received Captain Adams and all his men on board, and returned to Dundee; where a new and larger 'Arctic' is on the stocks. Captain Kilgour, in the 'Polynia,' went up Lancaster Sound, and caught as many as ten whales off Cape York, at the entrance of Prince Regent's Inlet, between the 10th and 12th of July. On the 26th Captain Kilgour landed in Batty Bay, and discovered the cairn containing the records, which were left there by Mr. Kennedy on August the 6th, 1852, when in command of Lady Franklin's search-vessel, the 'Prince Albert.' The records, with a sledge, a stove, two ice-knives, and other articles found on the south side of the bay, where the 'Prince Albert' wintered, have been brought to Dundee.

On August 3 the 'Polynia' reached Bellot Strait, and was made fast to the land-ice off Long Island, where several whales were seen. This was the first time that any whaler had penetrated so far down the Gulf of Boothia, and the 'Polynia' thus

reache  
McCl  
was be  
of Cre  
dang  
made  
the lea  
cessful  
after a  
safely

Th  
and 'A  
as Cres  
and th  
craig,  
for nea  
This is  
comm  
last ye  
was str  
The 'E  
others,  
as abre  
that sh  
the wa  
'Polyn  
Th

reached the farthest point attained by Sir Leopold McClintock, in the 'Fox,' in 1859. The 'Polynia' was beset off Cape Scoresby, and again at the entrance of Cresswell Bay, where she was in considerable danger, and experienced some severe nips, which made it necessary to heel her over, in order to caulk the leaks, chiefly near the water-line. This was successfully done off Cape Kater, and the 'Polynia,' after an eventful and very successful cruise, arrived safely at Dundee in November.

The whole of the fleet, except the 'Esquimaux' and 'Active,' went down Prince Regent's Inlet, as far as Cresswell Bay, where the ice came in upon them, and they were all severely nipped. The 'Ravenscraig,' commanded by Captain Bannerman, was beset for nearly three weeks, and was in great danger. This is the first time that Captain Bannerman has commanded a ship. He was first mate of the 'Arctic' last year, when Captain Markham was on board, who was struck by his energy and fine seamanlike qualities. The 'Erik,' commanded by Captain Walker, among others, was beset in Cresswell Bay, and drifted as far as abreast of Bellot Strait. The nips were so severe that she was several times lifted 3 or 4 feet out of the water. She got clear at the same time as the 'Polynia.'

The Arctic fleet, with the exception of the

'Arctic,' returned safely to Dundee, in the autumn of 1874, after a very successful year.<sup>1</sup>

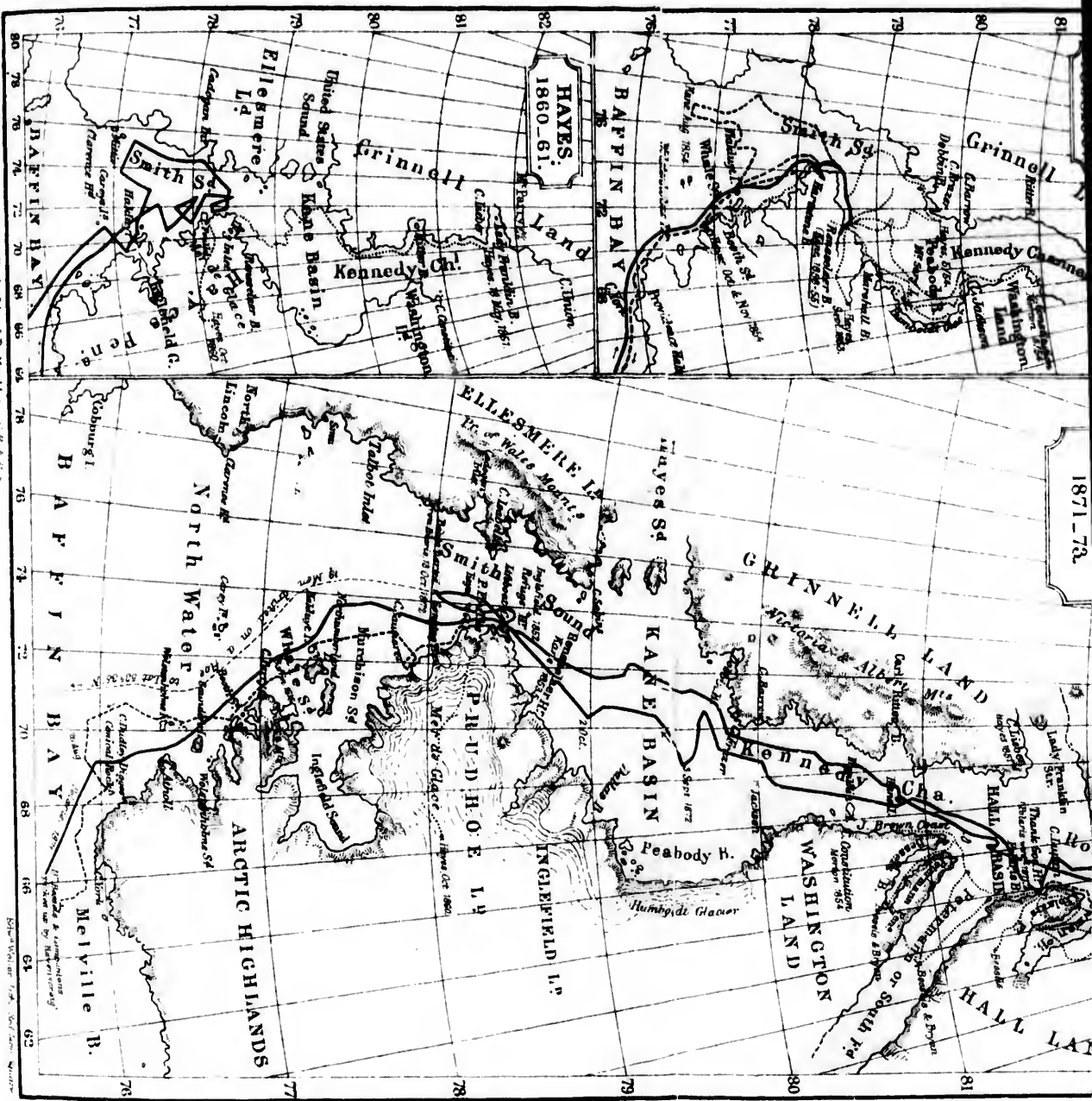
	Whales	Tons of Oil	Tons of Bone
'Active' (Capt. Fairweather) . . . . .	25	160	9
'Victor' (Capt. Deuchars) . . . . .	24	155	8
'Esquimaux' (Capt. Yule) . . . . .	16	135	6
'Camperdown' (Capt. Gravill) . . . . .	32	175	9
'Narwhal' (Capt. McLenman) . . . . .	8	95	5½
'Polynia' (Capt. Kilgour) . . . . .	18	155	8
'Ravensraig' (Capt. Bannerman). . . . .	16	130	6
'Intrepid' (Capt. Soutar) . . . . .	24	185	10
'Erik' (Capt. Walker) . . . . .	11	100	5
	174	1290	66½

The price of whale oil is 40*l.* a ton, and of bone 54*0l.* a ton. At these prices the oil taken in 1874 is worth 51,600*l.*, and the bone 35,910*l.*, giving a total of 87,510*l.* The following is the result of the whale fishing since 1865:—

	No. of Ships	Oil	Bone
1865	7	630	30
1866	11	340	18
1867	11	20	—
1868	13	970	50
1869	10	140	7½
1870	6	760	40½
1871	8	1,165	61½
1872	10	1,010	54
1873	10	1,352	69
1874	10	1,290	66½







From The Threshold of the unknown in Antarctica by F. R. Mearns & H. P. S.

London: Southampton Lane, Manderson Lane & Seale, 1908, 1910, 1911, 1912.

Scale: 1:100,000

# SIX MAPS OF THE SWITZER SOUND ROUTE

*Illustrating the Progress of Exploration from*  
**BYLOT AND BAFFIN TO HALL,**  
 1616—1873.  
 Compiled by E.G. Ravenstein.

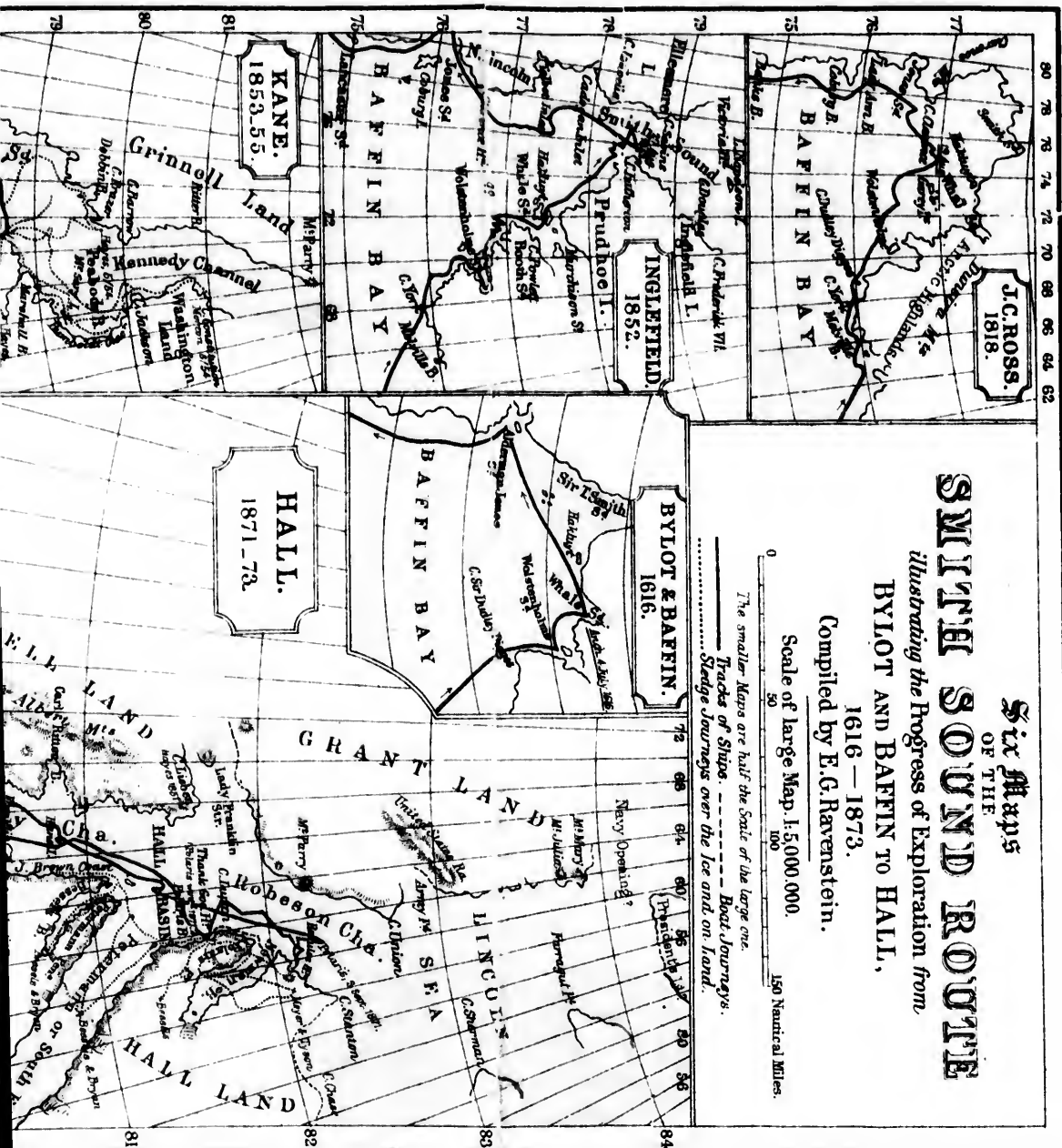
Scale of large Map, 1:5,000,000.

0 50 100 150 Nautical Miles.

*The smaller Maps are half the Scale of the large one.*

*Tracks of Ships. - - - - - Boat Journeys.*

*Sledge Journeys over the Ice and on Land. . . . .*



On July  
his voyag  
largest so  
north int  
point in  
where lin  
wards the  
but the v  
derives it  
Smith wa  
pany dur  
its first  
office for  
excused  
count of  
theless, u  
first and  
East Ind  
did he st

## CHAPTER IX.

## SMITH SOUND.

On July 6, 1616, Baffin made the chief discovery of his voyage ; namely, the entrance of ‘ the greatest and largest sound in all this bay.’ It is the portal leading north into the vast Unknown Region, and the only point in the whole circuit of the 80th parallel where lines of coast are known to stretch away towards the Pole. Baffin gave it a very common name ; but the worshipful person from whom Smith Sound derives its name was no common man. Sir Thomas Smith was the life and soul of the East India Company during the first years of its existence. He was its first governor, and he continued to hold that office for many years. When, in October 1614 he excused himself from holding office longer on account of his age and failing health, he was, nevertheless, unanimously elected. He procured both the first and second patents of incorporation for the East India Company, in 1600 and 1609. Not only did he superintend the outfit of the early voyages to

India, and patronise those of Hudson and Baffin, but he subscribed to them largely out of his own means. In 1612 he was appointed the first Governor of the Company of Merchants Discoverers of the North-West Passage. He fostered the early efforts of that mighty Company which afterwards founded an empire. His excellent advice and constant supervision ensured the preservation of order and good faith among the numerous servants of the Company. He anxiously sought out the best remedies against tropical diseases, and even stooped to interest himself in the amusements of the sailors. He bought virginals for the Company's ships, which is a 'delightful sight for the jacks to skip up and down in such manner as they will.'

Such was the man who gave his name to Smith Sound. All that Baffin tells us concerning it is comprised in the following words:—'It runneth to the north of  $78^{\circ}$ , and is admirable in one respect, because in it is the greatest variation of the compass of any part of the world known; for, by divers good observations, I found it to be above five points or  $66^{\circ}$  varied to the westward, so that N.E. by E. is true north, and so of the rest. Also this Sound seemeth to be good for the killing of whales, it being the greatest and largest in all this bay.'

An interesting tribe of Esquimaux had lived on its shores for centuries; but no European verified

the disc  
Ross and  
saw the  
great dist  
entrance  
ships. V  
Smith So  
is very p  
annually  
and that  
York to C  
on each  
of the '  
north of  
field wen  
but did r

After  
detention  
(149 ton  
field, rea  
and, on r  
through  
unencum  
and west  
of Smith  
but, aft  
islets fa  
the 27th

the discovery of Baffin until August 1818, when Ross and Parry, in the 'Isabella' and 'Alexander,' saw the land at the head of the bay from a very great distance, and Ross named the two capes at the entrance of Smith Sound after his two discovery ships. Whalers may have sighted and even entered Smith Sound since the voyage of Ross; indeed, this is very probable when we consider that they have annually frequented the 'North Water' since 1817, and that there is no difficulty in sailing from Cape York to Cape Isabella in August. We saw the land on each side of Smith Sound from the crow's nest of the 'Assistance' in August 1851, when she was north of Carey Islands; and in 1853, Captain Inglefield went just within Capes Isabella and Alexander, but did not land.

After passing through Melville Bay without any detention from the ice, the little steamer 'Isabel' (149 tons, 16 H.P.), commanded by Captain Inglefield, reached Cape Alexander on August 26, 1852; and, on rounding it, an open sea was seen to stretch through seven points of the compass, apparently unencumbered with ice, though bounded on east and west by two distinct headlands. The entrance of Smith Sound was found to be 36 miles across; but, after naming twenty-four points of land and islets far and near, Captain Inglefield bore up on the 27th, and steered south again without landing,



owing to a gale of wind having sprung up. His extreme northern point was  $78^{\circ} 28' 21''$  N.

Baffin had discovered Smith Sound in 1616, but no civilised man explored it or landed on its shores until the year 1853, when Dr. Kane, in the little brig 'Advance' of 120 tons, undertook to lead an American expedition to these far northern regions. But Baron Wrangell, the great Russian Arctic explorer, had, in 1847, recommended the route by Smith Sound as the best for polar discovery, and had made detailed suggestions with reference to the equipment of an expedition.<sup>1</sup> Like Baffin's little 'Discovery,' the 'Advance' only had a crew of seventeen men, and she was but poorly provided for an Arctic winter. She was supplied with no proper sledge equipment, no preserved meats, and only coals for one year; and the sufferings of her gallant little crew afford no argument against Arctic enterprise, any more than do those of Sir Hugh Willoughby. A poisonous dietary of salt meat in a dirty crowded little brig inevitably causes scurvy and debility; while liberal diet, warm clothing, and ventilation ensure such vigorous and enjoyable health and strength in the Arctic regions as is known in no other climate in the world.

Dr. Kane's plan was to push his little brig to

<sup>1</sup> 'Journal of the Royal Geographical Society, xviii. p. 19.

the furthest  
winter there  
sledges until  
rists, and f  
waters in g  
edge of the  
took the pa  
'North Wat  
she entered  
point reach  
vious year.  
miles north  
stopped by i  
cliffs, 800 to  
there was a b  
on the beach  
of *Ice-foot* (e  
The pack w  
were moving  
gallant but  
through the  
began to form  
was frozen i  
latitude  $78^{\circ}$   
place was n  
sun was  $120^{\circ}$   
temperature  
tered. Unt

a gale of wind having sprung up. His northern point was  $78^{\circ} 28' 21''$  N.

had discovered Smith Sound in 1616, but no man explored it or landed on its shores until the year 1853, when Dr. Kane, in the little 'Advance' of 120 tons, undertook to lead an expedition to these far northern regions.

Wrangell, the great Russian Arctic explorer, in 1847, recommended the route by the coast as the best for polar discovery, and made detailed suggestions with reference to the details of an expedition.<sup>1</sup> Like Baffin's little 'Advance,' the 'Advance' only had a crew of 24 men, and she was but poorly provided for a winter. She was supplied with no large equipment, no preserved meats, and was to last for one year; and the sufferings of her crew afford no argument against Arctic expeditions any more than do those of Sir Hugh G. A poisonous dietary of salt meat in a small little brig inevitably causes scurvy; while liberal diet, warm clothing, and exercise ensure such vigorous and enjoyable life in the strength in the Arctic regions as is not to be found in any other climate in the world.

Dr. Kane's plan was to push his little brig to

of the Royal Geographical Society, xviii. p. 19.

the furthest navigable point up Smith Sound, and winter there; then to follow the coast line with sledges until he reached the Polar Basin of theorists, and finally to embark upon its imaginary waters in gutta-percha boats. After reaching the edge of the ice in Baffin's Bay, the 'Advance' took the pack, and had the luck to reach the 'North Water' in ten days. On August 7, 1853, she entered Smith Sound, and passed the highest point reached by Captain Inglefield in the previous year. But in latitude  $78^{\circ} 45'$  N., only 17 miles north of Inglefield's position, Dr. Kane was stopped by ice. The coast consists of precipitous cliffs, 800 to 1,200 feet in height, and at their base there was a belt of ice about 18 feet thick, resting on the beach. Dr. Kane adopted the Danish name of *Ice-foot* (*eise fod*) for this permanent frozen ridge. The pack was drifting south, and many icebergs were moving up and down with the tides. After a gallant but ineffectual attempt to force his way through the pack to the northward, the young ice began to form, and on September 10 the 'Advance' was frozen in on the east side of Smith Sound, in latitude  $78^{\circ} 37'$  N., longitude  $70^{\circ} 40'$  W. The place was named Van Rensselaer Harbour. The sun was 120 days below the horizon. The lowest temperature was in February, when  $-70^{\circ}$  was registered. Until the end of November, parties were



employed in laying out depôts to the northward, for the spring travelling. The travelling parties, however, effected little, owing to the small number of hands, and to sickness; but at the same time some interesting discoveries were made.

Cape Alexander, at the entrance of Smith Sound, was found to be in  $78^{\circ} 10' N.$ ; and a little farther north the coast of Greenland trends in an easterly direction, and is broken by two large bays full of islands. Precipices rise up to a height of 800 to 1,400 feet from the frozen sea, formed of Old Red Sandstone and Silurian limestone, resting on syenite. In latitude  $79^{\circ} 12' N.$ , a great glacier abuts upon the sea, presenting a perpendicular face of from 300 to 500 feet. Icebergs are ejected from it in lines, and are described by Dr. Kane as conferring a character of great sublimity on the landscape. This vast mass of ice, with a sea face 45 miles long, was named the Humboldt Glacier. Here Dr. Kane's personal investigations ceased. His steward, a man named Morton, with an Esquimaux and a team of dogs, crossed the front of the glacier, and advanced along a part of the coast to the northward. According to Morton's own account, he went 76 miles farther north, and found open water extending in an iceless channel to the western shores. At his extreme northern point, Morton said he came to a high cliff, where a heavy surf was beating against

the rock  
 $81^{\circ} 22'$   
coast st  
iceless l  
white c  
the water  
rated fr  
belt of  
Morton  
northwa  
called l  
explored  
Sound.  
Channel  
Strait.

Mr.  
point re  
seen in  
Dr. Her  
of the  
shown t  
untenab  
Greenla  
tion fro  
pedition  
Hans, M  
witness,  
Morton

the rocks. He gave the latitude of this cliff as  $81^{\circ} 22' N.$ , and declared that he saw the western coast stretching far towards the north, with an iceless horizon, and a heavy swell rolling in with white caps. Crowds of birds were seen thronging the water of this alleged open sea, which was separated from the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay by a belt of ice 125 miles wide. This was in June 1854. Morton added that the furthest point seen to the northward was a high mountain in about  $82^{\circ} 30' N.$ , called by Dr. Kane Cape Parry. Another party explored a portion of the western coast of Smith Sound. Dr. Kane gave the name of Kennedy Channel to the northern end of Smith Sound or Strait.

Mr. Arrowsmith has placed Morton's furthest point reached in  $80^{\circ} 56' N.$ , and his furthest point seen in  $81^{\circ} 56' N.$  That eminent Danish geographer, Dr. Henry Rink, has expressed well-founded doubts of the accuracy of Morton's statements, and has shown that the conclusions derived from them are untenable. Dr. Rink is the highest authority on Greenland geography, and he derived his information from Petersen, the interpreter of Kane's expedition, who received the account of the Esquimaux Hans, Morton's companion. From this unbiassed witness, it appears that the 'Open Polar Sea' of Morton was merely a channel cut by the strong

current during the warm days of midsummer. Dr. Kane mentions that great numbers of seals and sea-fowl were seen by Morton, and adduces this as a proof of an open Polar sea; but Rink remarks, on the contrary, that the flocking together of sea-animals and birds is a sign of a single opening in a sea, the rest of which was covered with ice.

In July 1854, an unsuccessful attempt was made by Dr. Kane to communicate, by boats, with the English exploring ships up Wellington Channel, and his return showed that the ill-provided crew must face another winter. Reduced to a salt diet which was absolute poison, and with fuel nearly used up, their only chance was to adopt the habits and dress of the Esquimaux as closely as possible, and to rely for food on the success of hunting parties. The tribe of Arctic Highlanders proved real friends in need, and supplied the poor Americans with raw seal and walrus flesh, thus, no doubt, saving their lives. But scurvy soon attacked the whole party, and Dr. Kane with one other man alone remained to attend upon the sick, and perform all the work. During this time the kindly Esquimaux shared with the scurvy-stricken white men the proceeds of their hunting. Half the brig having been burnt for fuel, and all provisions being nearly spent, Dr. Kane abandoned her on May 17, 1855, and the little party commenced their retreat to the Danish settle-

ment of Upernavik. The Esquimaux brought the poor fellows daily supplies of birds, helped them to carry their provisions, and showed the kindest feeling and the most rigid honesty. On June 18 the Americans reached open water, and their kind-hearted saviours bade them farewell at the edge of the floe. Depending entirely on the birds they could shoot for subsistence, the worn-out and debilitated party reached the Danish settlement of Upernavik on August 6, 1855, eighty-three days after abandoning the brig.

The story of the hardships and sufferings of this American party is very interesting as told in the charming volumes of Dr. Kane; but, at the same time, it is quite clear that the nature of the equipment of the poor little 'Advance' rendered them inevitable. She was totally unprepared for two winters in any part of the Arctic regions; and it would be as absurd and irrelevant to found any argument on her experiences as on those of Arnbjørn the Norman or of Sir Hugh Willoughby. Dr. Kane's discoveries, however, are important. They prove that a wide strait leads from Baffin's Bay into the unknown Polar region; that Greenland is separated from the land to the westward; and that the coast line extends for a considerable distance to the northward. The latter fact is the more important, because this is the only point where

the land trends in the direction of the Pole itself, instead of forming a circle of continent and archipelago round the frontier of the Polar region. The open water seen by Morton, in the end of June, was just such a water-hole as forms in almost all parts of the Arctic regions during the navigable season. It may have been as extensive as the 'North Water' at the head of Baffin's Bay, or it may only have extended to the point reached by Morton's vision; but, under either circumstance, there is nothing remarkable in meeting with a water-hole, or *Polyuia*, as the Russians would call it, caused by a strong current, in this latitude, in the month of June. It must of course be the resort of innumerable birds and seals during the summer months. During Kane's detention in Smith Sound, his Danish interpreter, Petersen, conversed with the Esquimaux who had been to a large island called *Umingmik* (musk ox) Isle, far beyond Morton's furthest. They said that there was open water, with walrus there; and that some of their people formerly lived on the island. •

On July 10, 1860, Dr. Hayes sailed from Boston, in the schooner 'United States,' of 133 tons, with a crew of fifteen men, with the object of following up the line of research opened by Dr. Kane. On August 27 the schooner entered Smith Sound, but she was blown out of it again no less than three

times  
perma  
in a ha  
Cape  
20 mil  
laer H  
about  
comme  
and fo  
and pr  
and fo  
The at  
the sup  
imprac  
party,  
panions  
west co  
to trav  
visions  
return,  
The sel  
and ret  
1861.  
dance o  
Harbou  
reindee  
and se  
there v

times by heavy gales before Dr. Hayes effected a permanent lodgment within the strait. He wintered in a harbour named Port Foulke, 10 miles N.E. of Cape Alexander, in latitude  $78^{\circ} 17' 41''$  N., and 20 miles south of Kane's winter quarters in Rensselaer Harbour, though the distance by the coast is about 90 miles. On April 4, 1861, Dr. Hayes commenced his sledge travelling with twelve men and fourteen dogs, a metallic life-boat on runners, and provisions for seven persons for five months, and for six persons and fourteen dogs for six weeks. The attempt to drag the life-boat over the ice to the supposed open water in Kennedy Channel proved impracticable; so, sending it back with the main party, Dr. Hayes pressed onward with three companions and two dog-sledges. They reached the west coast of the Sound on May 10, and continued to travel northward until the 18th, when their provisions were exhausted, and they were obliged to return, having reached a latitude of  $81^{\circ} 35'$  N. The schooner was broken out of the ice on July 10, and returned safely to Boston again on October 23, 1861. There appears to have been a great abundance of animal life at the winter quarters in Foulke Harbour. Dr. Hayes reported that upwards of 200 reindeer were shot during the winter, that walrus and seals were abundant, and that in the summer there were quantities of ducks and little auks, so



that he had no difficulty in constantly supplying his party with fresh food. To this he attributes their entire exemption from disease.

Dr. Hayes examined the west coast of Smith Sound and Kennedy Channel for some distance, and discovered a new sound or channel opening westward from the centre of Smith Sound. He found the portion of Kennedy Channel, which Morton reported to be an open sea in June 1854, entirely frozen over on May 23, 1861; but the ice was everywhere much decayed. The coast on the west side of the channel was lined with a heavy ridge of pressed-up ice, some of the masses being 60 feet high and far up on the beach, and he judged from this that they must have been forced up by ice-fields of great extent, coming down under the influence of winds and currents from a vast ocean to the northward. This theory, however, is quite unnecessary to account for the heavy ice. When H.M.S. 'Assistance' was severely nipped up Barrow's Strait, in 1850, the ice-hummocks were quite as high, and the pressure that formed them was from ice-fields of no great extent.

Two English whalers, in different years, have since been to the entrance of Smith Sound; and saw an open navigable sea, extending to the horizon.

The great success of the voyage of the 'Polaris,' under the command of Captain Hall—a full account

of wh  
most e  
in the  
means  
cipline  
and sh  
certain  
expedi

Ca  
tion o  
during  
inured  
their  
engage  
partic  
expedi  
of Sir  
away  
credit  
that d  
of Fro

Ea  
for the  
Pole.  
from  
Navy,

of which has been given by Captain Markham<sup>1</sup>—is most encouraging with reference to future exploration in the same direction. Considering the inadequate means at his disposal, and the absence of naval discipline, Captain Hall's success is very remarkable, and shows how much important work may almost certainly be done by a thoroughly equipped naval expedition.

Captain Hall, in 1869, returned from an expedition of five consecutive years in the Arctic regions, during which he lived like one of the Esquimaux, inured himself to their mode of life, and acquired their language. During that long period he was engaged in an earnest endeavour to collect additional particulars respecting the fate of Sir John Franklin's expedition; and he undoubtedly discovered the site of Sir Martin Frobisher's settlement. He brought away many interesting relics; and he received full credit for his discovery from Admiral Collinson, when that distinguished Arctic officer edited the Voyages of Frobisher for the Hakluyt Society.

Early in 1870 Captain Hall began his agitation for the despatch of an expedition to reach the North Pole. He appears to have received much assistance from Mr. Robeson, the American Secretary of the Navy, and the Department handed over to him a

<sup>1</sup> See 'Whaling Cruise to Baffin's Bay,' chap. xiii.



wooden river gunboat of 387 tons, called the 'Periwinkle,' which was re-christened the 'Polaris.' Congress also granted him 50,000 dollars; but no naval officer accompanied the expedition. Captain Hall was not himself a seaman, so he took with him Captain S. O. Buddington, a native of New London, in Connecticut, as sailing master. Captain Buddington is now forty-eight years of age, and had made thirteen whaling voyages to Baffin's Bay before he sailed in the 'Polaris.' Captain George E. Tyson joined as assistant navigator; Chester, the mate, was a good seaman and excellent harpooneer; Doctor Bessels, a naturalist and Doctor of Medicine, had charge of the scientific department, and Mr. Meyer went out as meteorologist. Morton, Dr. Kane's ship's steward, Hans, the Esquimaux, who was in the expeditions of Kane and Hayes, and Joe and Hannah, the Esquimaux whom Hall had brought home with him from his former wanderings, with their daughter Silvia, were also of the party. On June 26, 1871, Captain Hall was received by the American Geographical Society at New York, when he announced his intention of proceeding up Jones Sound unless he was stopped by heavy pack-ice, in which case he would pursue Dr. Kane's route by Smith Sound, attempting it by the west side. He gathered from the narratives of Kane and Hayes, that, owing to the configuration of the land, the icebergs, from the

glacier  
east si  
He tru  
and ha  
80° N.

Th  
tions.

Ameri  
munifi  
Frank

in 183

region

Polar

I give

the N

next O

A

sailed,

finally

the Gr

appear

Jones

openin

on the

northw

'Polar

ing to

than h

glaciers to the north blocked up the deep bay on the east side of Smith Sound, and obstructed navigation. He trusted mainly to dogs for his sledge travelling, and had no hope of reaching a higher latitude than  $80^{\circ}$  N. in one year.

The result exceeded his most sanguine expectations. On the occasion of his reception by the American Geographical Society, Mr. Grinnell, the munificent promoter of expeditions for the search of Franklin, presented Captain Hall with the flag which, in 1838, had been with Wilkes to the Antarctic regions, and which had since been in the northern Polar seas, with De Haven, Kane, and Hayes. 'Now I give it to you, sir,' said Mr. Grinnell; 'take it to the North Pole, and bring it back in a year from next October.'

A few days after this reception the 'Polaris' sailed, and, after filling up with provisions at Disco, finally left the most northern Danish settlement on the Greenland coast in August 1871. Captain Hall appears to have abandoned his intention of entering Jones Sound, and pushed for the more northern opening. He carried out his intention of keeping on the western shore of Smith Sound in pushing northwards, and was most successful. He took the 'Polaris' a distance of 250 miles up the strait leading to the North Pole, and reached a higher latitude than had ever before been obtained by any ship, and

within 30 miles of the most northern point ever reached by civilised man. An examination of the maps at the commencement of this chapter will show the true significance of his achievement. The first of the six maps shows the head of Baffin's Bay as delineated by Baffin himself in 1616; and the second shows how Sir John Ross made the strange mistake of closing up all the straits, and turning them into shallow bays. Inglefield went to the entrance of Smith Sound, saw that there was a wide navigable sea to the northward, and sketched the map of which a copy is given. Kane and Hayes only took their small and unsuitable vessels to the entrance, where they wintered on the east coast; and the extent of coast explored by their travelling parties is uncertain, owing to the absence of reliable observations. Dr. Kane himself certainly never went north of the 79th parallel. His steward, Morton, and the Esquimaux, Hans, are supposed to have gone, on a dog sledge, as far north as about  $80^{\circ} 56'$ , to a point of land named Cape Constitution, on the east coast. Dr. Hayes went up the west coast with a dog sledge, and placed his furthest point in  $81^{\circ} 35' N$ . But these positions are very doubtful, and it is certain that no vessel had ever been beyond just within the entrance of Smith Sound.

The largest map of the six shows the discoveries of Captain Hall, in the 'Polaris.' During the month

of An  
chanu  
name  
Basin  
discov  
name  
finally  
Here  
water  
shore,  
trendi  
contin  
The '  
a chec  
ters w  
latitud  
the '  
inlet,  
which  
coast  
Octob  
travell  
the fir  
did no  
Robesc  
bold p  
' Cap  
latitude

of August 1871, he sailed up the long strait or channel through the entrance to which alone the name of Smith Sound is now given, across the Kane Basin, through Kennedy Channel, across Polaris Bay discovered by himself, and up a strait which he named after Mr. Robeson, the Secretary of the Navy, finally reaching a latitude of  $82^{\circ} 16' N.$  on August 30. Here the little vessel was beset; but there was a water horizon to the north-east. The lofty eastern shore, at the furthest visible point, appeared to be trending to the north-east, while the western land continued to trend north for some distance farther. The 'Polaris' had attained this high latitude without a check or obstacle of any kind. The winter quarters were in a harbour called 'Thank God' Bay, in latitude  $81^{\circ} 38' N.$  and longitude  $61^{\circ} 44' W.$ , which the 'Polaris' reached on September 3. A large inlet, 20 miles wide, and of an unascertained depth, which they called the 'Southern Fiord,' breaks the coast line on the western side of Polaris Bay. On October 10, Captain Hall started with an autumn travelling party, consisting of himself, Mr. Chester the first mate, and the Esquimaux Joe and Hans, but did not get beyond the 82nd parallel, to a point in Robeson's Strait which he called Newman Bay.<sup>1</sup> A bold promontory at the northern end of Polaris Bay

<sup>1</sup> Cape Brevoort, the northern point of Newman Bay, was in latitude  $82^{\circ} 2' N.$  and longitude  $61^{\circ} 20' W.$

was named Cape Lupton. On his return, Captain Hall was taken ill, he became partially paralysed and died on November 8. He was buried on shore, and a wooden monument was erected on his grave. He had the glory of dying in the midst of his discoveries.

The climate of the winter quarters in  $81^{\circ} 38' N.$  was found to be much milder than it is several degrees further south. In June, the plain surrounding 'Thank God' Bay was free from snow; a creeping herbage covered the ground, on which numerous herds of musk oxen found pasture; and rabbits and lemmings abounded. The wild flowers were brilliant, and large flock of birds came northward in the summer. Traces of Esquimaux were found—a proof that they have wandered far into the unknown area. A current of a knot an hour flows down Robeson Strait from the north, and carries the ice through Smith Sound, and out into Baffin's Bay. It was found that the tidal waves from the north and south met at Cape Fraser, on the west coast of Grinnel Land. To the south of Cape Fraser the flood tide makes to the north, whilst to the north it flows south. The rise and fall during spring tides was above five and a half feet, and during the neaps above two feet.<sup>1</sup>

On the death of Captain Hall, the command devolved upon the ice-master, Buddington, who

<sup>1</sup> See Captain Markham's Cruise, p. 201.

seems  
making  
of sleep  
as far  
and r  
'Polar  
south  
2' N.,  
current  
latitud  
Sound  
sions w  
tions v  
ever, p  
and the  
Meyer  
seamen  
childre  
provisi  
left in  
but in  
escape  
boat's  
building  
Arctic  
more se  
wonder  
Bay.

seems to have resolved upon returning, without making further discoveries, in the spring, by means of sledge travelling. A party was sent in two boats as far as Newman Bay, but they abandoned the boats, and returned in July. On August 12, 1872, the 'Polaris' was again free, and her head was turned southwards. She appears to have been beset in  $80^{\circ} 2' N.$ , and drifted out into Baffin's Bay by the current; and on October 15 she was again beset, in latitude  $77^{\circ} 53' N.$ , off the north entrance of Whale Sound. The nip was so severe that boats and provisions were got on the ice, and the necessary preparations were made to abandon the ship. This, however, proved to be unnecessary, as the ice eased off, and the ship righted. But Tyson, the second master, Meyer, the meteorologist, the steward and cook, six seamen and eight Esquimaux, men, women, and children, remained on the floe with the boats and provisions. In any other country a boat's crew thus left in mid-ocean must almost certainly have perished; but in the Arctic regions there are special means of escape from danger, and the friendly ice drifted the boat's crew into safety, and supplied the means of building shelter from the storms and cold of an Arctic night. They obtained many birds, and killed more seals than they could consume. There is nothing wonderful in the drift of this boat on a floe in Baffin's Bay. James Ross, De Haven, M'Clintock, and the



'Resolute' drifted out exactly in the same way. Latterly, as the drifting floes began to break up, the means of obtaining food became precarious, and the party suffered much privation. On April 21, their larder was renewed by the Esquimaux, who shot a bear; and on the 29th the party was picked up by the sealing steamer 'Tigress,' commanded by Captain Bartlett, in  $53^{\circ} 35' N.$ , and only 40 miles from the land, near Wolf Island. They were taken into St. John's, Newfoundland, in good health. In this way early news was received of the remarkable success of Captain Hall's exploring voyage.

Meanwhile the 'Polaris' was driven to the north by a southerly gale, and run on shore at Lyttleton Island, near the entrance of Smith Sound. In these excellent quarters, with the remaining crew of fourteen men, she passed her second winter. They had plenty of provisions, and received much help from the friendly Esquimaux. In June 1873 the party built two boats, in which they went south until they were picked up by the 'Ravensraig' whaler in Melville Bay. They were eventually landed at Dundee by the whaler 'Arctic' in perfect health and safety. Meanwhile the United States steamer 'Juniata,' commanded by Lieutenant Merriman, proceeded to Disco to obtain intelligence of the 'Polaris.' The 'Tigress' also was purchased, and sailed in July under the command of Captain

Greer  
if it sh  
ice na  
return

Th  
furnish  
We no  
by Cap  
season.  
check  
and th

naviga  
'Polar  
and ill  
told, o  
eight E  
withou  
a prop  
equally

And  
of the  
drifted  
position  
tained  
it sout  
the nav  
dition  
the da

Greer, U. S. N., to convey succour to the 'Polaris' if it should be needed. The 'Tigress' is built for ice navigation, and went as far as Lyttleton Island, returning in the same season.

The news received from the crew of the 'Polaris' furnishes additional information of great importance. We now know that the American vessel commanded by Captain Hall passed up the strait, in one working season, for a direct distance of 250 miles, without a check of any kind, reaching latitude  $82^{\circ} 16' N.$ ; and that at her furthest point the sea was still navigable with a water sky to the northward. The 'Polaris' was a mere river steamer, of small power, and ill adapted for ice navigation, with a crew, all told, of thirty men, women, and children, including eight Esquimaux. If she could make such a voyage without difficulty, it may fairly be anticipated that a properly equipped English expedition, under equally favourable circumstances, would do more.

Another very important feature in the voyage of the 'Polaris' is the fact that she was safely drifted out into Baffin's Bay from a high-northern position in the strait. This proves that the ascertained current keeps the ice in motion, and carries it south, thus preventing any long interruption of the navigation. The safety of a Government expedition is thus assured. For it is quite clear that the dangers of the Arctic regions are, in most



instances, the direct consequences of despatching ill-equipped and inadequately supplied vessels with undisciplined crews. The really unavoidable dangers are thoroughly understood, and most of them can be obviated by modern appliances and experience. Two vessels stationed at suitable distances could keep up communications with each other, and with the whalers which annually frequent the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay, while, under the most unforeseen and improbable contingency, a safe retreat would always be kept open.

There is a third feature in the voyage of the 'Polaris' which strengthens the argument in favour of exploration by Smith Sound. At the winter quarters, in  $81^{\circ} 38' N.$ , the climate was milder than it is further south, and animal life abounded, including musk oxen. This account corroborates that of Dr. Hayes, who was able to supply his men with plenty of fresh provisions in the less hospitable region near the entrance of Smith Sound. A Government expedition, with properly organised hunting parties, will be able to obtain considerable supplies of fresh meat, and thus add to the prospect of maintaining the men in health and vigour. Under such circumstances there is no healthier climate than that of the Arctic regions.

These considerations are sufficient to show that the highly important scientific results of Arctic

exploration can be secured without undue risk, and with a reasonable assurance that no disaster involving loss of life or health is to be apprehended. The system of Arctic sledge travelling, which is now thoroughly understood, will ensure the examination of a vast extent of new country in various directions, from the wintering position of the two ships: and the navigable seasons will enable the expedition to obtain valuable information respecting the hydrography of the now unknown seas round the Pole. The story of Arctic exploration is a cheering and invigorating story. Each succeeding enterprise has added more and more to the stores of human knowledge; and, in the present day, when the true methods of exploring are well known, and men of science have clearly enumerated the important problems that will be solved, and the numerous valuable results that will be derived from the labours of an Arctic expedition, the reasons for despatching one have acquired tenfold force.

## CHAPTER X.

## THE PARRY ISLANDS.

THE discoveries of Kane, Hayes, and Hall indicate the point where the known land reaches farthest north in the Polar space. Thence the threshold of the unknown region extends along the northern side of the Parry Islands to Behring's Strait, and has only been touched by officers in command of ships or travelling parties employed in searching for Sir John Franklin. Going west along the boundary, from the meridian of the west side of Smith Sound in  $77^{\circ}$  W. to near the entrance of Jones' Sound in  $85^{\circ}$  W., the coast line has been seen by whalers and discovery ships navigating the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay. From  $85^{\circ}$  W. to  $90^{\circ}$  W. is the channel leading from Jones' Sound to the unknown sea north of the Parry Islands. Jones' Sound was discovered by Baffin in 1616; and has often been entered by whalers. In 1848, Captain Lee of the 'Prince of Wales' ran up Jones' Sound for fourteen hours, and

sent  
very  
was  
Capta  
and  
from  
W.S.  
up th  
miles.  
Admi  
Jones  
entran  
ward.  
south  
huge  
er 4,0  
Capta  
with  
pour  
ravine  
strait  
was s  
she v  
the '  
Sound  
F  
Sound  
cover

sent a boat on shore; where a view was obtained of very high land to the westward, and deep water was found close to rocks on the south coast. Captain Lee then steered N.E. for some distance, and found open water, as far as he could see from the mast-head, extending about N.W. to W.S.W. The distance the 'Prince of Wales' ran up the Sound, from the entrance, was about 150 miles. On August 16, 1851, Lieutenant (now Admiral) Sherard Osborn took the 'Pioneer' into Jones' Sound. He found it to be narrowest at the entrance, and that it increased in width to the westward. The scenery is magnificent, especially on the south shore, where, some ten miles in the interior, a huge dome of pure white snow envelopes land 3,000 or 4,000 feet high, named the Treuter Mountains by Captain Austin, who was on board the 'Pioneer' with Osborn. From this dome, long winding glaciers pour down the valleys, and project through the ravines, into the deep blue waters of this magnificent strait. Unfortunately the progress of the steamer was stopped by floes stretching across the strait, and she was obliged to return. Captain Inglefield, in the 'Phoenix,' also went some distance up Jones' Sound in 1853.

From 85° to 90° W. is the portion of Jones' Sound not yet fully explored, and thence the discoveries of Sir Edward Belcher extend from 90° to

97° W., along what has been named Grinnell Land.

Sir Edward explored this coast in the spring of 1853, and on May 20 he was stopped by open water, streaked with sailing ice, at the western entrance of Jones' Sound. This was in about 90° W., and from a little to the westward of this point Sir Edward went across the floe to the southernmost island of a most extensive archipelago, 'leading,' he says, 'to the N.E., or possibly to the Pole.' He adds that the heavy, even solid, state of the surrounding floe, and, where nipped, the almost berg-like lumps which protruded, afford a fair inference that the sea is seldom seriously disturbed in these latitudes. But the pack ice to the northward was from 6 to 8 feet thick, and was acted upon by a strong tide. In the offing a widely-packed state of floe ice was to be seen, denoting that during the severe autumnal and wintry gales that sea had been in motion. Early in June, the flights of birds pointed to the existence of water-holes, and consequent movements of the floes, and Sherard Osborn accounts for this early disruption by the passage of a strong tidal wave in an east and west direction. Admirals Richards and Sherard Osborn continued the examination of the frozen shores of the unknown Polar ocean from 97° to 109° W., along the northern side of Bathurst Island, to the north point of Melville Island. These dreary

shores  
that to  
in the  
contin  
making

Fro  
Island,  
distanc  
an islan  
which  
miles l  
series o  
of som  
north,  
island v

Fro  
Prince  
region  
the exa  
Prince  
cham, c  
ice. I e  
of affec  
more b  
do anyt  
was the  
when t  
who pe

shores are composed of limestone. Osborn believed that to the northward there existed much land, either in the shape of Islands, or an extensive continuous continent. A large flock of lemmings was seen making its way over the ice, in a northerly direction.

From the extreme northern point of Melville Island, Captain R. Vesey Hamilton penetrated a little distance into the unknown frozen ocean, and reached an island seven miles from the land on June 7, 1853, which has been named after himself. It was four miles long, and the northern extreme consisted of a series of small peaks. The water had a strong taste of some mineral acid. Eight or nine miles farther north, out in the unknown Polar Sea, another small island was discovered, and named Markham Island.

From Melville Island to the north-west side of Prince Patrick's Island, the threshold of the unknown region was traversed by Sir Leopold McClintock, and the examination of the western and southern sides of Prince Patrick's Island was completed by poor Mecham, one of the finest fellows who ever entered the ice. I cannot mention his name without a few words of affectionate regret for his loss. Never was officer more beloved by his messmates, and the men would do anything for him. Genial and warm hearted, he was the life and soul of the winter amusements, and, when the season for work arrived, it was Mecham who performed the most wonderful feat of Arctic

travelling on record. An accurate and painstaking observer, full of resource, and endowed with indomitable resolution, he was at the same time most careful of the comforts of his men. He was indeed the *beau idéal* of an Arctic officer; and when the subject of Polar exploration is discussed, the first feeling of those who served in the search for Franklin will be one of regret that the great ability, the high resolve, the numerous qualities for command which were united in the character of Frederick Meham are lost to us for ever. He was second only to one as an explorer, and in some points equal even to him. That one was his friend and messmate, Sir Leopold McClintock. These two officers explored the shores of Prince Patrick's Island.

At the north end of this remote and outlying boundary of the unknown region there was tremendous pressure from heavy pack ice. There were hummocks 35 feet high, and masses of blue sea ice had been driven far inland. Meham found the west side of Prince Patrick's Island to be composed of such low patches of gravel that it was difficult to distinguish land from sea. In this far-away part of the frontier of the unknown area, land and frozen sea were mixed together in inextricable confusion. Nothing but heavy pack ice was to be seen to seaward, with enormous pieces forced upon the beach. Yet this dreary limit of the known world once enjoyed a

milder  
able s  
state,  
have g  
and 30  
sea.  
numbe  
the sea  
of whit

Th  
crosses  
of Bar  
in the  
Americ  
and is  
50 feet  
surface  
The ic  
opposit  
able el  
bound  
this m  
land of

Th  
know r  
the thi  
and m  
which



milder climate, for Meham found trees of considerable size buried in a ravine, with bark in a perfect state, and in a position which proved that they must have grown on the spot. One tree was 4 feet round and 30 long. The position was 400 feet above the sea. At the N.W. extreme of Banks' Island, a great number of fossil trees was also found, 300 feet above the sea. Dr. Hooker considered the wood to be that of white spruce (*Abies alba*).

The boundary of the unknown Polar Region now crosses Banks' Strait, and passes down the west side of Banks' Island, discovered by Sir Robert M'Clure in the 'Investigator,' almost to the coast of North America. Here the ice presses close against the cliffs, and is of stupendous proportions. It draws 40 and 50 feet of water, and rises in rolling hills upon the surface, some of them 100 feet from base to summit. The ice along the coast of North America, especially opposite the Mackenzie River, is of the same formidable character, and the mighty polar pack forms the boundary between the known and the unknown on this meridian. It is called by the Esquimaux 'the land of the white bear.'

Thus we have followed the boundary of the unknown region from Novaya Zemlya to Behring's Strait, the third opening into the polar ocean. The heaviest and most formidable pack in the arctic seas is that which presses against the land from the north end of



Prince Patriek's Island to Behring's Strait, and no vessel has yet succeeded in sailing far towards the Pole on the meridian of Behring's Strait. Captain Collinson, in the 'Enterprise,' went a little to the northward of  $70^{\circ}$  N. on the meridian of Cape Lisburne, and Captain Kellett, in the 'Herald,' discovered some high land a little farther to the eastward, in  $72^{\circ}$  N. The boundary from Behring's Strait to Novaya Zemlya, which completes the circle, has been examined by Russian explorers.

Admiral Sherard Osborn has pointed out that the tremendous ice to the west of Banks' and Prince Patrick's Islands is never seen in Barrow or Jones' Straits, except in small fragments, and nothing like it ever comes down into the Atlantic by way of Spitzbergen; and he therefore concludes that it is land-bound on its northern edge, and that an archipelago must sweep up very near the North Pole, on the meridians between Prince Patrick's Island and Siberia. In a valuable paper read before the Royal Geographical Society,<sup>1</sup> Osborn thus explains his reasons for believing that land extends far to the north of any point yet reached in the Arctic archipelago known as the Parry Islands:—

'While employed in compiling from the journals of Captain Sir Robert M'Clure the discovery of a north-

<sup>1</sup> On April 28, 1873.

west passage in H.M.S. "Investigator," I was struck with his description of the extraordinary ice met with by him in the sea west of the archipelago under consideration, and which he traced from Behring's Strait up to the north-west of Banks' Land, round a great curve of more than 1,000 miles. I compared it subsequently with the reports of Lieutenants Meham and M'Clintock, who visited in 1853 the west shore of Prince Patrick's Island; and again with the remarks of Captain (now Admiral) Collinson, who, like M'Clure, passed between this great ice and the American continent in his remarkable voyage in H.M.S. "Enterprise."

'All their descriptions agreed; and it was evident to me that no one who has travelled elsewhere in the Arctic Regions had ever met with similar oceanic ice; and it certainly was nothing like the ice-fields found about Spitzbergen or the east coast of Greenland.

'Its character I often discussed with the able navigator of Sir Robert M'Clure's ship, the late lamented Stephen Court, who was subsequently my navigating officer for two years in H.M.S. "Furious." From this statement I can safely describe this western ice as a vast floating glacier-like mass, surging to and fro in an inclosed area of the Arctic Sea, bounded on the south by the shores of North America, on the west by Kellett and Wrangell Land,

on the east by the Arctic archipelago under consideration, and on the north—and there is the query. But if there was space for it to move north, there is no question but that the furious south storms which sweep over the North American continent would blow it far in that direction, and bring its masses down into the Atlantic by way of Spitzbergen, whereas, as a matter of fact, it never went more than a few miles off the American coast, leaving a narrow belt of water; and directly the gale ceased it surged back again, with its edge grounding in 100 feet of water. The same phenomenon occurred along its eastern edge, where this great ice-field impinged on the archipelago and Banks' Island. There, under the most favourable circumstances, the ice never moved off more than a mile or two, and in most places came home against the cliffs, leaving hardly the width of the 'Investigator' to go past the edge of it, aground sometimes in 12 or 15 fathoms water, showing a thickness of 70 or 80 feet. Meham and McClintock found it on the west coast of Prince Patrick's Island, pressed up with tremendous energy on those low shores, and forming in places such a barrier, especially on the south-west extreme, as to oblige Meham to take his sledges landward, to avoid the insurmountable barrier the broken floe edge had there formed.

'The  
continu  
more t  
hills an  
togethe  
40 feet  
much a  
the effe  
there wa  
And in  
fields, th  
water ic  
had fall  
ice mus  
is called  
massive  
was only  
broken  
These fr  
streams,  
Barrow S  
in thick  
our nav  
Jones' S  
Prince  
north of  
'Apa  
"mer de

'The ice, as described to me, consisted of vast continuous fields whose thickness below water was more than 60 feet, whilst the surface resembled hills and dales of rounded outline, studded close together; the major portion of these hillocks 30 or 40 feet in height above water, and some of them as much as 100 feet, packed so close together from the effects of alternate snow, thaw, and frost, that there was hardly footing to be found amongst them. And in proof of the extraordinary age of these ice-fields, these hillocks were found to be pure fresh-water ice, indicating the long period that the snows had fallen on the surface of that frozen sea. This ice must not be confounded in any way with what is called "packed ice." It was far too heavy and massive to be broken up in that manner, and it was only along its edge that fragments were found broken off by contact with the cliffs or shore. These fragments, as far as is known, form great ice streams, which pour through Behring's Strait and Barrow Strait, though much broken up and reduced in thickness long before they have been met with by our navigators. We saw very little of this ice in Jones' Sound, the entrance being there barred by Prince Patrick's Island and the lands which lie north of it.

'Apart from the ponderous character of this "mer de glace" leading me to the conclusion that

it is formed in a land-locked sea, there are additional data, namely, the direction and the amount of tide on its shores. For of course, as in the Mediterranean and Black Seas, an enclosed area of salt water, with only a narrow outlet to a great ocean, has generally but slight rise and fall of tide.

'We find at Kotzebue Sound and Point Barrow, in Behring's Strait, where Moore and Maguire wintered in H.M.S. "Plover," that the flood tide came from the Pacific, and the rise and fall was only 2 feet at the former, and only 7 inches at Point Barrow.

'M'Clure, in the Princess of Wales' Strait, found that the flood tide came from the south, with only 3 feet rise and fall on spring-tides.

'At the Bay of Mercy, Banks' Island, the flood, such as it was, came from the east up Barrow Strait, with only 2 feet rise, agreeing much with all other observations taken up Barrow Strait, namely, at Beechey Island, Cornwallis Island, Leopold Island, and Melville Island, at which places the flood evidently came from the Atlantic, *viâ* Baffin's Bay, diminishing as it reached the sea west of the archipelago.

'In Jones' Strait the flood-tide likewise came from the east. Admiral Richards and I had good proof of this in a boat expedition during the autumn of 1852; and we both found, as we went

westwa  
or Par  
ice-act  
we wen

'No  
was no  
space c

geograp  
of that  
one of  
come fr

Barrow

dence I

this sea  
from it

parallel

Barrow

and the

enclosed

'Ap

west of

that it

municat

which fl

borative

which t

into mo

directio

westward along the north shore of the Georgian or Parry group, that the tides, as indicated by the ice-action upon the shore, diminished likewise as we went west.

'Now, if the area of sea west of this archipelago was not land-locked, but opened into the general space called the Arctic Ocean, I think seamen and geographers will agree with me that the tidal wave of that vast area, as compared with the limited one of Baffin's Strait, would cause the flood-tide to come from it into, at any rate, the west entrance of Barrow Strait and Jones' Sound, whereas the evidence I adduce shows that the flood travels towards this sea, which I say is enclosed by land, instead of from it, as would otherwise be the case. The best parallel I can give to the tidal observation of Barrow's Strait, is that of the Straits of Gibraltar and the Cattegat, where the flood-tide flows into two enclosed seas from the Atlantic Ocean.

'Apart from the tideless character of the sea west of the archipelago leading me to the belief that it is land-locked to the north, and has no communication with that portion of the Polar waters which flows into the Atlantic, there is another corroborative fact. The two great Polar currents by which that enormous amount of ice discharges itself into more southern latitudes come from two opposite directions. The ice formed north of Spitzbergen



and Nova Zembla discharges itself by a south-westerly current, of which there is ample evidence, and the rate, according to the season, varies from eight to thirteen miles a day. On the other hand, the ice from what I believe to be an enclosed sea west of the archipelago discharges itself for the major part in a south-easterly direction, of which we have had practical proof since 1850 in the drifting out to sea in Davis' Straits of the four expeditions when beset, of James Ross, De Haven, Kellett, and M'Clintock; the only exception to this south-easterly current being a small amount of much disintegrated ice, which escapes southward into the Pacific through the shallow Strait of Behring. The only way I can account for two diametrically opposite currents flowing from that Polar area before us is by assuming they flow from two spaces of water separated from each other.

'I have, therefore, not the slightest doubt that, whether this Arctic archipelago be followed to the north, or the recently discovered lands north of Siberia near Behring Strait be traced, we shall find that they are nearly connected one with the other: and, in doing so, the exploration of the Polar area will be thoroughly and successfully accomplished.

'Let me now point out in what way these lands, if they exist, give good promise for future exploration.

'In  
harbour  
having  
navigat  
safe fro  
From su  
on the s  
Sir Leo  
the utm  
in a har  
scientific  
much lo  
avoid th  
have bee  
by Sir C  
Leopold  
disastrou  
the Hans

'In the first place this archipelago abounds in harbours and creeks where a ship can find shelter, having pushed during the summer season as far as navigation can carry her. She then secures a base safe from the ever-southerly drift of winter ice. From such a position in early spring, sledge parties on the system introduced by my distinguished friend Sir Leopold McClintock can be pushed forward to the utmost limits of men's physical powers. Secure in a harbour, those on board the ship can pursue the scientific researches which have hitherto been so much lost sight of in Arctic exploration, and also avoid the horrors of wintering in the pack, which have been testified to so vividly, even in our time, by Sir George Back, Captain De Haven, and Sir Leopold McClintock, not to speak of the still more disastrous experiences of our German brethren in the *Hansa*.'



## CHAPTER XI.

## RUSSIAN ARCTIC DISCOVERY.

THE discovery of the shores of the Polar ocean, from Behring Strait to Novaya Zemlya (145 degrees of longitude) is due to the Russians. Those shores are, perhaps, the most desolate on the whole circle of the threshold to the Unknown Region. The Siberian rivers—the Obi, the Yenisei, the Lena, the Indigirka, and Kolyma—rise in the Altai mountains, and flow, in their upper courses, through forests of tall trees. But, before they reach the Polar ocean, they traverse a dreary region of frozen swamp, which is barely habitable, called the *tundra*. Here the land is frozen for many feet below the surface. The rivers, during times of flood, bring down vast quantities of uprooted trees, which line their banks in immense masses, and are eventually carried into the Polar sea, to be drifted away with the current which flows from east to west along the Siberian coast.

The efforts of the Russians to double the extreme northern points of Siberia—Capes Taimyr







and  
hith  
Jaeh  
the  
thus  
very  
to t  
the  
haul  
betw  
the  
the  
and  
the  
the  
has  
Asia

I  
Arch  
by th  
Lien  
prom  
mou  
from  
in th  
same

and Chelyuskin, the latter in  $77^{\circ} 30' N.$ ,—have hitherto been unsuccessful. Burrough, Pett and Jackman,<sup>1</sup> the early English explorers, discovered the straits between Novaya Zemlya and the main, thus entering the sea of Kara. The Russians, in very early times, constantly went from Archangel to the mouth of the Obi, creeping along between the land and ice in the sea of Kara, and usually hauling their boats, or *lodi*as, across the isthmus between Kara Bay and the gulf of the Obi. In the last century several expeditions were sent by the Russian Government in the same direction, and vessels reached the mouth of the Pyasina, on the west side of the northern point of Siberia, and the Khatanga on the east side. But no navigator has ever doubled that most northern cape of the Asiatic continent.

In 1734, Lieutenant Muravief sailed from Archangel towards the river Obi, but was stopped by the ice in the sea of Kara. In 1738, however, Lieutenants Malgyn and Shurakoff doubled the promontory with great difficulty and reached the mouth of the Obi. The next step was to sail from the Obi to the Yenisei. This was effected in the same year by Lieutenant Koskelef. In the same memorable year for Siberian exploration, the

<sup>1</sup> See pages 5 and 7.

pilot Mepin sailed from the Yenisei towards the Lena, but was stopped by the ice at the mouth of the Pyasina, and returned unsuccessful. Three years before, in 1735, Lieutenant Pronchishef made a similar attempt from the eastern side. He sailed down the Lena from Yakutsk, accompanied by his wife, but was hampered by ice, which only left a passage of 200 yards along the coast, and was at last obliged to winter at the mouth of the Olenek. The following year he reached the mouth of the Khatanga, and pushed beyond it, but found himself at last closely beset near Cape Chelyuskin, his extreme northern point being  $77^{\circ} 25' N.$  He and his wife died at the winter quarters, near the mouth of the Olenek, and the command devolved upon Lieutenant Chelyuskin who returned. In May 1740, Lieutenant Laptef found fixed and impenetrable ice in the same place, and returned convinced of the impossibility of sailing round Cape Taimyr. But, in 1742, Chelyuskin reached the northernmost point of the continent in sledges, in latitude  $77^{\circ} 34' N.$ , doubled it, and returned to the mouth of the Taimyr. This cape is now known as Cape Chelyuskin.

In 1843, Middendorf was sent to explore the region which terminates in Cape Taimyr, by land. He descended the river Khantanga, and reached the Taimyr lake in June. In August he arrived at the

shore  
when  
direc  
he as  
the v

F  
have  
doub  
atten  
the n  
a Cos  
anoth  
exped  
called  
decke  
oars.

the s  
Behri  
his r  
succe

Anad

P  
coast  
died

Capt  
Behr  
was c  
point



shores of the Polar sea, and sighted Cape Taimyr, whence he saw open water, and no ice-blink in any direction. He found the rise and fall of the tide to be as much as 36 feet. His visit was, however, in the very height of the short Arctic summer.

From the mouth of the Lena eastward, vessels have frequently reached the river Kolyma, but the doubling of the capes still farther east has been attended with great difficulty. Nijni Kolymsk, near the mouth of the Kolyma, was founded, in 1644, by a Cossack named Michael Staduehin; and, in 1648, another Cossack, named Simon Deshnef, equipped an expedition there, consisting of three little crafts called *kotchys*, which were broad, flat-bottomed, decked vessels, about 70 feet long, with sails and oars. He rounded Cape Chelagskoi, passed through the strait, afterwards named after the explorer Behring, and reached the gulf of Anadyr. Most of his men died of hunger; but Deshnef himself succeeded in establishing a walrus fishery in the Anadyr.

Peter the Great desired that the whole northern coast of Siberia should be explored by sea, and he died a few days after giving his instructions to Captain Vitus Behring with his own hand, in 1725. Behring was a Dane, in the Russian service. He was despatched from St. Petersburg to the furthest point of Siberia with sailors and shipwrights, and



two vessels were built at Okhotsk and in Kamschatka, the 'Gabriel' and the 'Fortuna.' In July 1728, he sailed from the river of Kamschatka, and examined the coast for some distance to the northward, ascertaining the existence of a strait between Asia and America. In September 1740, Behring sailed again from Okhotsk, in a vessel called the 'St. Paul,' with another in company, commanded by Lieutenant Chirikof, called the 'St. Peter.' George Wilhelm Steller embarked with Commodore Behring as naturalist of the voyage; and in June 1741, they sailed to discover the American coast. That magnificent peak, named by Behring Mount St. Elias, was discovered, and the Aleutian Islands were explored, but scurvy broke out amongst the crews, and the commodore himself was attacked by it. In November the ship was wrecked on an island which was named after the ill-fated discoverer himself, who was carried on shore, and placed in a sort of pit or cavern dug in the side of a sand-hill. Here he was almost buried while alive, for the sand kept continually rolling down, and he requested that it might not be removed as it kept him warm. In this miserable condition poor Behring died on December 8, 1741. Steller was naturally anxious to procure supplies of animal food for his scurvy-stricken patients, and he carefully examined into the natural history of the island. He attributed the cure of those who recovered, to

the flesh of the sea-otter; and 900 of their skins were collected on the island, which the Chinese, at Kiakhta on the Russian frontier, will buy at the rate of eighty to a hundred roubles (about 30*l.*) a piece. Thirty of the crew died on the island, and the forty-five survivors escaped to Kamschatka in a little vessel built from the wreck of the 'St. Paul.' The most remarkable and interesting event of this voyage was the discovery by Steller of a rare and solitary species of manatee or sea-cow, called *Rytina Stelleres*. It has since been hunted and probably exterminated, for no specimen has been seen for more than seventy years. This creature had a sort of bark an inch thick, composed of fibres or tubes perpendicular on the skin, and so hard that steel could penetrate it with difficulty. It lived on sea-weed.

After Behring Strait, the most important discovery of the Russians during the last century was that of the Islands of Liakhof or New Siberia in the Polar ocean, opposite the coast between the mouths of the Lena and Indigirka. In March 1770, a merchant named Liakhof saw a large herd of reindeer coming over the ice from the north, which induced him to start with sledges early in April, to trace the tracks they had left. After a journey of fifty miles over the ice he discovered three large islands, and the following year he obtained the exclusive right from the Empress Catherine to dig for

mammoth bones on them. The largest of these islands is called Kotelnoi, and is 100 miles long by 60 broad, in  $76^{\circ}$  N. latitude. The next is called Fadeyef, and there is another, called New Siberia, more to the eastward. The length of the whole group is 205 miles. Immense alluvial deposits, filled with wood and the fossil bones of animals, are found throughout the shores of Arctic Siberia; but in the cliffs or 'wood hills' of the New Siberia Islands these deposits are still more plentiful. For years after their first discovery the seekers for fossil ivory annually resorted to these islands; and, in 1821, the fossil ivory thus procured weighed 20,000 lbs. Hedenström, a Russian officer, residing at Yakutsk, was employed by the Government to survey the New Siberian Islands in 1809, and occupied three years in their exploration. He reported, in 1810, that to the northward of these islands during three years, he was always stopped, at a short distance from the land, by weak ice.

In March 1821, Lieutenant Anjou<sup>1</sup> went across the ice with dog sledges, to the Kotelnoi Island. He then travelled over the ice to the northward in April, and saw vapour rising to the N.W. when at a distance of 42 miles from Kotelnoi (latitude  $76^{\circ} 38'$ ), which led him to suppose that there was open water

<sup>1</sup>Afterwards Admiral Anjou.

in that direction. But Wrangell tells us that when the ice cracks, even in places where it is thick and solid, vaporisation immediately ensues, which is more or less dense according to the temperature of the atmosphere. In the same month, Anjou made another journey to the northward, but was stopped by thin unsafe ice. On the 18th, the party saw open sea with drift-ice to the northward, from Cape Visokoi in New Siberia, and dense vapour. Off Cape Rāboi the ice appeared unbroken, but was rugged with lofty hummocks. Hedenström had met with hummocks 90 feet high. In May, the expedition of Anjou returned to the mainland, and wintered at Ust-Yansk. In March 1821, Anjou again saw vapours rising to the northward, when he crossed to Liakhof Island. Open sea, with drifting masses of ice, was seen on the 26th, the ice drifting from east to west. The frequenters of the islands believe this current to be the ebb tide. On April 9, he started over the ice to the eastward of New Siberia, and met with thin ice on the 14th, at a distance of 60 miles, but lines of impassable hummocks obliged him to make for the mainland. Lieutenant Anjou arrived at the conviction that all efforts to advance by the ice to any considerable distance from land would prove unavailing, owing to the thinness of the ice, and to the open water within 20 to 30 miles of the islands. His expedition, however, effected a complete survey

of this interesting group. There is very little drift-wood on the north side of these islands, but on the south side it is found in two bays in great abundance. The sea between the islands and Siberia is not completely frozen over until the end of October, and the coasts are free by the end of July. Throughout the summer the sea is covered with floes of ice, drifting to and fro with winds and currents.

While Anjou was conducting these explorations, Wrangell was prosecuting similar researches from his head-quarters at Nijni Kolymsk, near the mouth of the Kolyma, whence he made four journeys on the Polar sea, in 1820, 21, 22, and 23. These journeys were performed in dog sledges, called *narti*. The runner of a Siberian *narti* of the best construction is 5 feet 10 inches long, breadth of the sledge 1 foot 9 inches, and height of runner 10 and a quarter inches. The runners are of birchwood, and the upper surface of the sledge of willow shoots woven together. All the parts are fastened together with hide thongs. When in use the sledges are turned over, and water is poured on the runners, to produce a thin crust of ice, which glides easily over the snow, and the ice runner is called *woliat*. As spring advances, it of course becomes useless, and whalebone is sometimes substituted. Wrangell considered March to be the best time of the year for sledging, when it is easier work for the dogs. A well-loaded sledge

requir  
1,260  
winte  
on fro  
for a  
of me  
tea, 8  
of sp  
fish (C  
wore  
with  
party  
across  
franc  
they  
smoll  
reind  
In  
gell  
Koly  
occas  
ney v  
go o  
Siber  
At a  
had  
five  
sive

requires a team of twelve dogs, and they will drag 1,260 pounds in spring, but in the intense cold of winter. 360 pounds is a heavy load. They were fed on frozen fresh herrings. The provision for five men for a month was 100 pounds of rye biscuit, 60 pounds of meat, 10 pounds of portable soup, 2 pounds of tea, 8 pounds of grits, 3 pounds of salt, 39 rations of spirits, 12 pounds of tobacco, and 200 smoked fish (Iuchala), each equal to five herrings. The men wore reindeer-skin shirts, great leathern boots lined with fur, a fur cap, and reindeer-skin gloves. The party had a conical tent of reindeer-skin, 12 feet across on the ground, and 10 feet high, with a light framework of six poles; and, when they encamped, they lighted a fire in the centre of it, and were half smothered. Each man slept on a bear-skin, and a reindeer-skin coverlet was provided for every two.

In his first journey, during March 1820, Wrangell explored the coast from the mouth of the Kolyma to Cape Chelagskoi. The temperature was occasionally as low as  $-31^{\circ}$  Fahr. His second journey was undertaken in order to see how far he could go over the ice to the northward away from the Siberian coast, and he started on March 27, 1821. At a distance of two miles from the shore, the party had to cross a chain of high and rugged hummocks five miles wide, beyond which there was an extensive plain of ice. Wrangell continued to advance

to the northward for a distance of 140 miles, when he found the ice to be very thin and rotten, owing to large patches of brine that were lodged on the snow. There were cracks in every direction, through which the sea-water came up, and the ice was scarcely a foot thick. It was, therefore, deemed prudent to commence a retreat on April 4. In approaching the coast again, they had to cross ranges of hummocks of greenish-blue coloured ice, often 80 and 90 feet in height, denoting tremendous pressure during the winter. Wrangell returned to Nijni Kolymsk on April 28, after an absence of thirty-six days, during which time he had travelled over 800 miles. He was much struck during this journey at the wonderful skill displayed by the sledge-drivers in finding their way by watching the wave-like stripes of snow, which are formed by the wind. 'These wave-like stripes of snow, formed on the level ice of the sea by any wind of long continuance, are called *sastrugi* in Siberia. The ridges always indicate the quarter from which the prevailing winds blow. The inhabitants of the *tundras* often travel over seven hundred miles with no other guide than these *sastrugi*. They know by experience at what angle they must cross the greater and lesser waves of snow, in order to arrive at their destination, and they never fail. It often happens that the true permanent *sastrugi* have been obliterated



ated by others produced by temporary winds, but the traveller is not deceived thereby, his practised eye detects the change, he carefully removes the recently drifted snow, and corrects his course by the lower *sastrugi*, and by the angle formed by the two.' On his third journey Wrangell started northward from the coast on March 16, 1822, chiefly with the object of ascertaining the truth of a native report that there was high land in that direction. On April 12, after having travelled for many days over very difficult hummocks, the party came to such weak ice, broken up by so many cracks, that he supposed that the open sea must be at hand, and deemed it prudent to return, when 170 miles from the land. The north winds were observed to be invariably very damp winds, which was also supposed to indicate the existence of open water in that direction. On this occasion Wrangell was absent fifty-five days, and went over 900 miles. He reached Nijni Kolmysk on May 5. The fourth and last journey was commenced on March 14, 1823, and Cape Chelagskoi was reached on the 8th. A Tchuktehi or Tuski chief here informed Wrangell that, from an adjacent part of the coast, on a clear summer's day, snow-covered mountains might be descried at a great distance to the north, and that herds of reindeer sometimes came across the ice of the sea, probably from thence. The natives concur



in stating that Cape Jakan is the nearest point to this northern land. The party struck off across the ice to the northward when they had gone a little beyond Cape Chelagskoi ; but a violent gale of wind cracked and broke up the ice, which was only three feet thick, placing them in considerable danger. As they advanced it became thinner, and they only succeeded in crossing the cracks, just frozen over, in safety, owing to the incredibly swift running of the dogs. Wrangell was obliged to turn back a distance of 70 miles from the land, and in reaching it they had to ferry themselves across many cracks, on pieces of ice, the dogs swimming and towing. The temperature of the sea was  $-28^{\circ}$  Fahr. This was in the end of March. To the west the sea appears completely open, with floating ice, and dark vapours ascending from it obscured the horizon. Lanes of water were opening in all directions, and, without a boat, the little party was placed in a position of extreme danger. A gale of wind dashed the pieces of ice against each other with a loud, crashing noise, and split many of the floes into fragments. The dogs saved them. They dashed wildly and swiftly towards the land, and reached it on the 27th. Wrangell continued the coast survey for some time longer, and returned to Nijni Kolymsk, on May 10, after an absence of 78 days, having travelled over 1,530 miles. Thus ended the series of attempts to

reach the unknown land, which, though not seen by him, Wrangell still thinks may possibly exist. On Wrangell's map it is stated that the mountains are visible from Cape Jakan, in clear summer weather.

This land was sighted by Captain Kellett, who, in 1849, penetrated, in H.M.S. 'Herald,' as far as  $71^{\circ} 12' N.$ , discovering Herald Island, and seeing the distant line of coast. Afterwards the Americans established a whale fishery beyond Behring Strait, and one of them, Captain Long, went some distance along the Siberian coast, and sighted the northern land in 1867. It is now marked on the maps as Kellett Land.

The observations of Hedenström, Anjou and Wrangell, have led Russian geographers to the conclusion that there is a part of the Polar ocean always an open sea, extending from some twenty miles north of the New Siberia Islands, to about the same distance off the coast of the continent between Cape Chelagskoi and Cape North. This opinion rests on the instances in which explorers, in March and April, have encountered either open water covered with loose floes, or very thin ice, indicative of its immediate vicinity, at different points of this line. Admiral von Wrangell considered that the fact of the northerly winds being sufficiently damp to wet the clothes of his party, was a further corroboration of the existence of an open sea in that

direction. In summer, the current along the Siberian coast is from east to west, and in autumn from west to east. The great Siberian rivers bring down immense quantities of drift-wood, which is afterwards carried off by the currents, and spread far and wide over the Arctic shores. On the breaking up of the ice their waters contribute to drive the flocs from the coast. The westerly current then carries them in heavily-packed masses towards the Atlantic, and millions of tons of ice are thus sent to swell the size of the polar pack, and are annually melted between Greenland and Novaya Zemlya.

Admiral von Wrangell, using an allowable poetical licence, has called the open water off the Siberian coast 'the wide immeasurable ocean,' and ever since the 'great Polynia<sup>1</sup> of the Russians' has been a phrase on which geographical theorists have founded the wildest speculations. Now, in all parts of the Arctic Regions the ice is more or less in motion during the summer, so that the observation of open water by Middendorf, near Cape Taimyr, in August, is nothing remarkable. Anjou and Wrangell, during the months of March and April, found the ice to be thin and rotten at a distance of about 100

<sup>1</sup> Polynia simply means a pool or lane of water in the ice. The term is applied to such pools, when the ice is breaking up in the Neva. *Polyi* is an obsolete Russian word meaning open; *Nya*, the feminine termination, giving the word a substantive form. *Polyi-dveri*, 'Open doors.'

miles from the coast, and on one or two occasions an open sea covered with floating pieces of ice was seen in the offing. Vapours rising at a distance, and damp north winds, were looked upon as additional proofs of the existence of this great *Polynia*.

There can be no reason to doubt that, owing to strong currents and gales of winds, the ice is in motion off the coast of Siberia very early in the spring, giving rise to *Polynias*, or lanes and pools of water; but there is nothing in the observations of the Russian explorers to warrant the belief in a 'wide immeasurable ocean.' The rising vapour, so often mentioned by Anjou, is caused by tidal cracks in the ice, and is no proof of an open sea; and the phenomena of damp winds and rotten ice betoken just what Anjou saw—a limited expanse of sea, covered with drifting floes. There is no evidence whatever that the Siberian *Polynia* of the early spring is of greater extent than the prevalence of gales of wind and currents would easily explain. The weak ice, where the Russians were stopped, was in a very shallow sea, and they never mention a greater depth than 14 fathoms. Hence the winds have a great effect in producing currents. In this depth they mention the ice being packed up until it grounded; and, thus obstructed, the crushing up of the drifting ice was prodigious.

It should be borne in mind that the exceptional

condition of the Siberian polar sea never offered any obstruction to the examination of the coast, and that weak ice was first met with at a distance of several miles from the shore.

The latest Russian exploring achievement in Siberia has been the examination of the mouth of the Yenisei, by Herr Schmidt.

In 1866, in consequence of the alleged discovery of a mammoth skeleton in the vicinity of the lower Yenisei river, Herr F. Schmidt was despatched by the Imperial Academy of Sciences at St. Petersburg to conduct a reconnoitring expedition in the districts between the Obi and the Yenisei, and to amplify the work of Von Middendorf in those parts. The account of the expedition was published in the 'Memoirs of the Imperial Academy of Sciences' at St. Petersburg.

An interesting fact in connection with the river Yenisei, is the immense quantity of drift-wood lying on either side of its banks. About the low lands of the estuary the wood lies scattered about, and, mixed with loam and sand, forms the chief component of the numerous islands studded about the mouth. In many places peat-moss is to be found, and stems of trees, which prove that vegetation formerly spread farther north than now. Here, as well as in most parts of Siberia, the larch (*Larix Sibirica*) marks the commencement of forest growth. Looking from Dudino, all to the south of the Dudinka is forest.

while to the north dead stumps of trees are to be seen in hollows. Westward there is proof that vegetation formerly extended farther north. The line of demarcation of the larch runs from Pässino lake in the Noril mountain range, about  $67^{\circ} 50' N.$  latitude (to the east of the Yenisei), along the Dudinka river to Dudino, and thence along the right bank of the Yenisei to Sseläkino; here it crosses the Yenisei, and from the mouth of the Keta runs in a south-westerly direction past the upper Solenaya to the lower Tas. Northward of the larch, two trees are met with, the *Betula contorta* and *Abies obovata*, and on and about the river Yenisei the *Alnaster fruticosus*, a species of alder, which grows up to one's shoulder as far as  $70^{\circ} 50' N.$  latitude, and about  $71^{\circ}$  creeps along the ground.

The population consists wholly of Russian peasants, who are divided into two congregations or parishes, the two churches being in Turuchank and Dudino. From Tolstoi to Turuchank occur small settlements of one or two houses, whose sole duties consist in looking after the postal communications. From Tolstoi to beyond the mouth of the Pasina, settlements or groups of houses (though long since abandoned through the severity of the climate or difficulty of communication) have been laid down on maps, being copied from older maps without sufficient warrant. From the middle of June to the end of

August, Samoyedes and Russians erect tents, dome-shaped huts made of drift-wood and loam, and regular cottages with windows and ovens, and a brisk preparation of salt-fish goes on in them and on board the river craft. The Tundra is inhabited by the Ufer-Juraks, in addition to the Russian population. These penetrate into the peninsula between the Obi and the Yenisei from April till October, and during the winter months they retire into the Beresow circle of the Tobolsk Province.

The labours of such men as Hedenström, Anjou, Wrangell, Lütke, Baer, Erman, Middendorf, and Schmidt, entitle Russia to take rank next to England as a nation that has won glory in the noble field of Arctic exploration. The bleak *tundras* and forbidding shores of Northern Siberia offer great obstacles to such work, and these obstacles have been overcome with an amount of energetic perseverance and determination which places the Russian explorers high on the glorious roll of Arctic worthies. It is to their exertions that we owe the examination and careful survey of more than a third of the threshold of the unknown Polar Region, the whole of which has been accurately surveyed and scientifically described. The gallantry with which Wrangell and Anjou again and again forced their way northward over weak and rotten ice, thereby exposing themselves to danger and risk of no ordinary character, in the cause of



science, and in their zeal for geographical discovery, excites our warmest admiration; while to the charming work of the Baron von Wrangell we are indebted for much of the knowledge we possess of a considerable section of the threshold of the unknown region.



## CHAPTER XII.

*THE NORWEGIANS OFF NOVAYA ZEMLYA.*

## CAPTAIN WIGGANS.

THE whole circuit of the threshold of the unknown region has now been made; and we return to Novaya Zemlya, the point which Barents reached nearly three hundred years ago, and where Carlsen, in 1871, discovered the relics of the great Dutch navigator. It only remains to notice the voyages of other Norwegian fishers, and of Captain Wiggans, off the coast of Novaya Zemlya, and in the sea of Kara, and to record the proceedings of the Austro-Hungarian Arctic Expedition.

In 1869 Carlsen had passed through the Pet<sup>1</sup> Strait, and sailed along the coast of Siberia to the mouth of the Obi; Palliser sailed northwards, and returned by the Matochkin Strait, and Johannesen twice sailed through the sea of Kara without check from ice. In 1870 about sixty Norwegian sailing

<sup>1</sup> Improperly called Jugur Strait. It was discovered by Arthur Pet in 1580. See p. 7.

vessels went to the seas round Novaya Zemlya, and Captain Johannesen circumnavigated those islands. In 1871, as has already been recorded, Carlsen and Mack were in company. Mack left Tromsö on May 22, 1871, and encountered thick impenetrable ice in  $71^{\circ} 12'$  N. lat., and  $45^{\circ}$  E. long. In  $71^{\circ} 50'$  N. the sea was clear of ice, and after sailing into the sea of Kara, Captain Mack turned northwards and coasted along 500 miles of the Novaya Zemlya coast. He found a mild temperature off the islands that have been named the 'Gulf Stream Islands.' It is on this spot that Barents, in 1598, is supposed to have found a sandbank in 18 fathoms. There are now, on what is thought to be the same site, some barren and sandy islands, and it has been suggested that there has been an upheaval of land to a height of upwards of 100 feet in 300 years. Pods of a West Indian bean were found near these islands—an indication that the warm Atlantic current which flows past the coast of Norway reaches as far as these islets off the Novaya Zemlya coast, which have hence been called the 'Gulf Stream Islands.' Captain Mack reached a point in latitude  $75^{\circ} 25'$  N. and longitude  $82^{\circ} 30'$  in the beginning of September, when no ice was in sight, and the temperature was remarkably mild. This was his farthest point before returning to Norway. In the same year, as has

already been recorded,<sup>1</sup> Captain Carlsen circumnavigated Novaya Zemlya.

In June 1871, Captain E. H. Johannesen found the Matochkin Strait, and those of Burrough<sup>2</sup> and Pet, blocked with ice; so he sailed northwards, and on October 15 was in 76° 25' N., the sea being clear of ice. In the same year Captain Isaksen left Tromsø on June 6, and after passing through much pack ice on the Novaya Zemlya coast, reached as far as the Hooft promontory. Captain S. Johannesen sailed through Burrough Straits on August 26, and coasted along the Samoyeden Peninsula in a sea clear of ice, returning through the straits on September 27. Captains Dorma and Simonsen made similar voyages in the same year.

These Norwegian voyages fully corroborate the observations of Barents, and show that, during the summer months, the seas round the western and southern shores of Novaya Zemlya may generally be navigated, and that the open water seen by Wrangell and Anjou to the north of Siberia may probably be reached. In July 1870, the steamer 'Albert,' belonging to a shipowner named Rosenthal, with Dr. Bessels on board, left Tromsø, went to Spitzbergen, and afterwards reached the Matochkin Strait on August 7, but

<sup>1</sup> See p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Improperly called Kara Strait. It was discovered by Stephen Burrough in 1556. See p. 5.

the channel was filled with ice. The vessel was then steered south, in hopes of finding the Straits of Burrough or Pet clear, but they remained blocked until September 9, when Herr Rosenthal's steamer returned. Six weeks later in the year Captain Johannesen sailed through them.

In 1872-73 Captain Sivert Tobiesen was unfortunately obliged to pass the winter on the Novaya Zemlya coast, in his schooner 'Freya,' not far from the Birch Islands. Most of the crew were sent overland, and arrived in good health at Archangel. The captain, his son, and two men, finding the ship making water, were forced to land; and Captain Tobiesen died of scurvy on April 29, 1873. His son died of the same disease on July 5. They had lived on seal blubber and bear meat, and during the latter part of the time had only a little badly salted and half rotten bear-flesh. The two survivors put off in a boat in August, and were picked up by a Russian vessel, and brought into Archangel. Captain Tobiesen was a distinguished Norwegian Arctic explorer, and his loss is much to be deplored. He wintered on Cherry Island in 1865-66. He made a remarkable voyage round North-east Land in 1864,<sup>1</sup> and he reached almost the same latitude east of Spitzbergen as was attained by Payer in 1871. He

<sup>1</sup> See p. 89.

was one of the boldest among the gallant band of Norwegian explorers.

But long before the Norwegian voyages were recorded, it was known that the sea of Kara, which Burrough and Pet had found so formidable, was navigable at certain seasons; and a more complete knowledge of these seasons would, there can be little doubt, lead to the establishment of a trade between Europe and the mouths of the Siberian rivers. It is now more than ten years ago since a proposal, with this object in view, was made to Sir Roderick Murchison, by M. Sideroff, a Russian gentleman, who owned large mines of graphite near Irkout on the Yenisei river. He offered a premium of 2,000*l.* for any ship that could reach the mouth of the Yenisei, and a guarantee of 20*l.* a ton for as much freight as the ship could carry. Captain Allen Young, the companion of McClintock in the 'Fox,' undertook the venture; but it was subsequently intimated that the Russian Government was unfavourable to the scheme.

A voyage, with a similar object, has, however, been made by Captain Wiggans, recently an examiner in seamanship at Sunderland, and an enthusiastic aspirant for fame as an explorer. He freighted the steamer 'Diana,' and fitted her out at Dundee, solely at his own expense; intending to ascertain whether regular communication could be established

between  
to obta  
Austro-  
ings of  
and Mu  
provisio  
Austria  
fall in v

The  
1874, a  
There v  
Wiggan  
peninst  
four m  
time, p  
appear  
and wi  
was el  
detaine  
numbe  
sealing  
ice dri  
enabled  
Gulf o  
tions.  
entran

Im

between Europe and the river Obi. He also desired to obtain intelligence of, and bring succour to the Austro-Hungarian Arctic Expedition, the proceedings of which form the subject of the next chapter; and Mr. Leigh Smith forwarded a large quantity of provisions to the 'Diana,' for the special use of the Austrian explorers, in case Captain Wiggans should fall in with them.

The 'Diana' sailed from Dundee on June 4, 1874, and reached Burroughs<sup>1</sup> Strait on the 26th. There was little or no ice in the strait, which Captain Wiggans entered, and then coasted along the Yalmal peninsula, where the ice was found to be three or four miles from the coast. The land was, at that time, free from snow, and presented a pleasing appearance, the ground being covered with moss and wild flowers. But farther north the pack ice was close along the shore, and the 'Diana' was detained by it, for three weeks, in a locality where a number of Norwegian schooners were engaged in sealing and walrus hunting. Early in August the ice drifted from the land, and the little steamer was enabled to advance as far as the entrance of the Gulf of Obi. Here Captain Wiggans took observations, and discovered that White Island, off the entrance of the gulf, was placed very much too far

<sup>1</sup> Improperly called Kara and Waigat Strait. See pp. 5 and 7.

to the eastward on the charts. He stood across the gulf for about twenty miles, but encountered a strong current, with dirty weather, which induced him to abandon the idea of a farther advance. The steam power of the 'Diana' was insufficient to resist the force of the stream, and there was additional danger from the inaccuracy of the chart, and the shoalness of the water.

On returning to White Island, it was found that the ice was again pressing close upon the land, and the 'Diana' was once more detained by it for three weeks. At the same time there was open water to the north, and in the direction of Cape Chelyuskin. At last, on August 25, White Island was cleared, and on going south for a few miles it was found that the sea of Kara was quite clear of ice, which had all drifted away to the northward. Captain Wiggans steered direct for Burrough Strait; the other object of his voyage being to afford succour to the Austro-Hungarian Expedition. Accordingly he shaped his course to the western side of Novaya Zemlya: and on August 30 was at Kostin Shar, whence he bore up for Vardo; but, encountering a gale of wind when off that port, he eventually steamed for Hammerfest, arriving there just an hour before the members of the Austro-Hungarian Expedition.

Captain Wiggans returned to Dundee on September 25, 1874, after an interesting cruise. He



gathered from the Norwegians that the sea of Kara was usually free of ice until the middle of October; and he considers that there might be regular steam communication between England and the mouth of the Obi. His further suggestion that a survey of the sea of Kara and the Gulf of Obi should be undertaken, is well worthy of favourable consideration from the Russian Government.



## CHAPTER XIII.

## THE AUSTRO-HUNGARIAN ARCTIC EXPEDITION.

THE Austro-Hungarian Expedition is the only one since England temporarily retired from the field which has materially increased our knowledge. It was preceded by a daring preliminary voyage, undertaken by Captain Weyprecht and Lieutenant Julius Payer. The latter officer had served with Koldewey on the east coast of Greenland, and had previously achieved some fame as an Alpine climber. The plan of these two energetic explorers was to follow the Gulf Stream into the supposed Polar Basin, by keeping to the eastward of Spitzbergen. They sailed from Tromsø on June 21, 1871, in a small hired vessel of 70 tons, and a crew, all told, of eight men. They attempted to reach Gilies Land by following the eastern coast of the outermost islands of the Spitzbergen group. On August 21, they had reached latitude  $77^{\circ} 17' N.$ , between the 28th and 36th degrees of east longitude, where the ice was lighter than any they had previously met with. The vicinity

PEDITION

TION.

only one  
 the field  
 ledge. I  
 ge, under  
 ant Juliu  
 Koldewey  
 previously  
 The plan  
 follow the  
 by keeping  
 ailed from  
 l vessel of  
 en. They  
 owing the  
 s of the  
 and reached  
 and 36th  
 as lighter  
 ne vicinity



London: Sampson Low, Marston, Low & Seale.





of  
the  
The  
bu  
day  
Au  
78  
can  
mo  
the  
con  
nor  
lan  
nor  
we  
disc  
the  
and

ind  
to s  
coas  
for  
Hu  
entl  
com  
We  
Lie

of land was proclaimed by the decreasing depth of the sea, and by numerous bear tracks on the ice. The fogs were so thick that they could not see far, but they seem to have been beating about for some days in perfectly navigable ice, in  $77^{\circ} 30' N.$  On August 30 they passed the 42nd meridian, in latitude  $78^{\circ} 25' N.$  without seeing ice; but that night they came to the edge of the pack, which seemed to be moving north-east; and in the evening of the 31st they were in  $78^{\circ} 41' N.$  Very thick fog, with a stiff contrary wind, prevented them from getting farther north; and they inferred the near neighbourhood of land from the quantity of drift-wood, not very far north of their position on the 42nd meridian. They were, in fact, approaching the land which they discovered in their subsequent voyage. The explorers then sailed east until they sighted Novaya Zemlya, and returned to Tromsö on October 4, 1871.

The deductions from this preliminary voyage induced Captain Weyprecht and Lieutenant Payer to select the route by Novaya Zemlya and the Siberian coast, with the object of making a north-east passage, for their next effort. The idea of an Austro-Hungarian Arctic Expedition was received with enthusiasm by the whole Austrian empire. The command of the ship was entrusted to Captain Weyprecht, and that of the land travelling to Lieutenant Julius Payer. The former officer is an

experienced and accomplished seaman ; the latter is a tried Alpine climber, a good draughtsman, and a resolute and enthusiastic explorer. The steamer 'Tegethoff,' of 300 tons, was fitted out in the Elbe, with every modern appliance, and Lieutenant Payer received much assistance from Sir Leopold McClintock in preparing for the organisation of the sledge travelling parties. That veteran Arctic seaman, Captain Carlsen, joined the expedition as pilot. Dr. Kepes, the surgeon, is a Hungarian. Most of the crew were Dalmatians, from the Adriatic; and there was great confusion of tongues on board the 'Tegethoff'—Italian, German, English, Norwegian and Slavonic, were all spoken. Captain Carlsen gave his orders in Norwegian, with forcible Italian expressions occasionally thrown in. Dr. Kepes talked to the crew in Latin and Hungarian; and two men spoke a very curious dialect, the German of the Tyrol, which Lieutenant Payer alone understands. Count Wilczek, in the small yacht 'Isbyorn,' accompanied by Baron Sterneek, a geologist named Hans Höfer, Herr Berger a photographer, and the Count's huntsman, went as far as the Novaya Zemlya coast. The intention of the explorers was to round the north-eastern point of Novaya Zemlya, and press eastward to the most northern point of Siberia, where they would winter. In the following year they hoped to continue the voyage to Behring Strait;

thus completing a most important and interesting voyage, while during the spring the sledge traveling parties, equipped on McClintock's system, would make exploring journeys and achieve geographical discoveries, perhaps, along the unknown coasts of Wrangell Land.

The 'Tegethoff' left Bremerhafen on June 13, and, all preparations having been completed, she steamed out of Tromsø Harbour on July 14, 1872, with Captain Carlsen as pilot. The first ice was encountered on the 25th, in latitude  $74^{\circ} 15' N.$ , and on the 29th the coast of Novaya Zemlya was sighted. Here the vessel was beset, but steam was got up, and, by repeated charges, she was extricated, and reached a lane of water about twenty miles wide, to the north of Matochkin Strait. Much ice was met with on the following days, and on August 12 the 'Isbyörn' yacht joined company, with Count Wilezek and his companions on board. On the 13th the two vessels anchored about two cables' lengths from the shore, in latitude  $76^{\circ} 30' N.$ , and the 18th was a gala day, being the Emperor's birthday. Covers were laid for twelve, and the *ménu* comprised a haunch of reindeer, bear steaks, six bottles of Moselle, six of Hungarian wine, six of Champagne, and a large Christmas-pudding. Every day three or four sledge parties made excursions to the adjoining island, and returned with quantities of fire-wood,



geological and botanical specimens, and spoils of the chase. On the 23rd, the north wind set in with great force, and the young ice began to form. The vessels then parted company. The 'Tegethoff' steamed away north on her gallant voyage of discovery, while the 'Isbyöm' endeavoured to push southwards along the coast. She passed the Koston Shar on the 26th; and on reaching the mouth of the Petchora, Count Wilczek and his friends left the vessel, which proceeded on her return voyage to Tromsö, while they sailed up the Petchora, in small boats, finally reaching Perm, and returning home by Moscow.

Herr Höfer's geological observations lead him to connect Novaya Zemlya with the Ural system. Meteorological observations were also carefully taken, and a collection of 150 photographic views has been made.

The season of 1872 was exceptionally severe, and large quantities of ice were encountered where, in more favourable seasons, the sea had been clear of any obstruction. Still Captain Weyprecht and his gallant companions were full of hope, and looked forward to being able to advance to the eastward, so as to winter near Cape Chelyuskin, the most northerly Siberian promontory. The 'Tegethoff' was last seen by Count Wilczek on August 23, 1872, pushing her way, with the aid of steam, round the

northern coast of Novaya Zemlya. But she was closely beset almost immediately afterwards, and was never again extricated from the ice. The events of the next two years will be best described in Lieutenant Payer's own words. He says:—

‘Our position was sufficiently miserable, but on October 13 it became gloomy in the extreme. On that day the lethargy in which everything around us had so long been buried suddenly gave place to active commotion, and thenceforth we were exposed to the fearful pressure of the ice. Many a time we were summoned to be ready to save ourselves in case of the vessel foundering, and all this in the midst of a Polar night, and without knowing whither to turn for safety. Our vessel, however, bravely withstood the pressure, though the floe upon which it was fixed had been uplifted by others, which had forced their way under it, thus raising her aft, and causing her to lean over on the port side.

‘Preparations for passing the winter had by this time been made. The deck was covered with snow, an awning was spread from the mainmast forward; and a rampart of ice fixed round the ship. The latter required to be repaired frequently, in consequence of the havoc caused by the motion of the ice.

‘Special care was taken to keep the crew employed. Watches were set regularly, exercise was taken, and school kept. On Sundays the members

of the expedition met for a simple but impressive Divine Service under the awning, when the Bible was read in Italian, by the light of a train oil lamp.

‘Meteorological observations were made regularly ; Lieutenant Brosch, Midshipman Orel, Captain Carlsen, Lusina, and Krisch, relieving each other every two hours. The uncertainty of our position rendered it necessary to keep a watch constantly on deck, through whom we were regularly informed of the approach of ice bears, whose flesh formed a most important addition to our diet. Nevertheless, the sanitary condition on board during the first winter left much to be desired, so that our excellent surgeon, Dr. Kepes, was fully occupied. Scurvy and affections of the lungs made their appearance in spite of every precaution, the former partly on account of the occasional congelation of the damp covering our cabin-walls, and partly owing to mental depression brought on by our critical position, and which only disappeared when our prospects became more hopeful, and the summer’s work kept every one fully occupied.

‘Our small stock of wine was reserved for the use of the sick. The rest contented themselves with a daily allowance of artificial wine, which we prepared on board from glycerine, sugar, meat extract, tartaric acid, alcohol, and water. A small plank, suspended over the cabin stove, supplied us every

week with a little cress and cabbage for the scurvy. The dogs—whose numbers by that time had been reduced to seven—were lodged on deck, in boxes filled with straw. They were fed, at first, with dried horse-flesh, and subsequently on the flesh of seals and bears.

On October 28 the sun disappeared below the horizon, not to rise again for 109 days. All the birds had left us, and during five long winter months we were obliged to burn lamps in our cabins. For weeks it was next to impossible to leave the ship. The Polar night was rarely of that indescribable clearness which has been noticed on land, and by ourselves on the coast of Greenland. Whenever a sudden change of temperature caused the expanse of ice to break up, dense vapours arose from the fissures, which not only further obscured the generally inky sky, but likewise produced that immense amount of precipitation which we experienced, especially during our second winter. A fine snow fell almost continuously. In the course of the winter of 1873-4 it attained a depth of 12 feet, and on the arrival of spring our vessel was completely buried in it, although nearly the whole of the snow which fell during the preceding winter had disappeared during the summer.

Our observations on the evaporation of the ice during the Polar night agree in the main with the

results obtained by Parry on Melville Island. The winds nearly balanced each other as regards direction as well as force.

A hut of coal had been built on the ice, to serve as an ~~asylum~~ asylum in case of the vessel being lost, but it was destroyed by a movement of the ice on Christmas-Eve, and we considered ourselves fortunate in being permitted to spend Christmas Day itself in undisturbed tranquillity, occupied with thoughts of home.

The first day of the new year brought with it no prospect of an early release. We were still drifting towards the north-east, and even imagined that we might be carried to the coast of Siberia. Fate, however, had ordained otherwise, for after we had crossed the 73rd degree of longitude, the wind shifted, and thenceforth, helpless as before, we drifted towards the north-west.

On February 16 the sun again made its appearance above the horizon, and on the 25th the pressure of the ice, which had tormented us hitherto, having literally hemmed us in by a wall of craggy ice-mountains, ceased as suddenly as it had begun. The cold continued to be severe: the mean temperature of February was  $-31^{\circ}$  Fahr., and towards the close of that month it reached its height  $-51^{\circ}$  Fahr. But this cold is borne easily, as the cabin affords ready means for warming one's self.

consequently several of our men only reluctantly put on their fur clothes when ordered on deck.

The Polar lights in their ineffable beauty illumined the heavens during the whole of the winter, but diminished in frequency as the days grew longer. They generally appeared in the south, and only rarely was more than one corona seen on the same night. After the beginning of September they were the only incitement which we received from without. Like mighty streams they rushed over the firmament, sometimes from west to east, at others in a contrary direction, and the corona vanished as rapidly as it appeared. They were most intense between 8 and 10 in the evening, and their appearance was never attended by noise. Magnificent lights proved generally the forerunners of bad weather.

The auroras and magnetic phenomena were observed by Lieutenant Weyprecht, who will publish the results at an early date.

In the summer of 1873 our hopes of an early disruption of the floe, and consequent liberation, revived. In the course of the summer we observed a maximum temperature of  $45^{\circ}.5$  Fahrenheit; the black bulb thermometer occasionally indicating a solar heat of  $113^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit, and on days like these, when there was no wind, we had a sensation of ~~very~~ *scorching* heat. The mean temperature of the past

year had been  $2\cdot75^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit. Our hopes were based upon the evaporation of the ice caused by the powerful effect of the sun, and upon its destruction by winds and waves, but not upon its melting in a sea the surface temperature of which never rose above freezing point. The progressive conversion of the surface ice into sludge was witnessed by us from day to day, the cliffs and walls of ice crumbling away, and evaporating until nearly the whole surrounding sea was covered with a thick chaotic layer of sludge.

‘ Thus encouraged, we made fresh efforts to regain our liberty, and the months of May, June, July, and August were spent in futile attempts to saw through the ice which surrounded us. But our floe, which had attained a thickness of forty feet in consequence of other floes forcing themselves underneath it, rendered all our attempts futile. The centre of our vessel, and the uplifted part abaft, remained immovably fixed upon the floe. The surrounding ice and snow having melted away and evaporated to the extent of 12 to 18 feet, we found ourselves fixed at a considerable elevation above the general level, and the danger of being capsized had to be provided against by supporting our masts with strong shears. I ought to state that our floe varied considerably in size from time to time. During the last winter it was shattered almost daily, but congealed again



immediately. At the time now referred to (August 1873) it was 5 to 7 miles in diameter.

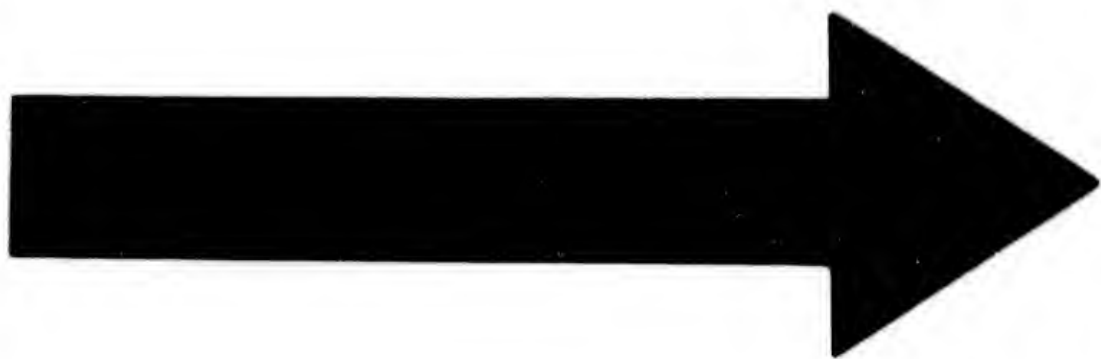
'The northerly winds of July drifted us to the south, as far as latitude  $79^{\circ}$ , but August saw us again drifting to the north. I ought to state distinctly that nothing justified us in the assumption that the direction of our drift was at any time due to oceanic currents. The winds alone caused it, and a cessation of the wind led to a cessation in the movement of the ice. It struck us as remarkable that the direction in which we drifted was always to leeward, and that our vessel should have shued only to the extent of  $1^{\circ}$  in azimuth during the four preceding winter months.

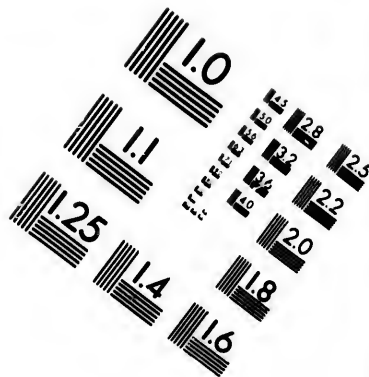
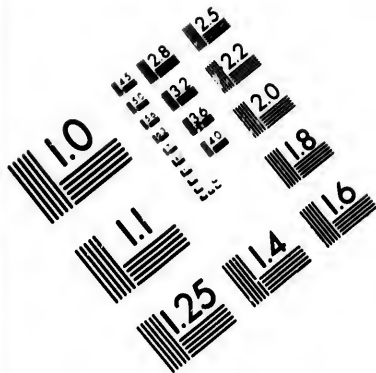
'In the course of the summer of 1873, when in about  $79^{\circ}$  N. latitude, and  $60^{\circ}$  E. longitude, we drifted over an extensive bank, our soundings, which had hitherto varied between 100 and about 275 fathoms, becoming much less.

'The temperature of the sea was measured at different depths, and the use of the dredging apparatus resulted in a small zoological collection, only a portion of which we were able to bring to Europe. Drawings of some of the specimens which we had to abandon have, however, been made.

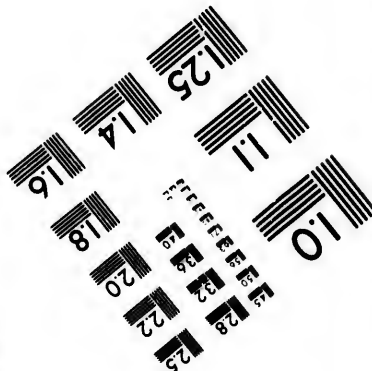
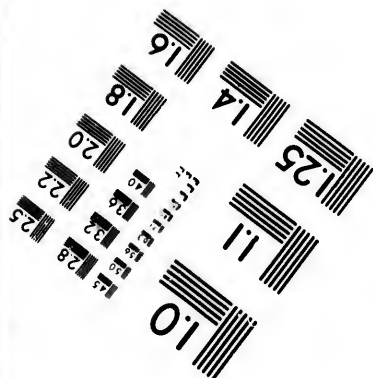
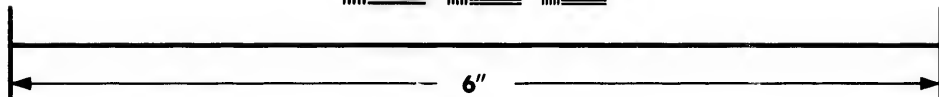
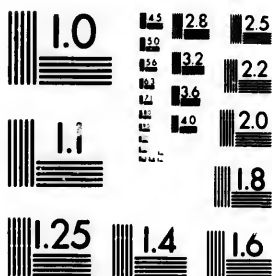
'Our hopes that the ice would break up grew less and less every day, though the familiar grating sound which proceeds from the ice giving way was heard frequently, and dark streaks on the horizon







**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

1.5  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0  
4.5  
5.0

5.0  
5.6  
6.3  
7.1  
8.0  
9.0  
10.0

pointed to the existence of open fissures. We had already resigned ourself to the necessity of being obliged to pass a second winter, as inactive and perilous as the first, when the state of affairs all of a sudden underwent a change in our favour.

‘We had long ago been drifted into a portion of the Arctic Sea which had not previously been visited, but in spite of a careful look-out, we had not been able hitherto to discover land. It was, therefore, an event of on small importance, when, on August 31, we were surprised by the sudden appearance of a mountainous country, about 14 miles to the north, which the mist had, up to that time, concealed from our view.

‘At that moment all our past anxieties were forgotten; impulsively we hastened towards the land, though fully aware that we should not be able to get farther than the edge of our floe. For months we were doomed to suffer the torments of Tantalus. Close to us, and, in fact, almost within reach, was a new Polar land, rich with the promise of discoveries, and yet, drifting as we were at the mercy of the winds, and surrounded by open fissures, we were unable to get any nearer to it.

‘At length, towards the end of October, we approached within three miles of one of the islands lying off the main mass of the land. Every other consideration was now thrown to the winds, and,

making our way over the rugged, hummocky surface of the ice, we, for the first time, placed our foot upon land in latitude  $79^{\circ} 54' N$ . The ice covering the sea close to the shore was only one foot in thickness, and it was clear that an open lane of water had existed periodically during the preceding summer. An island more desolate than that which we had reached can hardly be imagined, for snow and ice covered its frozen and débris-covered slopes. But to us it was of such importance that the name of Count Wilczek, the originator of our expedition, was conferred upon it.

'The sun had deserted us for the second time on October 22, but we availed ourselves of the few hours of twilight, vouchsafed to us for a week afterwards, to make a few excursions to a distance of 10 miles from the vessel, without, however, being able to enlarge our knowledge of the new country. Was it merely the southern capes of islands of small extent which we had before us, or a country of large extent? Nor were we able to determine whether the white patches, which we discerned high up between the mountain summits, were glaciers or not.

'The increasing darkness of the polar night for the present rendered every attempt at exploration impossible, and we feared lest northerly winds might drift us far away from our present position, before the approach of spring should enable us to commence

our exploratory journeys. Nor was our position at the time at all a safe one. Southerly winds had driven us close to the land, and during the first half of October we still suffered seriously from the pressure of the ice. Our floe was shivered into fragments, and it almost appeared as if the anxious days through which we had passed were about to return. In expectation of an unfortunate issue, we took the same measures of precaution which we had taken during the preceding winter, and were ready to leave the ship at a moment's notice. Fortune, however, did not again forsake us, and we were permitted to pass the second Polar night (125 days in length) without suffering the horrors of the first. There occurred no farther pressure from the ice, and our harbourless vessel, fixed to its floe, and surrounded for the first time by icebergs, remained immovable, close within the outer edge of the land-ice, and at a distance of 3 miles from the nearest coast.

‘This position enabled us to look towards the future with a certain amount of assurance; it rendered existence more endurable, and enabled Weyprecht, Broseh and Orel to determine the magnetic elements with a great amount of accuracy. Orel, moreover, determined the astronomical position of our winter-quarters, which he found to be in latitude  $79^{\circ} 51' N$ , and longitude  $58^{\circ} 56' E$ . During the winter of 1873-74 much more snow fell than during the preceding

one, and snow-drifts brought on by northerly winds continued for days. At the height of the polar night we were scarcely able to distinguish night from day, and were enshrouded in darkness for weeks. Christmas was celebrated in a snow-house, built upon our floe. In January the cold set in again exceedingly severe, and the mercury remained frozen for more than a week. The snow became as hard as pumice, and its surface granular. The petroleum in the glass lamps under the awning froze, the lamps went out, and even our cognac was changed into a solid mass.

The visits of bears were as frequent then as they had been at other seasons of the year; they came close up to the ship, and were killed by regular volleys fired from deck. The bears here are certainly much less ferocious than those we met with in Eastern Greenland, where they not unfrequently attacked us, and on one occasion even carried one of the crew out of the ship. Here they generally took to flight as soon as we made our appearance. With respect to the disputed question whether bears pass the winter in a dormant state or not, we observed that amongst the greater number shot by us during two winters there was not a single female, and during our second sledge expedition, in the spring of 1874, we even discovered a tunnel-shaped winter-hole in a snow-cone lying at the foot of a cliff, which was inhabited by a female bear and her cubs. On

encountering bears we found it generally most advantageous to fire after they had approached within a distance of 50 or 80 paces.

‘A portion of the flesh of sixty-seven ice-bears which we killed, amounting altogether to about 12,000 lbs., proved to be the most efficient remedy against the scurvy, from which several of our men were again suffering. The care of our surgeon, as well as the re-appearance of the sun on February 24, saved most of our patients from protracted suffering; but owing to our stock of medicines having become very much reduced, a third winter would certainly have exhibited far more unfavourable results. This consideration, joined to the certainty that our vessel was indissolubly fixed to the floe, which in the ensuing summer would again drift about at the mercy of the winds, as well as the danger of its capsizing on the melting of the snow, led to the resolution to abandon the vessel, towards the end of May, and attempt a return to Europe by means of our boats and sledges. The interval was to be devoted to an exploration of the country by means of sledge expeditions, the fortunate termination of which must be left, in no small measure, to chance. For had the vessel been drifted away during the absence of the explorers, they would have been exposed to certain destruction, and the crew remaining on board would have been weakened



seriously. But the exploration of the country, lying as it did so invitingly before us, was considered to be worth the risk.

'March had arrived, and although the cold was still severe, and the weather by no means favourable, the necessity of making the best of the short space of time at our disposal induced us to start upon our first sledge expedition. On March 10 the Tyrolese Haller and Klotz, the sailors Cattarinich, Lettis, Pospischill, and Lukinovich, three dogs and myself, left the 'Tegethoff' with our big sledge. We travelled in a north-westerly direction along the coast of the extensive Hall Island, ascended Capes Tegethoff and McClintock, 2,500 feet in height, and traversed the picturesque Nordenskjöld Fiord, the interior of which was bounded by the gigantic ice-wall of the Sonklar glacier. The land before us appeared to be utterly void of life; immense glaciers looked down upon us from between the desolate mountains, which rose boldly in steep doleritic cones and plateaus. Every object around us was clothed in a mantle of glaring white, and the ranges of columns of the symmetrical mountain terraces looked as if they were encrusted with sugar. In no single instance could we see the natural colour of the rock, as in Greenland, Spitzbergen, or Novaya Zemlya. This was owing to the immense precipitation and the moisture of the air, which condensed on coming

into contact with the cold surface of the cliffs. The unusual moisture of the air, moreover, caused us frequently to over-estimate distances, which is quite contrary to Arctic experience. Perfectly clear days were exceedingly rare.

'The cold during this journey was very great, and amounted on one occasion to  $-58^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit (on board ship it was  $-46.25^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit). We were bound to exercise the greatest precaution; our nightly rest in the tent was disturbed, and the crossing of the Sonklar glacier, during a slight wind, was exceedingly painful. Our clothes were as stiff as a coat of mail, and even our rum, strong as it was, appeared to have lost both potency and fluidity. We slept in fur coats, but in the daytime we found that clothes made of the skins of birds were best adapted for resisting the rigour of the climate. In spite of every precaution, however, we suffered much from frost-bites, against which a mixture of iodine and collodion proved most efficacious.

'Immediately on our return to the vessel, on March 16, we set about making preparations for a second sledge expedition, which was to extend over thirty days, and was to be devoted to an exploration of the land in the north. Soon afterwards one of our companions (Mr. Krisch, the engineer) succumbed to a protracted tuberculosis of the lungs, aggravated by scurvy. On the 19th we buried him

the cliffs. The  
over, caused us  
, which is quite  
fectly clear days

was very great.  
-58° Fahrenheit  
ahrenheit). We  
precaution; our  
ed, and the cross-  
g a slight wind,  
othes were as stiff  
rum, strong as it  
ency and fluidity.  
daytime we found  
of birds were best  
the climate. In  
we suffered much  
mixture of iodine  
ous.

to the vessel, on  
preparations for a  
was to extend over  
to an exploration  
afterwards one of  
he engineer) suc-  
osis of the lungs,  
th we buried him

in a lonely spot surrounded by columnar basalt, and erected a wooden cross upon his grave.

‘On March 24 we started for the north. Our party included Mr. Orel, the two Tyrolese, three sailors (Zaninovich, Sussich, Lukinovich), and myself. We all wore snow spectacles, blinkers, masks covering half the face, knitted woollen gloves, and sail-cloth boots. We were armed with double-barrelled Lefaucher rifles, having a calibre of 12<sup>mm</sup> and firing explosive bullets and steel-pointed projectiles. In preparing our equipment we followed explicitly the advice given by Admiral Sir Leopold McClintock, and the successful issue of our expedition is due, largely, to this circumstance.

‘Our team of dogs, unfortunately, was not any longer complete, and only three of them assisted us in dragging the large sledge, which carried stores and provisions weighing 16 cwts. The rest of the dogs were either dead or incapable of rendering service, but even the three remaining ones, being powerful animals, proved valuable auxiliaries.

‘The temperature during this journey, quite contrary to our expectations, did not fall below 26·50° Fahrenheit, but snowdrifts and moisture, the opening of fissures in the ice, and the flooding of our path by the sea, gave us much trouble.

‘The results of this journey cannot be fully appreciated without reference to maps and sketches;

and, anticipating the chronological order of our report, we will at once state that the newly discovered country equals Spitzbergen in extent, and consists of several large masses of land—Wilczek Land in the east, Zichy Land in the west—which are intersected by numerous fiords, and skirted by a large number of islands.

‘ A wide sound—Austria Sound—separates these masses of land. It extends north from Cape Hansa to about latitude  $82^{\circ}$  N., where Rawlinson Sound forks off towards the north-east. The latter we were able to trace with the eye as far as Cape Buda-Pest.

‘ The tide rises about two feet in Austria Sound, and exercises but a small effect, merely causing the bay-ice to break near the coasts. Dolerite is the prevailing rock. Its broad horizontal sheet and the steep table-mountains, which recall the Ambas of Abyssinia, impart to the country its peculiar physiognomy. Its geological features coincide with those of portions of North-Eastern Greenland. A tertiary carboniferous sandstone occurs in both, but only small beds of brown-coal were discovered. On the other hand, amygdaloid rocks, which are so frequent in North-Eastern Greenland, were not met with in Franz-Josef Land, and whilst the rocks in the south were frequently aphanitic in their texture, and resembled true basalt, those in the north were coarse-grained and contained nepheline.

order of our re-  
newly discovered  
ent, and consists  
Wilezek Land in  
—which are in-  
skirted by a large

—separates these  
from Cape Hansa  
Rawlinson Sound  
. The latter we  
e as far as Cape

in Austria Sound,  
merely causing the  
k. Dolerite is the  
ental sheet and the  
all the Ambas of  
ts peculiar physio-  
coincide with those  
nland. A tertiary  
n both, but only  
scovered. On the  
ich are so frequent  
re not met with in  
rocks in the south  
ir texture, and re-  
north were coarse-

‘It is an established fact that portions of North-Eastern Greenland, Novaya Zemlya, and Siberia, are being slowly upheaved, and it was therefore very interesting to meet with raised beaches along the shores of Austria Sound, which attested that a similar upheaval was taking place here likewise.

‘The mountains, as a rule, attain a height of 2,000 or 3,000 feet, and only towards the south-west do they appear to attain an altitude of 5,000 feet. The extensive depressions between the mountain-ranges are covered with glaciers of those gigantic proportions only met with in the Arctic Regions. Only in a few instances were we able to determine the daily motion of the glaciers by direct measurements. On the coast they usually form mural precipices, 100 to 200 feet in height. The Dove Glacier on Wilezek Land is undoubtedly one of the most considerable of the Arctic Regions.

‘The glaciers visited by us were characterised by their greenish blue colour, the paucity of crevasses, an extraordinarily coarse-grained ice, a small development of moraines, slow motion, and the considerable thickness of the annual layers. The *névé*, or glacial region above the snow-line, was much less elevated above the sea than in Greenland or Spitzbergen.

‘Another peculiarity which characterises all the low islands in the Austria Sound, is their being covered by a glacial cap.

‘The vegetation is far poorer than that of Green-

land, Spitzbergen, or Novaya Zemlya, and excepting in the Antarctic Regions, no country exists on the face of the earth which is poorer in that respect. The general physiognomy of the flora (but not that of the species) resembles that met with in the Alps at an altitude of 9,000 or 10,000 feet. The season during which we visited the country was certainly that in which vegetable life first puts forth its appearance, and most of the slopes were still covered with snow, but even the most favoured spots near the sea-level, which were no longer covered with snow, were unable to induce us to arrive at a different conclusion. On level spots we scarcely met with anything but poor and solitary bunches of grass, a few species of saxifrage and *Silene acaulis*. Dense carpets of mosses and lichens were more abundant, but most abundant of all was a lichen, the winterly *Umbilicaria Arctica*.

‘Driftwood, mostly of an old date, was met with on many occasions, but only in very small quantities. We once saw, lying only a trifle higher than the water-line, the trunk of a larch, about a foot thick and some 10 feet in length. The driftwood, like our vessel, had probably been carried to these latitudes by the winds, in all likelihood from Siberia, and not by currents.

‘The country, as might have been supposed, has no human inhabitants; and in its southern portions scarcely animal, excepting ice-bears, are met with.



‘Many portions of the newly-discovered country are exceedingly beautiful, though it bears throughout the impress of Arctic rigidity.

‘Our first sledge journey, as well as those undertaken subsequently, convinced us of the difficulty which any future expedition would meet with in discovering a harbour to winter in, no locality suitable for such a purpose having been discovered by us.

‘It has always been a maxim of Arctic explorers to name their discoveries in honour of the promoters of their enterprise, or of their predecessors. The countries discovered may never become of commercial importance, but the only manner in which I was able to record my gratitude towards those who had devoted their means to the success of our expedition, consisted in connecting their names with the newly-discovered countries. The name of H.I.M. Franz-Josef was consequently bestowed upon the whole of the country discovered by us, and other names to its several parts.

‘Owing to the mist which generally hung over the ice, we should not have been able to trace the northerly direction of the Austria Sound, had we not frequently ascended high mountains. The ascents of Capes Koldewey ( $80^{\circ} 15'$ ), Frankfurt ( $80^{\circ} 25'$ ), Ritter ( $80^{\circ} 45'$ ), Kane ( $81^{\circ} 10'$ ), and Fligely ( $82^{\circ} 5'$ ), moreover enabled us to survey the surrounding country, and to select the most suitable tracks to follow.

‘An uninterrupted expanse of ice, with numerous icebergs scattered over its surface, extended from coast to coast. It was evidently of recent formation, and numerous fissures, and barriers formed of hummocks, crossed it in many places, and constituted serious obstacles to our progress, which we were able to surmount only at a vast expenditure of time and labour. Our track led over this expanse of ice; and, starting from Cape Frankfurt, at the portal of Austria Sound, it led us through regions with respect to which we had learnt nothing during our first sledge journey. Omitting, for the present, all details concerning our journey, it may suffice us to state that we crossed the 80th degree of latitude on March 26, reached the latitude of  $81^{\circ}$  on April 3, and observed, five days afterwards, the latitude of  $81^{\circ} 37'$ . We imagined at that time that we had approached nearer to the Pole on land than had ever been done before, for we were not then aware that the American Expedition under Hall had reached  $82^{\circ} 9'$  N. on land, and  $82^{\circ} 26'$  by sea, the year before.

‘To the south-east of Crown Prince Rudolf Land we turned into the vast Rawlinson Sound, which promised to lead us almost straight to the north. But we soon got entangled in a chaotic mass of ice, which, owing to its height, prevented us from seeing the land, and through which it required our utmost



exertions to force our way. The small horizontal intensity of the needle, moreover, which is but natural in such a high latitude, repeatedly made us lose our way, and finding that the hillocks of ice became more formidable in proportion as we advanced, we changed our course, and returned to Austria Sound. We frequently encountered ice-bears whilst in Rawlinson Sound. They came towards us whenever they caught sight of us, and fell an easy prey to our rifles.

‘The decrease of our provisions and the want of time at our disposal made forced marches necessary, and necessitated a separation of our party. The large sledge, with Haller and four others, was left behind in latitude  $81^{\circ} 38'$ , under a cliff of Hohenlohe Island, whilst Orel, Zaninovich, and myself, with the dog-sledge and half the tent, continued the journey. The sledge was now drawn by two dogs only, the third, a Lapland reindeer dog, having some time previously perished in a snow-storm. Haller was ordered to wait a fortnight for our return, and then to make the best of his way back to the vessel.

‘Our first aim was to cross Crown Prince Rudolf Land in a northerly direction. This necessitated our crossing the extensive Middendorf Glacier, which past experience and the great cold justified us in believing to be possible, and we at once set about it. After a laborious journey along the long terminal

cliff of the glacier, we at length succeeded in gaining its surface, but had scarcely proceeded a hundred paces, when an immense crevasse swallowed up Zaninovich, the dogs, and the heavily-laden sledge. Mr. Orel, fortunately, had remained some distance behind, and I escaped a similar fate by cutting through my harness. Not being able by myself to extricate those engulfed, I ran back to Hohenlohe Island, 12 miles distant, whence I quickly returned with the rest of our party. By means of long ropes we succeeded at length in raising man, dogs, and sledge to the surface, and were fortunate in being able to continue our journey on the following day without having sustained serious injury. The men returned to the depôt; and our small party, having abandoned the treacherous surface of the glacier, gained the western coast of the island by a circuitous path, along which we travelled to the north. Here we were destined to witness a most striking change in the aspect of nature. A water sky, of a dusky colour, made its appearance in the north; foul, yellow vapours collected below the sun, the temperature rose, the ground under our feet became soft, and the snow-drifts broke under us with a rumbling noise. We had previously noticed the flight of birds from the north—here we found the rocks covered with thousands of auks and divers. They rose before us in immense swarms, and filled the air with the noise

of their vehement whizzing, for breeding-time had arrived. Traces of bears, hares, and foxes were met with everywhere, and seals reposed sluggishly upon the ice. We were justified, therefore, in believing that open water was near at hand; but personal observations which we were able to make on the following day, after we had ascended the hills, and the results of which I have embodied in a sketch, showed that even our not very sanguine expectations, as regarded the extent of open water, were not realized.

‘Our track, henceforth, was far from safe. We were no longer travelling over old ice, but over a crust of young ice, hardly 1 or 2 inches thick, covered with salt, very flexible, and crossed by veritable walls, built up of fragments resulting from recent fractures of the ice.

‘We tied ourselves to the rope, carried our things separately, opened a path with the axe, and continually examined the thickness of the crust which bore us.

‘We rounded Auk Cape, which resembled a gigantic aviary, and reached the two lonely rocky towers of the Cape of Columns. Here we first found open water extending along the coast.

‘This distant world was sublime in its beauty. From a height we looked down upon the dark sheet of open water, dotted with icebergs like so many

pearls. Heavy clouds hung in the sky, through which penetrated the glowing rays of the sun, causing the water to sparkle, and above was reflected the image of another sun, but of a paler hue. At an apparently immense height the ice-mountains of Crown Prince Rudolf Land, bathed in a roseate hue, stood out clearly visible through the rolling mists.

‘April 12, was the last day of our advance to the north, and, although not perfectly bright, it was more so than most of its predecessors. The thermometer stood at  $+54.50^{\circ}$  Fahrenheit.

‘From the Cape of Columns, owing to the open water referred to, it was not any longer practicable to travel over the ice, and we were compelled to take to the hills.

‘On starting, we buried our baggage in the crevasse of a glacier, in which we had slept, and where it was safe from prowling ice-bears, and with the dog-sledge we travelled over a snow-field towards the hills, which were 1,000 to 3,000 feet in height. On reaching the prominent, rocky Cape Germania, I observed the meridian altitude ( $81^{\circ} 57' N.$ ). Here we left the sledge, and, tied to the rope, crossed the *névé* of a glacier, which descended in gigantic steps towards our left. But the many crevasses which obstructed our path, and into which we broke frequently, as well as the certainty of having reached

latitude  $82^{\circ} 5' N.$  after a march of 5 hours since noon, induced us to abandon farther discovery, and having pushed to the north for seventeen days, we halted on the height of Cape Fligely.

‘We were now in a position to judge of the extent of coast-water. It turned out to be a “Polynia,” bounded by old ice within which floated ice-masses of recent formation.

‘As I am anxious on this occasion to confine myself to a record of facts, I abstain from entering upon a discussion concerning the navigability and nature of those portions of the Arctic Ocean which have not hitherto been seen by anyone.

‘There cannot, however, be any doubt that the facts observed and the sight upon which we looked from Cape Fligely, spoke as little in favour of the theory of these who believe in the existence of an open Polar Sea, as of those who maintain that the Polar basin is covered with ice throughout the year. The truth will probably be found to lie between these two extremes. The hope of finding a navigable sea in latitudes not hitherto attained is not yet extinct, and is most likely to be realised by hugging the coast, but depends in a large measure upon a favourable year.

‘The success of an expedition sent out to attain the highest possible latitude depends, moreover, largely upon the route selected. The plan of pene-

trating through Smith Sound, which has been advocated in England, appears to offer most advantages in these respects. The theoretical reasons adduced in favour of this route are seconded most powerfully by the fact that a very high latitude has been reached here on repeated occasions. If an expedition should succeed in reaching a winter harbour in a latitude as high as that reached by the last American expedition, it would then be in a position, by means of extensive sledge journeys along the coast, to reach a latitude in the course of spring, the attainment of which would be attended by far greater difficulties along any other route.

‘Our own track to the north of Novaya Zemlya carries no weight in considering this question, for we are indebted for our progress to a floe of ice and not to our own exertions. The difficulties which any succeeding navigator would have to contend with on this route may be estimated from the fact, that on our return we found the sea encumbered with ice to such an extent that even boat navigation was hardly possible, and we were obliged to haul up our boats many hundred times, and drag them over the ice. We certainly should not have been able to return in our vessel, although the summer of 1874 was exceptionally favourable.

‘But if an expedition be fitted out, not with a view of reaching the highest possible latitude, but to



study the nature of Arctic countries, then the interior of Greenland would certainly appear to be deserving of the first consideration.

‘But our neighbourhood was at that time of more immediate interest to us than the question of the navigability of a remote portion of the Arctic Ocean. We had before us extensive lands, covered with mountains, and bounding a wide sound, stretching towards the north-east, which we were able to trace as far as latitude  $83^{\circ}$  N. where the imposing Cape Vienna forms the western extremity of a country upon which I conferred the name of Petermann.

‘Crown Prince Rudolf Land extended towards the north-east, its furthest visible point being a cloud-wrapped rocky promontory, in latitude  $82^{\circ} 20'$  N., named in honour of Admiral Sherard Osborn.

‘Two other localities visited by us, but not on this occasion, were named after two other renowned English navigators, viz., Admirals Collinson and Back.

‘We do not desire to start any fresh theory with reference to the distribution of land around the Pole; but the coasts, as well as the gigantic glaciers, certainly gave us the impression of having entered a group of islands of considerable extent.

‘The innumerable icebergs met with in all the fiords of Franz-Josef Land formed a remarkable feature, for to the south of it—that is, in the Novaya



Zemlya Sea—scarcely any are met with. We are not in a position to ascribe the presence of these icebergs to ocean currents, though their absence in the Novaya Zemlya Sea would appear to point to their finding an outlet towards the north.

‘Having planted the Austro-Hungarian banner upon the farthest point reached by us, and deposited a document testifying our presence in a cleft of the rocks, we turned back towards our vessel, which lay some 160 miles to the south.

‘Having rejoined our comrades, who anxiously waited for our return, at Hohenlohe Island, forced marches, and a deliverance from all impediments, excepting the tent and provisions, soon brought us to lower latitudes. But after we had crossed the glaciers of the imposing Ladenburg Island, and reached Cape Ritter (April 19), we were disquieted by the observation that the sea water had permeated the lower layers of snow, whilst a dark water sky hung over the broad entrance to the Markham Sound. On retiring to rest we distinctly heard the grinding noise of the ice, and the surge beating against the shore.

‘The next day found us on an iceberg, not far from the Hayes Islands, with open water in front of us, and no boat to cross it. The water set rapidly towards the north, owing, probably, to the tide. The southern portion of Austria Sound had been

converted into a 'polynia,' and at a distance of thirty paces from where we stood the surf lashed the ice. After wandering about for two days, during a fearful snow-storm, we managed, by following the land and the mural terminations of glaciers to get round this open water, which shut off our return, and it was with a feeling of deliverance that we again stepped upon the solid ice near Cape Frankfurt. Our last apprehensions were removed when we found that our vessel had not drifted away; and on April 24 we found the "Tegethoff" on the very spot, to the south of Wilczek Island, where we had left her thirty days before. A few days had necessarily to be devoted to repose; for although we had eaten the flesh of eight bears, which we killed during our journey, this addition to our diet was not sufficient to counterbalance the reduction in our strength brought about by the extraordinary exertions which we were called upon to undergo, when dragging a sledge for eight or ten hours at a stretch, followed by a night's rest of only five hours' duration.

Our third sledge journey was devoted to an exploration of the extensive McClintock Island. Brosch, Haller, and myself, with the dog-sledge, joined in it. When about 40 miles to the west of our ship we ascended a high mountain, and were able to survey the country as far as about longitude 46° E. It was mountainous in character, the moun-

tains again bearing a great resemblance to the Am-  
bas of Abyssinia. The range attains its culminating  
point in the Riechthofen Peak, about 5,000 feet in  
height. Closely packed ice covered the sea towards  
the south, as far as the eye could reach, and ren-  
dered our prospects of a speedy return home by no  
means cheerful.

'On the termination of this journey, Lieutenant  
Weyprecht measured a base-line on the ice near the  
ship; and we then considered that we had done  
everything in our power to accomplish the objects  
of the expedition, and our thoughts were directed  
exclusively upon our return home.

'The period immediately before starting was  
devoted to recruiting our strength. We took leave  
of the grave of our departed comrade, and of the  
country which the caprice of a floe of ice had  
enabled us to discover. On May 20th, in the even-  
ing, the flags were nailed to the masts—an affecting  
scene for all of us—and we started upon our return  
home.'

When the explorers abandoned the 'Tegethoff'  
their equipment was of the simplest, for circum-  
stances forbade anything approaching to luxury, and  
in addition to the clothes he wore upon his back, the  
personal property of each member of the expedition  
was limited to a blanket to sleep in. The provisions,  
ammunition, &c., for three or four months, were

packed in three, subsequently four boats, placed on sleighs, and on three large sledges, each weighing about  $17\frac{1}{2}$  cwts. Only the two strongest of the dogs were alive, but even this small contingent proved of great service, for they pulled daily 9 to 10 cwts. between them. The deep snow which was encountered on first starting, compelled them to travel as many as five times over certain distances, for it required the united strength of the whole party to drag a single sledge or boat. Having reached the edge of the land ice, they had to clamber with the boats and sledges from floe to floe, and sometimes to cross narrow fissures in the ice. Persistent southerly winds, moreover, destroyed the little progress they made, for these winds drove the ice, upon the surface of which they were travelling, to the north, and after two months of incessant labour they were not more than 8 miles from the ship. It almost appeared to them as if their struggle with the ice would end in a defeat, which would compel them to remain a third winter in their ship, uncheered by a ray of hope.

The ice around them was closely packed, and on several occasions they were compelled to lie quietly with their boats upon a floe of ice for an entire week, until some channel should chance to open. Northerly winds set in at length, on July 15, which dispersed the ice to some extent, continuous rains

reduced its dimensions, and by almost superhuman exertions they advanced 10 miles in the course of as many days. They were fully convinced by this time that no vessel would have succeeded in that year, in reaching the land discovered by them.

On August 7 they observed for the first time a swell coming from the south, and indicative of the proximity of open water. This revived their hopes, which fell anew when they again became ice-bound for the space of five days; but on August 14 they reached the edge of the pack, in latitude  $77^{\circ} 40'$  N., and their safety seemed thus to be secured. Here they were reluctantly forced to abandon their sledges, and to kill the dogs, who had been their faithful companions and assistants in times of need, for the boats were hardly large enough to hold themselves and baggage, besides which they were without water and provisions for their maintenance.

Their final salvation was due entirely to their finding the edge of the pack-ice in so high a latitude. Favoured by the weather, they crossed the open sea in the direction of Novaya Zemlya, and followed the coast of that island towards the south. On August 18 they for the first time placed their feet upon *terra firma*, near the Admiralty Peninsula, and in the evening of the 24th—that is, after a passage of 96 days—they found themselves in the Bay of Downs (latitude  $72^{\circ} 40'$  N.), on board the Russian schooner,

superhuman  
course of as  
by this time  
that year, in

first time a  
native of the  
their hopes,  
ne ice-bound  
gust 14 they  
tude 77° 40'

be secured.  
bandon their  
ad been their  
times of need,  
ough to hold  
ch they were  
maintenance.  
irely to their  
igh a latitude.  
the open sea  
l followed the  
. On August  
eir feet upon  
nsula, and in  
r a passage of  
Bay of Downs  
sian schooner,

‘Nikolai,’ Captain Feodor Voronin, who received them with that heartiness which distinguishes the Russian people.

A speedy passage brought them to Vardö; and at 3 o'clock in the afternoon of September 3, 1874, they stepped upon the hospitable soil of Norway, full of that satisfaction which an escape from a position of danger and doubts brings with it.

The complete success of the Austro-Hungarian Arctic Expedition is most encouraging. It furnishes one more proof of the healthiness of the Arctic climate, of the absence of undue risk even when the ship has to be abandoned, and of the important results to be secured by any expedition, when led by an experienced and resolute commander. It is also extremely gratifying to find that Lieutenant Payer, by studying the instructions furnished to him by Sir Leopold McClintock, has achieved great success in sledge travelling. Following the impulse of a generous nature, the very first thing that Payer did, after landing in Norway, was to send the following telegram to McClintock:—‘In following your advice, endless advantage. Pray accept thanks. Discovery of land 200 miles north of Novaya Zemlya. Information follows.’

The reception of the members of the expedition throughout Norway was most enthusiastic; and they were warmly welcomed when they reached their own



country. Cordial congratulations poured in from all geographers; and on November 10, 1874, Lieutenant Payer read the preceding account of his discoveries at a meeting of the Royal Geographical Society. The brave Austrian explorers have, by dint of careful study, intrepidity, and perseverance, made a great and memorable discovery, of which the Austro-Hungarian nation may well be proud. They failed in their original intention of making the north-east passage; but they ascertained the existence of an extensive mass of land stretching eastward from the North-East Land of Spitzbergen, and probably connected with the Gilies land of the Dutch. This discovery had been predicted by Admiral Sherard Osborn, some years previously; and it clears up several doubtful points connected with the hydrography of the sea between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya. The drift of the 'Tegethoff,' while beset in the ice, was entirely governed by the prevailing winds, and not by any current; and the mass of land to the north finally disposes of the mischievous Gulf Stream and open Polar Basin theory, which has done so much harm to the advance of discovery and the progress of sound geography.



## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE BEST ROUTE FOR ARCTIC EXPLORATION.

THE various expeditions which, within the last three centuries, have touched the threshold of the unknown Polar region along its whole circumference have now been passed in review, and it remains to sum up the evidence thus collected, and to decide from it the best route for future Arctic exploration.

The unknown area is of vast extent, covering several millions of square miles, and, as only a portion can be explored by one expedition, a route must be selected which offers the best security for the acquisition of important results. In order to justify the despatch of a Government expedition, there are two main points to be considered. These are the certainty of exploring a previously unknown area of considerable extent, and the prospect of obtaining the most valuable results in various branches of science. These advantages can only be secured in that portion where a coast-line of great extent is known to exist, because many discoveries

must be made on or near the shore. Observations of oceanic currents and deep sea temperature are the only branch of the inquiry which does not depend upon the discovery of land.

As routes by Behring's Strait and the Siberian seas are left out of the question for the present, as regards an English expedition, the number of routes by which the threshold of the unknown region may be passed is reduced to two: namely, the sea between Greenland and Novaya Zemlya, usually called the Spitzbergen route, and Smith Sound at the head of Baffin's Bay. Let us see which of these two means of approach best comply with the essential conditions.

It has been seen that, since the days of Barents (1595), expedition after expedition has vainly attempted to make discoveries by the Spitzbergen route. The Polar pack, constantly drifting south, has hitherto barred all progress in that direction. Very frequently it has been found impossible to proceed farther north than the coast of Spitzbergen in about 80° N., while a very open and favourable season has only enabled vessels to proceed 100 miles farther north, where the threshold of the unknown region is blocked up by the impassable Polar pack. Expeditions making attempts by this route have been led by daring and experienced seamen, and no human means have been wanting to secure success. It

may, therefore, be considered as proved that nothing of importance can be achieved by the Spitzbergen route in a sailing vessel. It is, however, supposed that a powerful steamer might succeed where so many sailing vessels have failed, if the season is favourable. This anticipation is, to some extent, well founded. A steamer can more rapidly take advantage of a lead in the ice, can more readily escape from being beset, and can force her way through packed ice which would stop the progress of a vessel under sail. These are undoubtedly great advantages. But they should not be overstated. In an unlucky season, when the ice is closely packed, a steamer could do no more than a sailing vessel, while even under the most favourable circumstances her power of battling with the ice must be limited by the approach of winter. The inevitable conclusion must therefore be, that by the Spitzbergen route, in a bad season, nothing whatever can be done; and in a favourable season a steamer may possibly press one or two or even more degrees farther north than has hitherto been reached, and obtain some valuable deep-sea soundings and temperatures, but no other scientific results in the absence of land. As regards the examination of the area round the Pole, the new Franz-Josef Land may be considered as a portion of the Spitzbergen group

The Spitzbergen route cannot be recommended, because there is no sure prospect of exploring an extensive unknown area, and because no valuable results in geology, botany, ethnology, or geodesy could be obtained under any circumstances.

Let us now turn to the Smith Sound route, by which the vast extent of coast-line on either side of Kennedy Channel, and the ocean which bounds it, must be examined. Details have already been given respecting the navigation of Baffin's Bay, and it has been shown that, humanly speaking, the 'North Water' and the entrance to Smith Sound can always be reached; twenty-one out of twenty-three expeditions have successfully overcome the ice obstructions in Melville Bay. The same success now annually attends the steam whalers. Under the most unfavourable circumstances, therefore, by this route a position can certainly be reached near the entrance of Smith Sound, whence most important discoveries can be made.

Two well-equipped vessels could, during the spring, send out at least two extended sledge-traveling parties, besides depôt parties, which could explore many hundreds of miles of the unknown region in different directions. The extended parties might each be absent 105 days from the ships, and would travel over 1,100 to 1,200 miles of ground. This was what McClintock did in 1853. Mechem,

in the same year, was 94 days absent from the ship, and went over 1,006 miles. In 1854 that officer made a still more extraordinary journey. In 70 days he marched 1,157 miles. There were detentions during 8 days, so that in 61 marching-days, going 9 hours a day, he averaged a rate of 16 geographical miles on the outward, and  $20\frac{1}{2}$  on the homeward journey. Vesey Hamilton went over 1,055 miles in 71 days, during 1854; in the same year Krabbé covered 863 miles in 71 days; and in 1873 Nares made a journey of 665 miles in 65 days. These are the achievements of the leading travellers of one ship—the ‘Resolute’ and her tender. At the same time Richards, Osborn, and their juniors, made journeys of similar extent from the ‘Assistance.’ Sherard Osborn went over 935 miles in 97 days, and Richards was away 94 days, and marched 860 miles. It is easy to perceive that work on this scale in the direction of the North Pole, from a base in  $82^{\circ}$  or  $83^{\circ}$  N., would fully secure all the results that are required. A single extended sledge party could take 60 days’ provisions and travel over 600 miles. This single sledge, by means of depôts and five auxiliary sledges, can be pushed forward to a distance of about 400 miles from the ship. With an expedition consisting of 120 officers and men, two extended exploring parties could be despatched in each travelling sea-

son, and 1,600 miles of land would thus be thoroughly explored, much of which would be new.

The exploration of 50 miles of coast by a sledge party is worth more to science than the discovery of 500 miles by a ship. In the one case the coast is accurately laid down, and its fauna, flora, geology, ethnology, and physical features are fully ascertained; in the other, a coast is seen and inaccurately marked by a dotted line on a chart, and that is all. Take, for example, the shores of the Parry Islands. Parry sailed along them from Wellington Channel to Byam Martin Island in 1819, without landing, and showed them on the chart by dotted lines. For the next thirty-two years that was all that was known about them. In 1851, sledge parties belonging to Captain Austin's expedition travelled along the same shores. The results were not dotted lines. They were a correctly surveyed coast; physical features properly noted and delineated; the collection of a valuable series of Silurian fossils; of a flora which, though meagre, was of considerable scientific interest; of a fauna; and of numerous ethnological specimens throwing light upon the ancient migrations of man. The two methods of exploring will not bear comparison, and they represent the difference between the Spitzbergen route under the most favourable circumstances, in a ship, and the Smith Sound route under

the least favourable circumstances, by sledge-travelling parties.

But there is every reason to expect that a well-commanded expedition will be able to proceed for a considerable distance up Kennedy Channel and Robeson Strait, and so attain a position whence far more extensive discoveries may be achieved. It is true that in 1853 a wretchedly equipped little schooner, the 'Advance' (120 tons and seventeen men), was stopped by the ice near the entrance of Smith Sound; but she was wholly unsuited for such navigation, and had not the advantage of steam-power. On the other hand, Captain Inglefield, in 1852, found the sea open in Smith Sound, and was convinced that it was navigable. Dr. Hayes, in 1860, in another unsuitable little schooner of 133 tons, was not stopped by the ice, but by a gale of wind and a heavy sea. The vessel was unfit for the work. In 1871 Captain Hall, in the 'Polaris,' sailed up Kennedy Channel without any check or obstruction to latitude 82° 16' N., the farthest northern point that has ever been reached by a ship in any direction. If we turn to other straits leading from the head of Baffin's Bay, we shall find that analogy confirms and strengthens the personal observation of Inglefield, Hayes, and Hall. Pond's Bay leads into Eclipse Sound, and thence, by a strait, through Navy Board Inlet, into Barrow's



Strait ; and these intricate channels were successfully navigated in 1872. Lancaster Sound and Barrow's Strait are almost always open for some distance, and on two occasions vessels have sailed up them for several hundred miles, as far as Melville Island. Jones' Sound was also navigated for a considerable distance by Captain Lee, in 1848, without any check. The positions of these Sounds, round the head of Baffin's Bay, will be seen on the little map at page 139.

There is, therefore, every reason to expect that, in an ordinarily favourable season, the waters of Smith Sound and Kennedy Channel will be as navigable as those of Lancaster Sound and Barrow's Strait. The expedition will consist of two screw steamers. One will be stationed, so as to preclude all possibility of danger to the more advanced party, in the improbable event of their vessel being lost. The other will press forward as far north as possible, and perhaps winter in  $83^{\circ}$  or  $84^{\circ}$  N., or even still nearer to the Pole. From such a position advanced travelling parties could reach the North Pole, and explore the whole of the northern coasts of Greenland and of Grinnell Land. The distance from Cape Parry to the North Pole and back is 968 miles, a distance which has frequently been exceeded by Arctic sledge parties belonging to the expeditions in search of Franklin. A sledge party, led by McClintock,

walked 1,210 miles in 105 days; Mechem went over 1,157 miles. The work of these travelling parties will be rendered comparatively easy if the land trends far to the north. As regards the land in that direction, the crew of the 'Polaris,' in  $82^{\circ} 16' N.$ , saw it on the furthest limit of the northern horizon. Numerous geodetical, magnetic, and meteorological observations can be made. The ships can also avail themselves of recent experience obtained in dredging the sea-bottom, of which nothing whatever is known in Baffin's Bay and Smith Sound.

The above considerations offer convincing proofs that the route by Smith Sound is the best road across the threshold of the unknown region. In an unfavourable season by the Spitzbergen route nothing whatever would be done. In an unfavourable season by Smith Sound 1,600 miles of previously unknown country would be discovered and thoroughly explored, and valuable observations and collections would be made in every department of science. In a favourable season by the Spitzbergen route an ice-laden sea may be penetrated for some distance, and deep-sea soundings may be taken over a previously unvisited area, but there would be no other result whatever. In a favourable season by the Smith Sound route the North Pole would be reached; the northern coasts of Greenland and Grinnell Land would be explored;

their geology, flora, fauna, and ethnology would be investigated; and a vast addition would be made to the sum of human knowledge. By the Spitzbergen route there is the bare chance of doing little. By the Smith Sound route there is the certainty of doing much. It is not by poking about in pack-ice at a distance from land, but by carefully examining hundreds of miles of coast-line, that the most useful work is to be done in the unknown region. Moreover, all observations by the Spitzbergen route would be limited to a few weeks in the summer, whereas the Smith Sound expedition would obtain lengthened, valuable, and complete series.

It will be remembered that the more complete exploration of Gilies and Franz-Josef Lands, and the chance of attaining a higher latitude than has yet been reached on those meridians, are points of interest which are offered by the Spitzbergen route. But they are not of sufficient importance to occupy a Government scientific expedition, and might be left to private enterprise. These are laurels which will rightfully belong to such men as Mr. Leigh Smith, who has so perseveringly and gallantly striven to win them.

The more complete and extensive exploration of the unknown area by Smith Sound must, on the other hand, be achieved by a Government expedition, because thorough preparation and equipment are

essential, and because, in the case of large bodies of men passing through an Arctic winter, naval discipline and naval *esprit de corps* are absolutely necessary. The enterprise, though feasible and devoid of undue risk, is one of vast proportions. It is one which, while requiring all the highest qualities of seamen to conduct successfully, and involving dangers and hardships to individuals such as it is the pride of our naval men to laugh at and overcome, is yet absolutely free from a chance of any such catastrophe as overtook Sir John Franklin and his gallant crews. There is great abundance of excellent animal food up Smith Sound. The climate is exceptionally healthy; and though the officers and men who volunteer for this arduous service will be exposed to individual dangers and privations, which will test their high qualities to the utmost, there is no more chance of a disaster to the whole expedition, and far less danger of sickness, than on any other station frequented by the ships of our navy. No work can be conceived more important to science, more useful to our navy, and more worthy of being undertaken by our Government. 'The navy,' said Admiral Sherard Osborn in 1865, 'the navy needs some action to wake it up from the sloth of routine, and save it from the canker of prolonged peace. The navy of England cries not for mere war

to gratify its desire for honourable employment or fame. There are other achievements as glorious as a victorious battle; and a wise ruler and a wise people will be careful to satisfy a craving which is the life-blood of a profession. Upon these grounds, as well as those of scientific results, would it be too much to ask for a fraction of the vast sum yearly sunk in naval expenditure for two small steamers and 120 officers and men? The people of England have answered this question in the same spirit which has led to discoveries and brilliant achievements on almost every part of the earth's surface during the last four centuries.

There were only two objections that could be raised to Arctic exploration: namely, that the danger is so great that, although it has been faced and overcome by our ancestors during three centuries, it is not justifiable to expose the seamen of the present generation to it: and that the expense could not rightly be incurred.

I will first deal with the question of danger, and will quote the evidence of one of the most distinguished medical officers<sup>1</sup> who has served in the Arctic

<sup>1</sup> Dr. J. J. L. Donnet, M.D., Deputy Inspector General of Hospitals and Fleets. This warm hearted and accomplished officer was Surgeon on board H. M. S. 'Assistance,' in the Arctic Expedition of 1850-51.

regions to prove that 'of all seas visited by men-of-war the Arctic have proved the most healthy.'

'This assertion,' he continues, 'though startling in itself, will find ready credence when it is considered that the precautions necessary to guard against the evils which man encounters in these seas are well and accurately known, and when, from an examination of the tables below, the mortality will be seen to be 1·7 per cent. only.

'The North Polar expeditions which have left the shores of England under the directions of the Admiralty since the ill-fated one commanded by Sir John Franklin have, by the improvements of Arctic travel, by the superior quality and ample quantity of provisions, by the system of warming and of ventilation, given substantial proofs of the truth of this assertion; and the evils which have hitherto been considered as inherent to these seas have, by this advance of knowledge, been dispelled, and men enter upon them with a spirit of enterprise and of love, and may do so with as little dread as those who seek a summer cruise to the shores of the Mediterranean or the Baltic. The real terrors of Arctic voyages were scurvy and starvation. Scurvy, the scourge of the navy in days gone by, is but little known now. Instances of this disease have occurred in several of the late expeditions, but none have presented those



characters which, in former times, caused scurvy to be dreaded as plague and cholera are now.

‘The expedition commanded by M<sup>c</sup>Clure was more than three years absent before the first death from scurvy occurred. In Kane’s expedition three men died in the space of two years. It will scarcely be credited that the crew of this expedition depended solely upon salt meat and a small supply of fresh vegetables; and had it not been for the resources of their winter quarters—under the 79th parallel—they must all have succumbed to scurvy. McClintock’s expedition, consisting of about the same number of souls as Kane’s, and absent about the same length of time, had but one death from scurvy; and this was in great measure due to the poor fellow himself, the subject of it, who refused to take the remedies which were offered to him in abundance.

‘Neither Kane’s nor McClintock’s were Government expeditions, and their crews had not been subjected to any medical examination to test their fitness for Arctic service.

‘It is to the advanced stage of knowledge in naval hygiene; to the attention paid to the cleanliness, warmth, and ventilation of the ships; to the good quality of provisions, and especially to the preservation of cheerfulness among the crews, that this immunity from scurvy is due; and so rare has



it become that the naval surgeons, who possess any knowledge of this disease, derived from actual observation among the crews of royal ships, may be counted upon one's fingers.

'The starvation which caused so much suffering to the men forming Franklin's land expedition, and which it is feared was chiefly instrumental in sweeping away the crews forming his last, can only again occur through some unforeseen and unavoidable accident, such as may happen in the temperate or torrid zone.

'The expedition which will leave the shores of England in the spring of 1875, for the exploration of the North by the proposed way of Smith Sound, will find exceptionally large resources of animal life on the shores of this sound; for it has been proved by Kane, Hayes, and Hall, that walruses, seals, bears, musk oxen and reindeer, besides visitors of the feathered tribe, which flock to these parts during the summer season, are found in abundance on these shores. The route to the North Pole by Smith Sound, with the resources of its shores, and with the great advantage of having *terra firma* to fall back upon, has therefore a superiority over other routes.

'In every sea casualties will occur, but in the Arctic those which have been noted during the last quarter of a century, have been few and far between,

and they have arisen chiefly from frost-bites, from which one death alone is recorded. Of those diseases which swell the bills of mortality in England, especially of that class termed zymotic, which includes typhus, typhoid, small-pox, &c., none are known. Chest diseases are ignored among those forming these expeditions, for though deaths have occurred from consumption, the germs have been brought to and not engendered in these seas. It is a circumstance worthy of note that those who suffered from bronchial affections each winter in England, were exempted from them whilst in the Arctic.

‘The power of resisting cold is remarkable in the Arctic regions; this power of resistance was observed by Wrangell in the Jakuts, the “iron men of Siberia,” of whom he says: “I have seen them frequently in the severe cold of this country, and when the fire had been long extinguished, and the light jacket had slipped off their shoulders, sleeping quietly, completely exposed to the heavens, with scarcely any clothing on, and their bodies covered with a thick coat of rime.” The precautions to be taken in these seas are well known; but the chief and the most important is to preserve, by every possible means, cheerfulness of mind among the crew. This contented state of mind is the best guard against scurvy, and upon it is mainly dependent the efficiency of an Arctic expedition.

‘The following tables of the Government searching expeditions which wintered out, between 1848 and 1854, will show the remarkably small percentage of deaths arising from all causes :—

SHIPS	Winters out	Complement	Mean for Winter	Addition of time spent on outward and homeward passage, two months for each winter	Mean corrected
Plover . . . . .	3	60	= 180	+ 30	= 210
Enterprise . . . . .	4	70	= 280	+ 47	= 327
Investigator . . . . .	5	65	= 325	+ 54	= 379
Assistanceo . . . . .	3	90	= 270	+ 45	= 315
Resolute . . . . .	3	90	= 270	+ 45	= 315
Lady Franklin and Sophia .	1	75	= 75	+ 12	= 87
North Star . . . . .	3	70	= 210	+ 35	= 245
					1,878

	No. of Deaths	
In Ross's Expedition . . . . .	7	No. of Men, 1,878 Deaths, 32 Percentage of Deaths, 1·7
„ Austin's do. . . . .	1	
„ Kellett's do. . . . .	6	
„ Belcher's do. . . . .	3	
„ Plover's (uncertain) . . . . .	3	
„ Penny's Expedition . . . . .	0	
„ North Star (both expeditions)	3	
„ Collinson's . . . . .	3	
„ McClure's . . . . .	5 or 6	
Total of Deaths . . . . .	32	

‘The risk by climate and disease which is there-

fore run in a voyage to the Arctic seas—such as a Royal Expedition necessitates—is not greater than that which a ship like the “Challenger” will incur in her voyage of discovery.’

So much for dangers arising from climate. But it has been urged that although the climate may be healthy, the navigation is too dangerous for seamen of this generation to encounter. The answer to this is, that Baffin’s Bay is annually navigated by ten or a dozen whalers, and that, since the introduction of steam, no casualties, involving loss of life, have occurred; while the little ‘Polaris,’ a vessel wholly unfitted for such service, went up Smith Sound, in 1871, as far as  $82^{\circ} 16' N.$  and returned. Sir John Franklin’s expedition consisted of two sailing ships, with auxiliary steam-power of a very imperfect nature, and both in that respect, as well as in their general equipment, stores, and provisioning, they fell far short of what an Arctic expedition of the present day would have at command; but subsequent events reveal to us that this expedition succeeded in making one of the most remarkable Arctic voyages on record, and that the explorers perished, after abandoning their ships, at a position near the entrance of the Great Fish River, where, had proper foresight been exercised, they could easily have been rescued. Subsequent experience has shown that the fatal omission which led to this catastrophe was the want of proper

depôts of provisions being arranged so as to cover the escape of the crews, in the event of disaster to the ships: a measure of precaution which, since that disaster, has always been carefully provided for in all subsequent expeditions with signal success.

The conclusion to be derived from former experience is, that with the introduction of steam-power in Arctic ships, and the remarkable improvements in victualling them, navigation in the Polar seas has been rendered comparatively safe; while those maladies can be warded off, from which seamen suffered in ancient times. Hence, during the searches for Franklin, officers and men sought Arctic service as the most popular employment in the navy. There is no doubt that private expeditions, without naval discipline, inefficiently equipped, and inadequately provisioned, are exposed to great dangers; but so they would be in all other parts of the world. It is for this reason that all officers, with Arctic experience, insist upon the necessity for a Government naval expedition, and for officers and men being under naval discipline and control. In this view Mr. Robeson, the American Secretary to the Navy, now fully concurs. In his recent report to the President, after examining the rescued men of the 'Polaris,' he emphatically says, that 'there is little of either success or safety in any expedition which is not organised,

prosecuted, and controlled under the sanctions of military discipline.'

The dangers of Arctic navigation are thoroughly understood; and those who are best acquainted with them, through long practical experience, are the best, indeed the only authorities as to their nature. Sir George Back is not the man to advocate the exposure of his professional brethren to undue risks. No one knows better what those risks are than the brave officer who battled so long with the Spitzbergen ice, who starved with Franklin on the barren lands of Arctic America, and who wintered in the moving pack. Nor are Collinson, Ommanney, Richards, McClintock, Sherard Osborn, Vesey Hamilton, or George Nares the men to give foolhardy advice. Yet all are unanimous in the opinion that, with modern appliances and by working in the light of former experience, there is no undue danger in Arctic service: provided that the expedition is under naval discipline and Government control.

I owe an apology to all my readers for having dwelt so fully upon this disgraceful objection to Arctic exploration; but it has been seriously urged, and it must, therefore, be presumed that, in this generation, there are persons in England who, it is supposed, would be influenced by it. To such men, if they really exist, the answer is, that even if the dangers were such as they describe, Englishmen



have faced them before, and will do so again and again. These danger-mongers are willing enough that their countrymen should face far greater dangers to obtain the comforts and luxuries they require. Let them be told that the pursuit of knowledge is at least as good a motive for incurring risks as the pursuit after their luxuries, and that the words of good Sir Humphrey Gilbert have not yet come to be looked upon by his countrymen as other than wise and true:—‘He is not worthy to live at all, who, for fear and danger of death, shunneth his country’s service or his own honour, since death is inevitable and the fame of virtue immortal.’

At all events, for very shame, let them not seek for arguments from the ‘Erebus’ and ‘Terror,’ but rather read and benefit by the following noble letter, written in 1865, by the widow of the gallant Franklin:—

‘My dear Sir Roderick,—Although I have little doubt you know from some of our mutual friends that they have written to me on the subject of the Polar Expedition, yet I cannot leave it to them alone to tell you how very deeply I sympathise with the proposed effort, and how sincerely I wish it may be realised. For the credit and honour of England, the exploration of the North Pole should not be left to any other country. . . .

‘I am sending you these lines because I do not



wish you to think it possible that my interest can flag in anything connected with Arctic enterprise; and though, at first, sad memories of the past made me feel some sickness of heart at the revival of the question, I have struggled against that weakness, and overcome it. . . . It would, indeed, be unreasonable, and much to be deplored, if the fate of my dear husband and his companions were to be made an official objection to all future Arctic exploration. *They* met with the unhappy end which too often befalls the pioneers of tentative and dangerous enterprise, but they rest alone in their awful calamity. Every succeeding expedition sailed with better ships, better equipments, better charts, better supports, and with ever-increasing knowledge; and thus it has happened that no naval service on the face of the globe exhibits, on the average, so few casualties as that in the Polar Seas. You have justly said, that "in the proposed expedition no such calamity can be dreaded, for it has no analogy to the case of Franklin."

‘JANE FRANKLIN.’

The question of expense was really the only one which the Government has had to consider; and, in the first place, it must be borne in mind that only one expedition is necessary; the fact of the second vessel being stationed within easy annual communi-

ation with England, and other precautions that will be taken, entirely precluding the possibility of its becoming necessary, even under the most unfortunate and improbable combination of circumstances, to despatch such expeditions hereafter. This can be proved to demonstration, and must silence the grumblers who croak about one expedition leading to another and another. At the same time a despatch vessel ought to be sent out, each summer, to keep up communication between the expedition and England, and to bring home invalids.

The cost of the expedition, consisting of two screw steamers, with sixty men each, alone had to be considered. McClintock's voyage in the 'Fox' cost 8,400*l.* Parry's attempt to reach the Pole, in 1827, cost 9,900*l.* Besides the original cost of ships and outfit, the Arctic expedition of 1875 may cost from 40,000*l.* to 50,000*l.* a year, for three years, but the ships, on their return, will fetch a good price. If the solution of the greatest geographical problem that remains to be solved, and the attainment of numerous important scientific results, had not been considered worth the expenditure of so trifling a sum—an expenditure which will be richly and abundantly repaid—the character of the English people, as represented by their rulers, would have been strangely altered. Certain it is that our forefathers would have held that such a sum, appro-

interest can  
e enterprise;  
he past made  
revival of the  
weakness, and  
be unreason-  
e fate of my  
re to be made  
ic exploration.  
hich too often  
dangerous enter-  
awful calamity.  
ith better ships,  
etter supports,  
and thus it has  
the face of the  
few casualties as  
justly said, that  
ch calamity can  
to the case of

NE FRANKLIN.'

ally the only one  
onsider; and, in  
mind that only  
et of the second  
annual communi-

apropriated for such an end, was money well spent. There was good reason for the belief that, when the subject received full and fair consideration, the public opinion of the country would approve the despatch of an Arctic expedition, and heartily concur in the propriety of appropriating the necessary sum for so useful and important an object. At present, including the cost of the 'Challenger,' the expenditure for the scientific branch of the naval service is wretchedly inadequate. The total tonnage of the British mercantile marine in 1871-1872 was 7,142,894; and the total effective naval expenditure was 7,807,946*l.*; while the expenditure for the surveying branch was 70,456*l.* In other words—the total effective naval expenditure per ton of British merchant shipping was 1*l.* 1*s.* 11*d.*; and the proportion of expenditure on surveying and scientific investigation, per ton of British merchant shipping, was 2*d.*; while the proportion of each 1,000*l.* of total effective naval expenditure spent on surveying and exploring in the same year was only 9*l.*, or less than 1 per cent. This is deplorable, and it is a state of things which has been getting worse year by year. In the days of Sir Francis Baring, or from 1849 to 1853, the proportion of each 1,000*l.* of naval expenditure spent on surveying and exploring averaged 15*l.* 5*s.*; and it ought now to be at least as high; for, in time of peace, such service is the most useful that

can be performed. Surely, then, it was not much to expect that this infinitesimal proportion should be almost imperceptibly augmented, in order that an important and valuable service might be performed.

The results to be derived from Arctic exploration, will be enumerated in the following chapter.

## CHAPTER XV.

## RESULTS OF AN ARCTIC EXPEDITION.

THE results of scientific importance to be derived from an examination of the unknown area, of 2,500,000 square miles, round the North Pole are as numerous as the region to be explored is extensive. It may be shown that no such extent of unknown area, in any part of the world, ever failed to yield results of practical as well as of purely scientific value; and it may safely be urged that as the area exists, which is mathematically certain, it is impossible that its examination can fail to add largely to the sum of human knowledge. Further it is necessary to bear in mind that the Polar area is, in many most important respects, of an altogether special character, affording exclusive opportunities of observing the condition of the earth's surface, and physical phenomena under certain extreme and singular circumstances, which are due to the relation of this area to the position of the axis of revolution of the terrestrial spheroid, and which have to be considered, not only

with reference to the present time, but to the earth's past history. It may be received as certain that discoveries will be made in all branches of science the exact nature of which cannot be anticipated.

But there are also numerous results, the attainment of which makes it desirable to despatch an Arctic expedition of discovery, that can be definitively enumerated.

Foremost among them is the subject of geographical discovery. A problem of great importance and interest will be solved by completing the circuit of Greenland, ascertaining the extent and nature of its northern coast, exploring the land to the westward, and discovering the conditions of land and sea in that portion of the unknown area. A very noble and unmistakeably English work is this. To use the words of Sir Edward Sabine, who himself took no small share in such work in former days:—'It is the greatest geographical achievement which can be attempted, and will be the crowning enterprise of those Arctic researches in which our country has hitherto had the pre-eminence.'

The science of hydrography will be advanced, and some of its chief problems connected with equatorial and polar currents will be solved, by an Arctic expedition. It is surely a matter of deep interest to discover the actual condition of this secluded ocean, which has never yet been cut by the keel of mortal

ship. The hydrography of the unknown sea has a most important bearing on the general question of oceanic currents, a question which is of practical consequence to navigation. Our knowledge of the general systems of currents will continue to be very incomplete without an investigation of the currents and deep sea temperatures in the unknown area.

A series of pendulum observations on and near the North Pole will be of essential service to the science of geodesy. Such observations, conducted by Sir Edward Sabine at M lville Island, on the east coast of Greenland, and at Spitzbergen, were among the most valuable results of former Arctic expeditions. Their extension farther north, and to the Pole itself, is a great desideratum. Neither the data for forming a mathematical theory of the physical condition of the earth, nor the means of testing such a theory, are complete without experimental determinations of the intensity, as well as the direction of the force of gravity. Mr. Miller, in a letter to Sir Edward Sabine, lately observed that 'the pendulum observations made by yourself and by Captain Foster would probably be amply sufficient for the determination of the form of the earth, if its surface, and that of every stratum of invariable density, were surfaces of revolution, as has been assumed. Lately, however, doubt has been thrown upon the correctness of this assumption. The importance, therefore, of the determination of the earth's ellipticity in a meridian widely removed



from the spots at which pendulum observations have been previously made is greatly increased.' The North Pole is upwards of 600 miles from the nearest point at which the pendulum was swung by Sir Edward Sabine. Thus pendulum observations made by a Polar expedition will be a very valuable contribution to our knowledge of the earth's figure. That knowledge cannot be complete as long as it rests merely on geodetic and astronomical measurements; for both these are essentially connected with the direction of local gravity, and therefore with the distribution and density of the subjacent materials. To obtain any reliable notions of these, Dr. Robinson, of the Armagh Observatory, remarks, 'We can only look to pendulum experiments.'<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The pendulum experiments made by Sir Edward Sabine at many widely separated stations showed that the number of vibrations which a pendulum makes *per diem* is not the same in different parts of the earth. It makes about 240 more vibrations in a day at Spitzbergen than it does when near the Equator, because the force of gravity is greater there. If gravity be very small indeed, the motion of the pendulum will be exceedingly sluggish. Thus, it measures the gravity at different parts of the earth. The proportion of gravity near the Pole to gravity at the Equator is as 180 to 179. Pendulum experiments give the law of change of gravity, and enable us to infer what is the ellipticity of the earth, provided the law of gravitation be true. If the ellipticity, thus found, agrees with that calculated from trigonometrical surveys, it will be a strong proof of the correctness of the law of gravitation. Both methods give a proportion of about 300 : 299. Pendulum observations also afford the means of determining the force of gravity at any place.—See Airy's 'Astronomy,' p. 248.

The extension of research in the phenomena of magnetism and atmospheric electricity, in the vicinity of the Pole, will necessarily be of much scientific importance. So far as the conditions of the climate and the means of an exploring expedition will permit, investigations in all branches of physics in the vicinity of the Pole, where so many of the forces of nature operate in an extreme degree—either of excess or defect—will surely be followed by the acquisition of knowledge which can only be obtained in such exceptional localities.

The study of the Aurora, which is among the most striking phenomena visible on our planet, is almost impossible in low latitudes, while the advance of spectrum analysis has given the means of determining the chemical elements involved, so that all that seems to be required is the means of applying this description of observation, and this can only be secured near the Pole. Mr. Norman Lockyer has pointed out that the separation of the terrestrial lines from the truly solar ones, in the solar spectrum, as seen from the earth's surface, is another important desideratum. But inquiry into it can only be well pursued in high latitudes, where the path of the sun, at low altitudes above the horizon, gives opportunities for the necessary observations, not to be secured elsewhere.

The climate of Europe depends, in no small degree, on the atmospheric conditions of the polar area,

in which the development of extremely low temperatures necessarily leads to corresponding extreme changes of pressure, and other atmospheric disturbances, the effect of which is felt far into the temperate zone. For the satisfactory appreciation of these phenomena a precise knowledge of the distribution of land and water within the Polar region is quite necessary, and any addition to our geographical knowledge of the unknown region, accompanied by suitable observations of its meteorology, cannot fail to afford improved means of understanding the meteorology of our own country, and of the earth generally.

Observations of the temperature of the sea at various depths; of temperature and pressure of the atmosphere; and of prevailing winds, with reference to currents, in very high latitudes, will, therefore, form valuable contributions to meteorological science. It may be added that, although all previous observations for temperature at great depths are of doubtful value, owing to the imperfections of the instruments, this defect has now been provided against. The present state of meteorology requires a more thorough investigation of the motions of the earth's atmosphere than has yet been undertaken; and for this important object the less frequented parts of the earth's surface should be studied as well as the most frequented. The hygrometric quality of the

air is one that it is most desirable to note by long series of observations in polar latitudes, as an aid in determining the movements of air, similar to that which temperature affords in tracing the currents of the ocean. Meteorological phenomena never yet seen by mortal eye will be observed by the bold explorers who reach the Pole. They will see the sun revolving with a uniform altitude from the day it comes north of the Equator in March until it returns in September, its altitude being equal to its declination.

The Arctic Committee of the Geological Society have reported that a more complete investigation of the geology of the Arctic regions is extremely desirable, both for its scientific importance and the value of its practical results. The existence of a true palæozoic coal formation has been determined, but we require to know its extent and composition. A long list of minerals, many of them extremely rare and valuable, have been found in extreme northern latitudes, and much attention should be paid to their further distribution. Masses of meteoric iron have been recently discovered by the Swedish expedition, extending for a distance of no less than 200 miles; these require further study, and their position determined.

The existence of carboniferous, jurassic, and miocene rocks is known, but much is needed to be

done to obtain complete collections of their organic remains. One of the most interesting facts of late years acquired to geological science has been that of a luxuriant and highly organised vegetation of miocene age on the east coast of Greenland, no less than 200 species having been established. Equally important additions have been successively made by the supply of materials for the more certain determination of the large number of species that before could be only provisionally recognised. It is of great importance that determinations based on fragments of leaves should be confirmed by the acquisition of more perfect foliage, as well as of seeds and fruits; such materials would be of great value in illustrating a flora which is in itself of much interest, but this interest is vastly increased when one realises the important inquiries on which such knowledge would throw light. These inquiries are:—

1. The geographical distribution of the miocene flora, as indicated by the agreements and differences between the miocene plants of Arctic Regions and of Central and Southern Europe.
2. The relation of the miocene flora to previous and subsequent vegetations, and its bearings on the present geographical distribution of plants on the globe.
3. The evidence derived from these plants as to the physical conditions of the globe in past geological epochs.

It is likely that additional localities for fossil plants will be discovered, and of necessity additional species be brought to light; for, in the past, such remains have been found as far as explorers have penetrated.

From the important part extreme cold has of late years been found to have played in the last geological period, it would be of much value to have exact determinations of the effect produced on the rocks by the intense cold of the northern regions, and to determine the extent, height, and range of the glaciers, and their effects on the surface of the country, and on the different classes of rocks. Again, it would be interesting to determine the extent of the river floods, and the depths of the channels they have excavated in the Arctic Regions.

Another important and interesting result of the proposed Arctic Expedition would be the investigation of the mollusca, not only of marine, but also of land and freshwater kinds. Of late years that enterprising and scientific nation, Sweden, has done something to increase our scanty knowledge of the Arctic marine shells; but their resources were limited, and not to be compared with those of our own nation. In a geological as well as a zoological point of view, a proper investigation of Arctic Mollusca would be especially valuable.

The palæontological basis of the glacial epoch



consists mainly in the identity of certain species which inhabit the Polar Seas and are fossil in Great Britain and elsewhere. But such species may owe their present habitat and position to other than climatal causes, viz. to the action of marine currents. It is quite a mistake to assume that Arctic species are few in number. We know very little about them, because the exploration of the circumpolar seas by means of the dredge is so difficult. But the researches of the Scandinavian zoologists show that the Arctic marine invertebrate fauna is extremely varied and numerous. All fossils should be diligently collected, and their positions accurately noted. The former condition of the climate of the Arctic regions may be thus ascertained, and a new chapter opened in the history of our globe. The mineralogy of the Greenland continent is also important, and the discovery of new veins of cryolite and other valuable minerals is not improbable.

The botanical results of a Polar expedition will be of equal importance. The vegetation of the Arctic regions, in the opinion of Dr. Hooker, throws great light upon the geographical distribution of plants on the surface of the globe. On the return of Sir Edward Belcher's expedition from those regions, a series of rocks collected in the neighbourhood of Disco, by his former fellow-voyager, Dr. Lyall, was placed in Dr. Hooker's hands, containing



an accumulation of fossil leaves of plants totally different from any now growing in that latitude. These fossils he forwarded to Professor O. Heer, of Zurich, for investigation, who had brought forward the most convincing proofs that that latitude was once inhabited by extensive forests, presenting fifty or sixty different species of arborescent trees, most of them with deciduous leaves, some 3 or 4 inches in diameter—the elm, pine, oak, maple, plane, &c.; and, what was more remarkable still, evidences of apparently evergreen trees, showing that these regions must have had perennial light. It seemed extremely probable that the vegetation which belonged to the Miocene period extended over a large portion of the Northern Arctic region. It would be of great interest to ascertain whether such vegetation extended even to the Pole; and there is nothing that would give greater assistance in solving this problem than the proposed expedition along Smith Sound. Turning to the existing flora of Greenland, Dr. Hooker has pointed out that, though one of the most poverty-stricken on the globe, it is possessed of unusual interest. It consists of some 300 kinds of flowering plants (besides a very large number of mosses, algæ, lichens, &c.), and presents the following peculiarities:—1. The flowering plants are almost without exception natives of the Scandinavian peninsula. 2. There is in the Greenland

flora scarcely any admixture of American types, which nevertheless are found on the opposite coast of Labrador and the Parry Islands. 3. A considerable proportion of the common Greenland plants are nowhere found in Labrador and the Parry Islands, nor, indeed, elsewhere in the New World. 4. The parts of Greenland south of the Arctic Circle, though warmer than those north of it, and presenting a coast of 400 miles long, contain scarcely any plants not found to the north of that circle. 5. A considerable number of Scandinavian plants which are not natives of Greenland are nevertheless natives of Labrador and the Parry Islands. 6. Certain Greenland and Scandinavian plants which are nowhere found in the polar plains, Labrador, or Canada, re-appear at considerable elevations on the White and the Alleghany and other mountains of the United States. No other flora known to naturalists presents such a remarkable combination of peculiar features as this, and the only solution hitherto offered is not yet fully accepted. It is that the Scandinavian flora (which Dr. Hooker has shown evidence of being one of the oldest on the globe) did, during the warm period preceding the glacial—a period warmer than the present—extend in force over the polar regions, including Greenland, the polar American Islands, and, probably, much now submerged land in places connecting or lying

between Greenland and Scandinavia; at which time Greenland no doubt presented a much richer Scandinavian flora than it now does. On the accession of the glacial period, this flora would be driven slowly southwards, down to the extremity of the Greenland peninsula in its longitude, and down to the latitude of the Alleghanies and White Mountains in their longitudes. The effect in Greenland would be to leave there only the more Arctic forms of vegetation, unchanged in habits or features; the rest being, as it were, driven into the sea. But the effect on the American continent would be to bring the Scandinavian flora into competition with an American flora that pre-occupied the land into which it was driven. On the decline of the glacial epoch, Greenland, being a peninsula, could be re-peopled with plants only by the northward migration of the purely Scandinavian species that had been previously driven into its southern extremity; and the result would be a uniform Scandinavian flora throughout its length, and this an Arctic one, from north to south. But in America a very different state of things would supervene; the Scandinavian plants would not only migrate north, but ascend the Alleghanies, White Mountains, &c.; and the result would be that, on the one hand, many Scandinavian plants which had been driven out of Greenland, but were preserved in the United States, would re-appear

on the Parry Islands and Labrador, accompanied with sundry American mountain types, and, on the other, that a few Greenland-Scandinavian types, which had been lost in the struggle with the American types during their northward migration, and which hence do not re-appear in Labrador and the Parry Islands, might well be preserved in the Alleghanies and White Mountains. And, lastly, that a number of Scandinavian plants, which had changed their form or habit during the migration in America in conflict with the American types, would appear in the Parry Islands as American varieties or representative species of Scandinavian plants. Whether or no this be a true hypothesis, it embraces all the facts; and botanists look anxiously to farther explorations in the northern parts of Greenland for more light on the subject, and especially for evidence of rising or sinking of the land in Smith Sound and the countries north and east of it, and for evidence of ancient connection between Greenland and Scandinavia; for observations on the temperature, direction, and depth of transporting currents in these seas, and on the habits of its ruminant migrating animals that may have influenced the distribution of the vegetation by transporting the seeds. Such facts as those of the existence of ancient forests in what are now Arctic regions, and of the migration of existing floræ over lands now bound fast in per-

petual ice, appear to some naturalists to call for vaster changes than can be brought about by a redistribution of the geographical limits of land and sea, and to afford evidence of changes in the direction of the earth's axis to the plane of its orbit, and perhaps of variations in the ellipticity of the orbit itself.<sup>1</sup>

The specific results in zoology which may be expected from an Arctic expedition are numerous and interesting. It is known that the Arctic ocean teems with life, and that of the more minute organised beings the multitude of kinds is prodigious: these play a most important part, not only in the economy of organic nature, but in the formation of sedimentary deposits, which in future geological periods will become incorporated with these rock formations, whose structure has only lately been explained by the joint labours of zoologists and geologists.

The kinds of these animals, the relations they bear to one another, and to the larger animals (such as whales, seals, &c., towards whose food they so largely contribute), the conditions under which they live, the depths they inhabit, their changes of form,

<sup>1</sup> See Dr. Hooker's paper, 'Outlines of the Distribution of Arctic Plants,' in the 'Transactions of the Linnæan Society,' vol. xxiii. p. 251, for a more detailed account of the Arctic plants, their affinities and distribution.

&c., at different seasons of the year, and at different stages of their lives; and, lastly, their distribution according to geographical areas, warm and cold currents, &c., are all subjects of which very little is known.

With regard to the larger animals—the fish, *mollusca*, *echinodermata*, corals, sponges, &c., of the Arctic zones, those of Greenland alone have been well explored. A knowledge of their habits and habitats is much desiderated, as are good specimens for our museums. More important still would be anatomical and physiological experiments, and observations on those animals under their natural conditions. It is also probable that new species may be found in the unknown north. Here may be the last hiding-place of animals like that curious manatee (*Rhytina*) which was last seen by Steller, in 1741, on Behring's Island. Seas which support whales and seals must be tenanted by myriads of fish and of those minute organisms which are disclosed by the dredging machine, while the presence of walrus tells us of submarine forests of sea-weed.

Professor Newton of Cambridge has drawn attention to some interesting questions relating to the migrations of birds, towards the unknown area. He says:—

‘The shores of the British Islands, and of many other countries in the northern hemisphere, are

to call for  
about by a  
of land and  
the direc-  
orbit, and  
of the orbit

ich may be  
re numerous  
Arctic ocean  
minute orga-  
s prodigious:  
t only in the  
formation of  
are geological  
with these rock  
y lately been  
zoologists and

relations they  
r animals (such  
food they so  
der which they  
anges of form,

istribution of Arctic  
ociety,' vol. xxiii. p.  
ants. their affinities



annually, for a longer or shorter period, frequented by a countless multitude of birds, which, there is every reason to believe, resort in summer to very high northern latitudes, for purposes the most important, and, since they continue the practice year after year, they must find the migration conducive to their advantage. There must be some water which is not always frozen; secondly, there must be some land on which they may set their feet; and thirdly, there must be plenty of food, supplied either by the water or by the land, or by both, for their nourishment, and that of their progeny.

‘It may be worth while to give a short account and to sketch the movements of one species of birds—the Knot—*Tringa canutus* of ornithologists. The knot is something halfway between a snipe and a plover. Examples of it are commonly to be seen in the cage at the southern end of the Fish House in the Zoological Gardens, and may be seen there at the present time. Like many other kinds of birds belonging to the same group, the colour of its plumage varies most wonderfully, according to the season of the year. In summer it is of a bright brick-red; in winter it is of a sober ashy-grey. Kept in confinement, it seldom assumes its most brilliant tints, but some approach to them is generally made. Now the knot comes to this country in vast flocks in spring, and, after remaining on our coasts for about a fort-



night, can be traced proceeding gradually northwards till it takes its departure. People who have been in Iceland and Greenland have duly noted its appearance in those countries; but in neither of them is it known to tarry longer than with us, the summer it would there have to endure is not to its liking; and as we know that it takes no other direction, it must move farther north. We then lose sight of it for some weeks. The older naturalists used to imagine it had been found breeding in all manner of countries, but the naturalists of the present day agree in believing that we know nothing of its nidification. Towards the end of summer back it comes to us in still larger flocks than before, and both old birds and young haunt our coasts till November: if the season be a very open one, some may stay later; but our winter, as a rule, is too much for it, and away it goes southwards, and very far southwards too, till the following spring. What has been said of the United Kingdom is equally true of it on the eastern shores of the United States. There it appears in the same abundance and at the same seasons as with us, and its movements seem to be regulated by the same causes.

‘Hence we may fairly infer that the lands visited by the knot in the middle of summer are less sterile than Iceland and Greenland, or it would hardly pass over those countries, which are known to be the

breeding-places for swarms of water-birds, to resort to regions worse off as regards supply of food. But the supply of food must depend chiefly on the climate. The inference necessarily is that, beyond the northern tracts already explored, there is a region which enjoys in summer a climate more genial than they possess. It would be easy to summon more instances from the same group of birds, tending to show that beyond a zone where a rigorous summer reigns there may be a region endued with a comparatively favourable climate. If so, surely the conditions which produce such a climate are worth investigating.'

The knowledge already acquired of the Arctic regions leads to the conclusion that the discovery of the unknown portion of the Greenland coasts may possibly yield results in the science of anthropology. Although barely one-half of the Arctic region has been explored, yet abundant traces of former inhabitants are found throughout their most desert wastes, where now there is absolute solitude. These wilds have not been inhabited for centuries, yet they are covered with traces of wanderers, or of sojourners, of a bygone age. Here and there, in Greenland, in Boothia, on the shores of America, where existence is possible, the descendants of former wanderers are still to be found. The migrations of these people, the scanty notices of their origin and movements that

are scattered through history, and the requirements of their existence, are all so many clues which, when carefully gathered together, throw light upon a most interesting subject. The migrations of man within the Arctic zone give rise to questions which are closely connected with the geography of the undiscovered portions of the Arctic regions.

The extreme points which exploration has yet reached on the shores of Greenland are in about  $82^{\circ}$  on the west and in  $76^{\circ}$  on the eastern side; and these two points are about 600 miles apart. As there have been inhabitants at both these points, and they are separated by an uninhabitable interval from the settlements farther south, it may be inferred that the unknown interval farther north is or has been inhabited. On the western side of Greenland it was discovered, in 1818, that a small tribe inhabited the rugged coast, between  $76^{\circ}$  and  $79^{\circ}$  N.; their range being bounded on the south by the glaciers of Melville Bay, which bar all progress in that direction, and on the north by the Humboldt Glacier, while the *Sernik-sook*, or great glacier of the interior, confines them to the sea-coast. These 'Arctic Highlanders' number about 140 souls, and their existence depends on open pools and lanes of water throughout the winter, which attract animal life. Hence, it is certain that where such conditions exist man may be found. The question whether the un-

explored coast of Greenland is inhabited, therefore, depends upon the existence of currents and other conditions such as prevail in the northern part of Baffin's Bay. But this question is not even now left entirely to conjecture. It is true that the 'Arctic Highlanders' told Dr. Kane that they knew of no inhabitants beyond the Humboldt Glacier, and this is the farthest point which was indicated by Kalahierua (the native lad who was on board the 'Assistance') on his wonderfully accurate chart. But neither did the Esquimaux of Upernavik know anything of natives north of Melville Bay until the first voyage of Sir John Ross. Yet now we know that there either are or have been inhabitants north of the Humboldt Glacier, on the extreme verge of the unknown region; for Morton (Dr. Kane's steward) found the runner of a sledge made of bone lying on the beach on the northern side of it. There is a tradition, too, among the 'Arctic Highlanders' that there are herds of musk oxen far to the north on an island in an iceless sea. Traces of these were found by Captain Hall's expedition, in 1871-72, as far north as  $81^{\circ} 30' N.$  On the eastern side of Greenland there are similar indications. In 1823 Captain Clavering found twelve natives at Cape Borlase Warren, in  $75^{\circ} N.$ ; but when Captain Koldewey wintered in the same neighbourhood in 1869 none were to be found, though there were abundant traces

of them, and ample means of subsistence. As the Melville Bay glaciers form an impassable barrier, preventing the 'Arctic Highlanders' from wandering southwards on the west side, so the ice-bound coast on the east side, between Scoresby's discoveries and the Danebrog Isles, would prevent the people seen by Clavering from taking a southerly course. The alternative is that, at the time of Koldewey's visit, they must have gone north.

These considerations lead to the conclusion that there are, or have been, inhabitants in the unexplored region to the north of the known parts of Greenland. If this be the case, the study of all the characteristics of a people who have lived for generations in a state of complete isolation would be an investigation of the highest scientific interest.

Light may not improbably be thrown upon the mysterious wanderings of these northern tribes, traces of which are found in every bay and on every cape in the cheerless Parry group; and these wanderings may be found to be the most distant waves of storms raised in far-off centres, and among other races. Many circumstances connected with the still unknown northern tribes may tend to elucidate such inquiries. Thus, if they use the *igloo*, they may be supposed to be kindred of the Greenlanders; snow huts will point to some devious wanderings from Boothian or American shores; while stone *yourts*

would indicate a march from the coast of Siberia, across a wholly unknown region. The method of constructing sledges would be another indication of origin, as would also be the weapons, clothes, and utensils. The study of the language of a long isolated tribe would also tend to elucidate questions of considerable interest; and its points of coincidence and divergence, when compared with Greenland, Labrador, Boothian, and Siberian dialects, will lead to discoveries which, probably, could not otherwise be made. Dr. Hooker has pointed out that the problem connected with the Arctic flora can be solved only by a study of the physical conditions of much higher latitudes than have hitherto been explored. In like manner, the unsolved puzzles connected with the wanderings of man within the Arctic zone may depend for their explanation on the clues to be found in the condition of a tribe or tribes in the far north.

These are speculations which the results gained by Polar discovery would probably, but not certainly, show to be well founded. But there are other investigations which would undoubtedly yield valuable materials for the student of man. Such would be carefully prepared notes on the skulls, the features, the stature, the dimensions of limbs, the intellectual and moral state of individuals belonging to a hitherto isolated and unknown tribe; also on their religious



ideas, on their superstitions, laws, language, songs, and traditions; on their weapons and methods of hunting; and on their skill in delineating the topography of the region within the range of their wanderings.

The condition of an isolated tribe, deprived of the use of wood or metals, and dependent entirely upon bone and stone for the construction of all implements and utensils, is also a subject of study with reference to the condition of mankind in the Stone Age of the world; and a careful comparison of the former, as reported by explorers, with the latter, as deduced from the contents of tumuli and caves, will probably be of great importance in the advancement of the science of man.

But the unknown results of exploration must also have their due weight. Judging from analogy, we may be sure that many of the discoveries of the Polar explorers will be unforeseen and unexpected. The learned President of the American Geographical Society, in June 1871, well said that we do not know and cannot estimate, in anticipation, the consequences that will result from a more accurate knowledge of our globe. 'Columbus,' he added, 'found very few who would sympathise with him, or who perceived the utility of the effort on his part to go out into the unknown waste of waters beyond the Straits of Gibraltar, in search of a new country.



Who can, at this time, estimate the advantages which have followed upon that adventure! It is now it should be possible to reach the Pole, and to make accurate observations at that point, from the relation which the earth bears to the sun and to the whole stellar universe, the most useful results are very likely to follow, in a more thorough knowledge of our own globe.'

An expedition for North Polar discovery by way of Smith Sound will yield most valuable scientific fruits, will involve no undue risks if communication is kept up during each navigable season, and will entail an expenditure which is utterly insignificant when compared with the value of its results. For these reasons, it deserved that cordial support from the people of this country which has induced the Government to undertake it. When it is remembered how beneficial are the indirect advantages invariably derived from voyages of discovery, and how important it is that naval officers, who are breaking their hearts from the impossibility of getting active employment, should have some additional chances opened to them, an interest will be felt in these voyages even by men whose education does not enable them to understand their scientific value. The same enterprise, courage, endurance, and presence of mind are required to conduct an Arctic expedition as to face an enemy in the field; and in the former case these

qualities are merely exercised in advancing civilisation, extending knowledge, and exciting friendly sympathy and interest throughout the world. For a time we have done with wars. Let us hope that we have done with arbitrations. Now, then, is the time for old England to take her place once more in the van of Arctic discovery. 'It can be done, and England means to do it!'

## CHAPTER XVI.

## THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.

## 1. SHERARD OSBORN.

AN Arctic Expedition sailed from England on May 29, 1875, to accomplish many if not all of the objects enumerated in the preceding chapter, and, among them, to reach the North Pole of our earth.

It has taken ten years of work before the People and the Press of England could be educated to the point which would make it politic for the Government to despatch a naval expedition of discovery to cross the threshold, and to explore the unknown region. When M'Clintock returned in the 'Fox' everything was ripe for the renewal of voyages of discovery, the best and most useful work upon which our navy can be employed in time of peace, but the old spirit of adventure could not then be aroused. The officers and men who had developed the modern system of sledge travelling were still in the prime of life, and longing to use the experience they had acquired in the searches for Franklin ; and many of

them felt that at least an effort should be made to obtain the renewal of Arctic discovery.

Seldom has there been a larger and more enthusiastic gathering, at a meeting of the Royal Geographical Society, than on Jan. 23, 1865, when Captain (afterwards Admiral) Sherard Osborn read his first paper on the exploration of the North Polar region.<sup>1</sup> In glowing language he urged the solid reasons for undertaking Arctic discovery, and then explained the direction a Polar Expedition should take with the least risk and the greatest probability of success, the mode in which such an expedition should be conducted, and the scientific results likely to accrue. But the time had not yet come. The same effort was renewed on April 22, 1872, when Sherard Osborn read a second paper; and it was then found that the endeavours made in the interval to familiarise the public with the importance of Arctic exploration had not been without result. He was almost unanimously supported by the Press; and the Council of the Royal Geographical Society appointed an Arctic Committee to consider the best route for an expedition, and the results to be derived from it. On April 29, 1872, the President and Council unanimously adopted the Report of the Committee; and encouraging replies were received to communications addressed to the Royal Geolo-

<sup>1</sup> See 'R. G. S. Journal,' xxxvi. p. 279.

gical, Linnæan, and Scottish Meteorological Societies, and the Anthropological Institute. It was, therefore, resolved to bring the matter before Her Majesty's Government, and it was arranged that a deputation, headed by the President, Sir Henry Rawlinson, should be received by two of the Ministers.

On December 16, 1872, Sherard Osborn, accompanying Sir Henry Rawlinson and a numerous deputation, waited on Mr. Lowe and Mr. Goschen, at the Admiralty, to urge the importance of despatching an Arctic Expedition. After reading a letter, and introducing the subject generally, Sir Henry referred to Captain Osborn for details, who explained that the expedition should consist of two well strengthened screw steamers, with crews of sixty men each, and be provisioned for three years. One vessel would press as far as possible to the northward up Smith Sound, while the other remained within reach of communication with Baffin's Bay; both being engaged in obtaining valuable scientific information within the unknown area. Mr. Lowe said that the subject was one of great interest, and that it should receive careful and mature consideration. But his reply, dated January 1, 1873, was unsatisfactory.

The goal was, however, now in view. A few more well-conceived and vigorous efforts and success would be secured. Sherard Osborn found that the objection

to which official and other persons most obstinately clung, was based on the alleged difficulties and dangers of ice navigation. He therefore came to the conclusion that nothing would more tend to dispel this objection than some practical proof or trial, and that it was essential that a naval officer should proceed to the Arctic Regions in a whaler, and return with a full report of all he had seen and experienced.

He selected for this important service, Commander A. H. Markham, who had been an ardent volunteer for the hoped-for Arctic Expedition when Osborn first raised the question in 1865, and when he was a young lieutenant; and who had ever since taken a deep interest in the efforts for the renewal of Arctic exploration. I have already given some account of the objects and results of Commander Markham's voyage.<sup>1</sup>

In the meanwhile a joint Committee of the Royal Geographical and Royal Societies was appointed to prepare an exhaustive Memorandum on the scientific results to be derived from Arctic exploration, and on the reasons why such researches can best be successfully accomplished by a Naval Expedition despatched under Government auspices, and secured as far as possible from failure or disaster by careful navigation and good discipline. The Committee was composed as follows:—

<sup>1</sup> See pp. 151, 152.

## ROYAL SOCIETY.

Dr. J. D. Hooker, C.B., P.R.S.  
 George Busk, Esq., V.P.R.S.  
 J. Prestwich, Esq., F.R.S.  
 Dr. Carpenter, F.R.S.  
 Dr. Allman, F.R.S.  
 John Evans, Esq., F.R.S.  
 General R. Strachey, C.S.I.,  
 F.R.S.  
 James Fergusson, Esq., F.R.S.

## ROYAL GEOGRAPHICAL SOCIETY.

Admiral Sir George Back, D.C.L.,  
 F.R.S.  
 Admiral Collinson, C.B.  
 Admiral Ommanney, C.B., F.R.S.  
 Admiral Sir Leopold M'Clintock,  
 F.R.S.  
 Admiral Richards, C.B., F.R.S.  
 Admiral S. Osborn, C.B., F.R.S.  
 Clements R. Markham, Esq.,  
 C.B., F.R.S.  
 A. G. Findlay, Esq.

This Committee prepared a joint Memorandum, setting forth the results to be obtained by Arctic discovery, and the best means of securing them.

Strengthened by the results of Commander Markham's voyage, and by the arguments of the Memorandum, the Presidents of the Royal and the Royal Geographical Societies, accompanied by Admiral Sherard Osborn, had a very satisfactory interview with Mr. Disraeli on the 1st of August, 1874; and on the 17th of November the Prime Minister addressed a letter to Sir Henry Rawlinson announcing that Her Majesty's Government had determined to lose no time in organizing a suitable expedition to explore the region of the North Pole. Thus, after ten years of unceasing labour, involving much brain-work, and no small amount of tact and prudent management, the patriotic exertions of Sherard Osborn were crowned with complete success. Much is to be attributed to the gradual preparation of the



public mind by the numerous publications on Arctic matters either written or inspired and encouraged by Osborn; something doubtless to the memorandum of scientific results. But Admiral Osborn always said, and no one had such good means of knowing, that the crowning arguments which turned the scale were derived from the voyage of Commander Markham to Baffin's Bay.

As soon as the Expedition was decided upon, the Admiralty wisely appointed a Committee, consisting of Admirals Richards, Sir L. M'Clintock, and Sherard Osborn, on November 24, 1874, to settle all the details regarding the description of ships to be employed, the various kinds of stores and provisions required, the preparation of boats and sledges, the sanitary arrangements, and the instructions to be given. The Report of the Committee is dated February the 4th, 1875, and was signed after its members had held nineteen meetings. These members were also members of the Arctic Committee of the Royal Geographical Society; and the main recommendations of the Report are identical with those contained in Osborn's paper of 1865. They are, that the ships to be employed should be two screw steam vessels, strengthened and fitted for Arctic service, and capable of carrying stores and provisions for at least three years, and a complement of about sixty men for each ship; a third ship being sent out in the

spring of 1877 for relief, if the expedition has not then returned. The reasons why the Smith Sound route is preferable to any other are then stated to be, first, that its entrance has been found free of ice by several vessels, and that one expedition reached as far as the 82nd parallel; second, that it is known to have a continuous coast-line up to 82° N., where depôts could be placed, and that the Danish settlements can be fallen back upon, from it, in case of disaster; third, it is the only route promising a continuous coast-line far north, on which the prospect of reaching the Pole by travelling parties mainly depends; and fourth, animal life is abundant up Smith Sound. The Committee then recommend that the expedition should sail in about the middle of June or earlier; that it should touch at Disco and at Proven and Upernivik for dogs; that Lyttleton Island near the entrance of Smith Sound should be fixed upon as a rendezvous, where records should be left; and that the ships should then proceed up Smith Sound, erecting cairns and leaving records on conspicuous points, not more than sixty miles apart. Capes Frazer, Back, and Beechey on the western, and Capes Jackson and Bryan on the eastern shore are named. It is recommended that, while both ships should share in the objects of discovery and exploration, one should be so placed that she would serve for the crew of the other to fall back upon, and that the united crews, if

their ships are still detained by the ice, could retreat to the relief-ship at the entrance of Smith Sound in 1877. Consequently the second ship must not go northward of the 82nd parallel. It is suggested that as soon as the winter quarters of the second ship are selected the leader of the Expedition might take a portion of her crew to enable him to accomplish a sledging attempt to reach the Pole. It is not contemplated that the two ships should winter at a greater distance apart than 200 miles; and they are to be abandoned if their extrication is doubtful during the navigable season of 1877. All points connected with provisions and clothing were considered by the Committee, with the aid of Dr. Lyall and Mr. James Lewis, Paymaster, R.N., both officers of Arctic experience; and the sledge equipments were left to Sir Leopold M'Clintock, as well as the sanitary arrangements on board the ships. But the Committee urge that all possible measures should be taken to secure warmth, ventilation, and the absence of condensed vapour between decks. One great advantage enjoyed by the Arctic Expedition has been that Sir Leopold M'Clintock was Admiral Superintendent of Portsmouth dockyard at the time of fitting out, and that thus all the gear was fitted and arrangements made by the highest living authority on sledge-travelling.

Osborn had been visited by much home affliction

while the Arctic Committee was sitting. His brother, Captain Noel Osborn, R.N., a good officer, who served in the 'North Star' in the Arctic Regions, died suddenly on January 23, 1875, and almost at the same time he lost one of his brothers-in-law. He had also been overtasked by brain-work of various kinds. Still the fitting out of the Arctic Expedition was an object of deep interest to him, such as had the power to divert his thoughts from painful subjects. In it he lived his old enthusiastic life again. It was, in very fact, his creation; and he took the most affectionate interest in the young aspirants to Arctic fame. On Monday, May 3, he came down to Portsmouth, and was constantly on board the ships on that and the two following days, examining into all the details, making the acquaintance of those officers whom he had not known before, and doing many acts of thoughtful kindness.

On the evenings of Monday and Tuesday he received several of the officers at dinner at his hotel, told them his experiences and many pleasant stories of Arctic life, and renewed the memory of past days, while encouraging them with hopes of future success. His bright and cheery smile and friendly words will long be remembered by his young successors in Arctic work. It was a happy time for him—those three days—and, in our grief and regret at what was so fearfully close at hand, it is a consolation

to think of them. He returned to London on Wednesday. On Thursday, May 6, he was well and busily employed at the Admiralty, at the Athenæum, and in Saville Row during the day. He went out to dinner, was taken ill at half-past eight with heart disease, became insensible after three quarters of an hour, and died at about ten.

Sherard Osborn was buried at Highgate Cemetery on Monday, May 10, 1875, and many Arctic officers and other old messmates followed his body to the grave. The Expedition was represented by Captains Nares and Stephenson, Commander Markham, Lieutenants Parr, Giffard, and Rawson, and Sub-Lieutenant Egerton.

The loss of its truest and wisest friend is a calamity to the Arctic Expedition. Sherard Osborn, if he had been spared, would have devoted all the energies of his mind to furthering the interests of the absent explorers. His great influence, his tact and prudence, his powers of persuasion, and, when necessary, of denunciation, and his intimate knowledge and appreciation of the work, would have constituted him a friend of inestimable value. It was a calamity, but it was not one that should have cast any gloom over the departure of the Arctic ships. Osborn had lived long enough to secure the despatch of the Expedition, to take part in all the preparations, and to wish God-speed to his gallant

young successors in Arctic exploits. The explorers will think of him as of one who has completed his work nobly and manfully, and, in seeking to emulate his deeds, his memory will be a source, not altogether of regret, but also of pleasure and admiration.<sup>1</sup>

Another loss, which many of the officers of the Arctic Expedition, together with the whole Navy, will deeply feel, took place soon after the Expedition sailed. In Commodore Goodenough they lost a true and fast friend. He had always, since 1865, taken a deep interest in the renewal of Arctic exploration, and he then induced Commander Markham, at that time a young lieutenant in the 'Victoria,' to volunteer for Arctic service. He saw that such service was conducive to the interests of the Navy. There are none in the Navy who will mourn the loss of their old captain more deeply than some of our Arctic explorers when, hereafter, they receive the sad news. Commander Markham and Lieutenants Parr and May were with him in the 'Victoria,' Lieutenant Rawson and Mr. White in the 'Mino-taur.'<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For a life of Sherard Osborn, see the *Geographical Magazine* for June, 1875.

<sup>2</sup> For a notice of Commodore Goodenough's life and services, see the *Geographical Magazine* for October and November, 1875.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.

## 2. THE EQUIPMENT.

THE ships of the Arctic Expedition were commissioned on April 15, 1875, and the following is a list of the officers:—

## H.M.S. 'ALERT.'

(751 tons, 100-horse-power.)

<i>Captain</i>	.	.	George Strong Nares, F.R.S., F.R.G.S.
<i>Commander</i>	.	.	Albert Hastings Markham, F.R.G.S.
<i>Lieutenant</i>	.	.	Pellham Aldrich.
"	.	.	Alfred A. Chase Parr.
"	.	.	George A. Giffard.
"	.	.	William H. May ( <i>navigating duties</i> ).
"	.	.	George Le Clerc Egerton <sup>1</sup> ( <i>duties of paymaster</i> ).
<i>Fleet-Surgeon</i>	.	.	Thomas Colan, M.D.
<i>Surgeon</i>	.	.	Edward L. Moss, M.D.
<i>Engineer</i>	.	.	James Wootton.
"	.	.	George White.
<i>Naturalist</i>	.	.	Henry W. Fielden, Capt. R.A., F.R.G.S.
<i>Chaplain</i>	.	.	Rev. W. H. Pullen.

<sup>1</sup> Lieutenant Egerton went out as a sub-lieutenant, but was promoted to the rank of lieutenant on October 15, 1875, and re-appointed to the 'Alert.'



## H.M.S. 'DISCOVERY.'

(556 tons, 96-horse power.)

<i>Captain</i>	.	.	Henry F. Stephenson.
<i>Lieutenant</i>	.	.	Lewis A. Beaumont ( <i>navigating duties</i> ).
"	.	.	Robert H. Archer.
"	.	.	Wyatt Rawson, F.R.G.S.
"	.	.	Reginald B. Fulford.
<i>Sub-Lieutenant</i>	.	.	Crawford J. M. Conybeare.
<i>Staff-Surgeon</i>	.	.	Belgrave Nimis, M.D.
<i>Surgeon</i>	.	.	Richard W. Coppinger, M.D.
<i>Assistant-Paymaster</i>	.	.	Thomas Mitchell.
<i>Engineer</i>	.	.	Daniel Cartmel.
"	.	.	Matthew R. Miller.
<i>Naturalist</i>	.	.	H. Chichester Hart.
<i>Chaplain</i>	.	.	Rev. C. E. Hodson.

Captain Nares is a leader to whom all on board are warmly attached, an able and most careful navigator and surveyor, and an admirable organiser of details. He also has the experience of two Arctic winters, and of two seasons of sledge-travelling, in 1852-54. Commander Markham, besides the duties of commanding officer, has charge of the magnetic observations, of those relating to the polarisation of light, and has studied and practised surveying. But his most important work will be the organisation of the winter routines and amusements, and of the sledge-travelling, under Captain Nares. As regards the latter duty he has carefully studied all the details of Sir Leopold M'Clintock's system during the last two years; while his experience of ice-navigation, acquired in 1873, is recent and has been

obtained in the light of all modern appliances. Captain Nares and Commander Markham are the only two officers of the Expedition who had previously crossed the Arctic Circle.

Lieutenant Aldrich is well versed in all matters connected with sounding and dredging, is a good observer, an excellent officer, and the best of mess-mates. Lieutenant Parr, a gunnery officer of great ability, has charge of the astronomical observations, and of those connected with spectrum analysis. Lieutenant Giffard assists Commander Markham with the magnetic observations, and has charge of the printing; and Lieutenant May, besides the navigating duties, has also gone through a course of instruction in spectrum analysis. Lieutenant Eger-ton, in addition to his regular work, has undertaken the important and responsible duties of paymaster, including the preparation of depôts and all the calculations connected with provision and clothing supplies. All the executive officers, under Captain Nares, give close attention to the meteorological observations. Dr. Colan, the fleet-surgeon, fills a most important post. He watches over the hygiene of the ships, and the health of officers and men, registers all statistical data with careful accuracy, and is a good ethnologist. He will observe for the presence of ozone, and will take other observations of scientific value. Dr. Moss is an officer of high

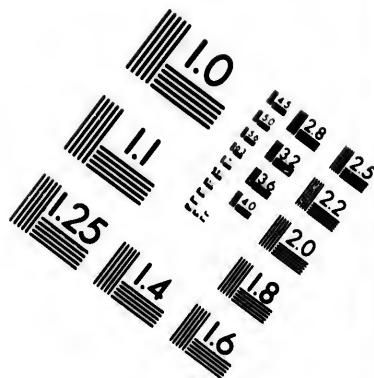
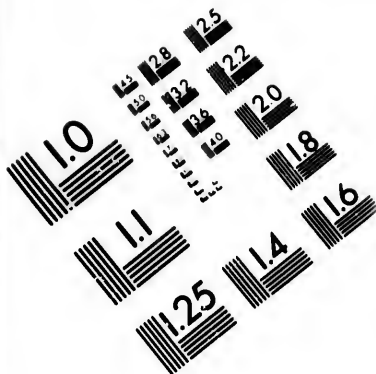
scientific attainments, more especially as regards the study of minute organisms, and is a practised microscopist. He is a keen sportsman, a good artist, and excels in the drawing and colouring of objects under the microscope. He is also the inventor of an admirable plan for procuring microscopic objects in sea water, by means of a siphon, at the entrance of which a few fibres of cotton-wool are placed. Captain Feilden, recently paymaster in the Royal Artillery, is a good ornithologist, and had studied the birds of the Faröe Islands during a visit in 1872. He has also acquired much general scientific knowledge, is an excellent messmate, and a very valuable addition to the staff of the Expedition. Mr. Wootton, the senior engineer, is an experienced officer; and the second engineer, Mr. White, is the photographer of the 'Alert,' and is an officer of resource and some inventive talent. To the above twelve officers a chaplain has been added. Mr. Pullen, the chaplain, has studied botany, and has a good knowledge of the English flora.

Besides the officers, the complement of the 'Alert' is made up of 48 men. There are eight chief petty officers; namely, Joseph Good, the chief boatswain's mate, who was Captain Nares's coxswain in the 'Challenger;' John R. Radmore, the chief carpenter's mate; George S. Burrows, the ship's steward; Vincent Dominick, the ship's cook, a native of

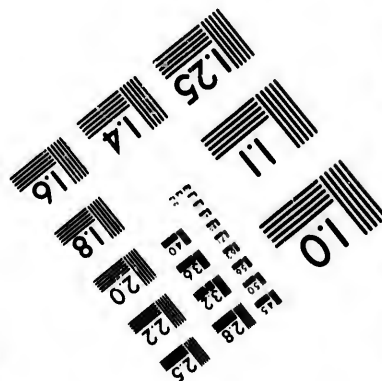
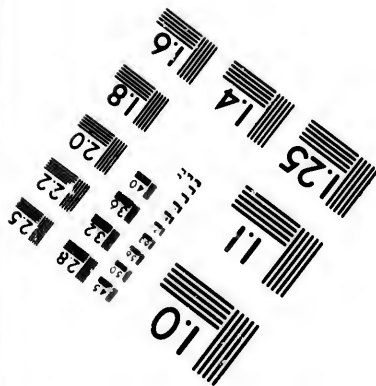
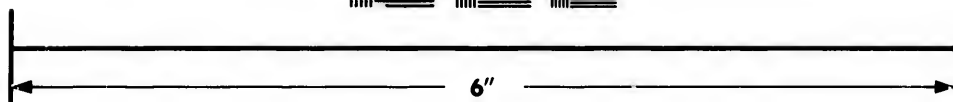
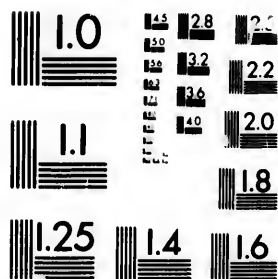
Gibraltar; Colour-Serjeant Wood of the Royal Marines, who is a photographer, and assistant to Mr. White; and the three Scotch ice quarter-masters. Of these latter the oldest is John Thores of Peterhead, a harpooneer; John Berrie of Dundee was a boat-steerer in the 'Erik,' with Captain Walker; and David Deuchars of Dundee is an old shipmate of Commander Markham in the 'Arctic,' where he was a loose harpooneer in 1873 and 1874.

The petty officers of the first and second class are eleven in number. Thomas Rawlings, the captain of the forecastle, an old shipmate of Commander Markham in the 'Blanche,' is an excellent seaman, and has the largest girth of chest of any one in the Expedition, namely, 41½ inches. The other captain of the forecastle is Edward Lawrence. The captains of the main-top are James Doidge, who has just passed a very creditable examination for boatswain, and Daniel Harley, who was in the Ashanti Expedition; of the fore-top, Thomas Jolliffe and Thomas Stuckberry. Adam Ayles and John Simmons are second-class petty officers, doing duty as forecastle men. Frederick Cane, the armourer, served in the Ashanti campaign, as did Robert Joiner, the leading stoker, and John Hawkins is cooper and captain of the hold. Of the fourteen able seamen Alfred Pearce, William Ferbrache, a native of Jersey, John Pearson, Thomas Simpson, Robert Symons (who is Lieutenant Giffard's





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

5  
1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0

5  
1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0



assistant in printing), and William Malley, a signalman, who served in the Ashanti campaign and gave up his rate to join the Expedition, are seaman-gunners. William Woolley, another signalman, also gave up his rate to join the Expedition, as did William Lorimer, who had previously been a leading seaman. The others are George Cranstone, a native of Edinburgh, James Self, William Marshall, Reuben Francombe, David Mitchell, and George Winstone, a young lad—a nephew of Good, the chief boatswain's mate—who also came from the 'Challenger.' The three stokers are W. J. Gore, John Shirley, and Edward Stubbs, a native of York and a good blacksmith. Henry Mann is the shipwright, and George Norris, carpenter's crew. Spiro Capato, the captain's steward, a native of Cephalonia, was with Captain Nares in the 'Challenger.' The ward-room steward, George Kemish, is an excellent man, an indefatigable worker, full of resource and ready to put his hand to anything; and W. F. Hunt is the ward-room cook. The marines are William Ellard, Thomas Smith, and John Hollins; and the gunners Elias Hill, George Porter, and Thomas Oakley, each being servant to two officers.

The 'Discovery,' commanded by Captain Henry Stephenson, has an executive staff of four lieutenants and one sub-lieutenant. The first is Lieutenant Lewis A. Beaumont, a gunnery officer, who, in addi-

tion to his duties as commanding officer, undertakes the navigating duties, and has charge of the pendulum observations. In the latter work he is assisted by Lieutenant Wyatt Rawson. Lieutenants Archer and Fulford undertake the magnetic observations; and Sub-lieutenant Conybeare has received instruction in spectrum analysis. Dr. Belgrave Ninnis, besides his important duties as senior medical officer, undertakes the charge of the meteorology; and Dr. Coppinger is a geologist and naturalist. The engineers are Mr. Cartmel and Mr. Miller, and Mr. Thomas Mitchell, the assistant paymaster, is the photographer, and is also a good artist. Mr. Hodson is the chaplain, and Mr. Hart, a student of Trinity College, Dublin, has a knowledge of botany.

The chief petty officers of the 'Discovery' are George W. Emerson, the chief boatswain's mate, a native of Hull; Edward C. Heddy, the chief carpenter's mate, George R. Sarah, the ship's steward, George Leggatt, the ship's cook, Serjeant Wellington of the Royal Marine Artillery, and the three Scotch ice quarter-masters. Of the latter Alexander Gray of Peterhead has already wintered within the Arctic Circle, and William Dougall of Peterhead and Edward Taws of Dundee were harpooneers. The other petty officers are Frank Chatel and Thomas Simmonds, captains of the forecastle, George Bryant, George Bunyan, an old shipmate of Commander

Markham in the 'Victoria,' James Cooper, George Stone, David Steward, William Ward, the armourer, James Shepherd, the cooper, and Jeremiah Rourke, the leading stoker. The able seamen are John E. Smith, Alfred Hindle, Thomas Chalkley, Michael Regan, John Hodges, Peter Craig, R. W. Hitchcock, Daniel Gerard, H. W. Edwards, James Thornback, John S. Sagers, and Benjamin Wyatt, who has charge of the printing. Another able seaman from the 'Valorous,' named Paul, a seaman gunner, was added to the complement of the 'Discovery' at Godhavn. The stokers are Frank Jones, Samuel Bulley, and William R. Sweet. Henry Windser is carpenter, Jonah Gear the ward-room steward, and James Phillips, the ward-room cook, aged 20, is a native of York, and the youngest man in the Expedition. The marines are John Murray, Thomas Darke, Henry Petty, and W. Waller, and the gunners John Cropp, Eli Rayner, and Wilson Doving, a native of Selby, near York.

The ships are barque-rigged, like the whalers, and fitted with Pinkey and Collins' patent reefing and furling topsails; an arrangement which obviates the necessity of men going aloft for either purpose; and they have a large amount of fore-and-aft canvas. The crow's-nests are lashed to the main royal poles. They are of wood, and about 5 feet high by  $2\frac{1}{2}$  in diameter, entered by a trap in the floor, and with

a hood of canvas working on a hoop round the upper rim. Jacob's ladders, beginning from the lower rigging, lead to the trap-hatch. The screw propellers are raised by means of a tackle and small pair of iron shears; the hook being attached by a hole in the upper part of one of the fans, and no framework being used. Two spare fans are kept in readiness on the upper deck. The rudder, although three tons weight, is easily unshipped and triced up to two davits over the stern; and a spare rudder is supplied to each ship. Both ships have been considerably strengthened. Outside there is a doubling of  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches of teak from the water-ways to the keel. Inside the bows have been fortified by numerous strong diagonal and fore-and-aft carlings, and the beam power has been considerably augmented. Iron knees have also been added; and a fore-and-aft stringer of eight inches thickness, between the shelf-piece and water-ways, right round the ship on the lower deck, has been introduced, which securely fastens and ties the timbers and plankings together. On the bows there are iron plates of half inch thickness, and eight to ten feet in length, which are bolted to the stem, and will protect the bows, and assist in charging and crushing the ice. Filling-in pieces have been put under the channels of the 'Alert' to allow the ice a free passage. The 'Discovery' has no channels. The figure-heads consist

er, George  
e armourer,  
ah Rourke,  
re John E.  
ey, Michael  
Hitchcock,  
Thornback,  
tt, who has  
seaman from  
gunner, was  
'Discovery' at  
ones, Samuel  
y Windser is  
steward, and  
aged 20, is a  
n in the Ex-  
rray, Thomas  
and the gun-  
son Dobing, a  
  
the whalers,  
patent reefing  
which obviates  
either purpose;  
and-aft canvas.  
in royal poles.  
t high by  $2\frac{1}{2}$   
floor, and with

of a Union Jack painted on a shield, and surrounded by gilded scroll work, with the motto *Ubique*, and on the bowsprit head of the 'Alert' is Commander Markham's horse-shoe, which has already brought luck to many ships on many seas. Each ship has a white streak just above the water-line. The 'Alert' has a red and the 'Discovery' a green line a few inches below the gunwale. The boats are white, with red and green lines respectively; and the crew's-nests are also white, with red hoops round that of the 'Alert,' and green round that of the 'Discovery.'

Each ship has nine boats, all built by White of Cowes. Heavy skids are built over the quarter-deck, on which were placed three of the largest boats, during the passage across the Atlantic, besides planking, sledges, and other gear. The boats on the skids were the yawl (10 oars double-banked, with a dipping lug, foresail, and mizen, length 25 feet, breadth 6 feet 6 inches, depth 2 feet 5½ inches, weight 1,250 lbs.), and two ice boats (6 or 8 oars double-banked, built to go on sledges; of cedar and elm carvel and diagonal, with sheet copper on the bows, 20 feet long, 6 feet wide, 2 feet 6 inches deep, weight 739 lbs.). And there were six boats at the davits, three on each side. The cutter was at the starboard quarter-deck davits (8 oars double-banked, length 23 feet, breadth 6 feet 2 inches,

depth 2 feet 4 inches, weight 1,014 lbs.), a smaller ice boat (15 feet long, 4 feet 6 inches wide, 2 feet 1 inch deep, weight 493 lbs.), three whale-boats, beautifully constructed, but very fragile, two of which were completely fitted for whaling (4 oars single-banked, length 25 feet, breadth 5 feet 2 inches, depth 2 feet 3 inches, weight 717 lbs.), and a small punt (length 12 feet, breadth 4 feet, depth 1 foot 10 inches, weight 224 lbs.); besides Mr. Berthon's collapsible canvas coracle (weight 56 lbs., length 6 feet, width 3 feet 6 inches, depth 1 foot 4 inches).

The 'Alert's' engines are of the horizontal direct-acting type, with two compound cylinders, and surface condenser. Although only 60 H.P., they are capable of developing 570 H.P. when working at full power. The two boilers are cylindrical with return tubes, and there are two furnaces to each. The propeller (Griffiths), with two blades, having a diameter of 10 feet and pitch of 8 feet 6 inches, is fitted without any framework, and is raised by means of a purchase that is hooked to a hole in either fan. The shaft is on the telescopic principle, and is withdrawn from the boss by means of a ratchet and pinion. The number of revolutions obtained at maximum speed, at the trial, was 120; and a distance of twenty-two miles was attained at a consumption of one ton of coal. The mean speed over the measured mile 7.684, and the consumption of coal



per hour was 778·28 lbs., or 2·48 lbs. per T.H.P. per hour. The indicated H.P. 313·36 and nominal 60. The engines were manufactured by Messrs. Hawkshaw, of Newcastle, for the gunboat 'Cygnet' in 1874, and transhipped to the 'Alert' in March 1875. There is a steam winch on the upper deck, and two spare propellers.

The ships were necessarily very heavily laden and deep in the water, and it was no easy matter to stow three years' provisions and coals in vessels where so large a space is occupied by the engine-room. The weight of the three years' provisions on board the 'Alert' is 136 tons, of which 55,808 lbs. are liquids, and 249,801 lbs. solids,<sup>1</sup> besides 178 tons of

<sup>1</sup> Provisions on board H.M.S. 'ALERT.'

Pearl barley . . .	112 lbs.	Candles (fighting)	6,250 lbs.
Oysters . . .	250 "	Soap . . .	in 21 cases
Arrowroot . . .	56 "	Salt pork . . .	17,100 lbs.
Tapioca . . .	56 "	Salt beef . . .	17,100 "
Loaf sugar . . .	224 "	Suet . . .	1,050 "
Sago . . .	112 "	Bacon . . .	3,720 "
Cloves . . .	3 "	Pemmican (sweet)	3,752 "
Nutmeg . . .	3 "	Pemmican (plain)	3,800 "
Sugar . . .	12,250 "	Fine salt . . .	144 "
Rice . . .	112 "	Chocolate (ordinary)	2,950 "
Tea . . .	887 "	" (soluble)	650 "
Tea (compressed)	112 "	Mustard . . .	300 "
Pickled garlic . . .	25 "	Pepper . . .	140 "
Biscuit . . .	21,350 "	Celery-seed . . .	25 "
Boiled Bacon . . .	2,240 "	Meat biscuit . . .	1,100 "
Tongues . . .	180 "	Flour (raw) . . .	26,000 "
Black currants } . . .	18 bottles	" (kilm-dried)	27,750 "
Red "		Split peas . . .	4,160 "
Vinegar . . .	51 gals.	Oatmeal . . .	84 "
Lime juice . . .	4,250 "	Candles (8s) . . .	2,850 "
Safety matches . . .	3½ gross	" (24s) . . .	750 "
Friction papers . . .	500 "	" (signal) . . .	50 "
Candles . . .	10,550 lbs.	Boiled beef . . .	6,372 "



coal. The provisions and stores of the 'Discovery' are on the same scale, the ships being nearly the same size. The 'Alert' is 751 tons, 160 feet long, 33·4 beam, 17 depth of hold, and 15 feet 7 inches mean draft; the 'Discovery' 668 tons, 166 feet long, 30 beam, 18 depth of hold.

The scale of diet for each man is one pound of biscuit every third day, and one pound of flour for bread on each of the two intervening days; every

per T.H.P. per  
nominal 60.  
Messrs. Hawk-  
'Cygnet' in  
n March 1875.  
deck, and two  
  
heavily laden  
easy matter to  
n vessels where  
e engine-room.  
sions on board  
55,808 lbs. are  
ides 178 tons of  
  
LERT.'  
ating) 6,250 lbs.  
in 21 cases  
17,100 lbs.  
17,100 "  
1,050 "  
3,720 "  
sweet) 3,752 "  
plain) 3,800 "  
144 "  
ordinary) 2,950 "  
soluble) 650 "  
300 "  
140 "  
25 "  
t . . . 1,100 "  
) 26,000 "  
dried) 27,750 "  
4,160 "  
84 "  
) . . . 2,850 "  
s) . . . 750 "  
gnal) . . . 50 "  
. . . 6,372 "

Cocoa-nut stearino .	1,903	lbs.	Pickled cabbage .	816	lbs.
Roast beef .	6,480	"	" gerkins .	872	"
Boiled mutton .	6,480	"	Piccaililli .	777	"
Roast mutton .	6,480	"	Preserved Potatoes	6,050	"
Rump steaks .	3,240	"	Extract of meat .	25	"
Minceed collops .	3,240	"	Egg powder .	14	"
Ox cheek & vego-			Preserved fowl .	250	"
tables .	4,260	"	Calves-foot jelly .	24	"
Hotch-potch .	4,260	"	Apple jelly .	45	"
Onions .	2,832	"	Malt .	400	"
Carrots .	5,640	"	Hops .	24	"
Compressed vego-			Dog biscuit .	4,690	"
tables .	544	"	Onion powder .	50	"
Dried cabbage .	544	"	Raisins .	1,058	"
Chillies .	5	"	Arrowroot .	59	"
Culinary herbs .	24	"	Cavendish Tobacco	596	"
Haddocks .	100	"	Shag .	500	"
Maccaroni .	112	"	Leaf .	1,290	"
Condensed milk .	192	"	Rum .	1,366	galls.
Chocolate and milk	56	"	Port wine .	29	"
Curry paste .	50	"	Sherry .	27	"
Baking-powder .	100	"	Brandy .	28	"
Essence of beef .	36	"	Gin .	30	"
Normandy pippins	1,210	"	Whiskey .	25 <sup>3</sup> / <sub>16</sub>	"
Preserved goose-			Champagne .	48	bottles
berries .	1,212	"	Allsopp's ale .	10	hds.
Preserved rhubarb .	1,212	"	Ground coffee .	420	lbs.
Cocotine .	56	"	Methylated spirits ,	46	galls.
Pickled onions .	777	"	Mustard-seed .	16	lbs.
" walnuts .	840	"	Cress-seed .	9	"

other day one pound of corned-beef or corned-pork alternately; and on the intervening days  $\frac{3}{4}$  lb. of preserved meat and  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of salt meat; every fourth day 1 lb. of compressed vegetables, and on the others  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of preserved potatoes:  $\frac{1}{2}$  lb. of preserved soup every fourth day:  $\frac{3}{4}$  lb. of flour, suet, and raisins every fourth day:  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of split peas every fourth day, with  $\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of celery-seed to every 8 lbs. of peas; 1 oz. of chocolate,  $\frac{1}{4}$  oz. of tea,  $1\frac{3}{4}$  oz. of sugar, 1 oz. of lime-juice, with 1 oz. of sugar for lime-juice, 1 oz. of pickles, and  $\frac{1}{2}$  gill of rum daily:  $\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of mustard,  $\frac{1}{4}$  oz. of pepper a week, 2 ozs. of preserved fruit, and  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an ounce of sugar for fruit twice a week; and oatmeal, vinegar, and salt as necessary. It is intended to add  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of preserved meat on salt-meat days, so as to give some fresh meat every day. For the salt beef is hard and dry, and it enters but too largely into the scheme of diet.

By the end of May all was in readiness for a start, and the preparations for Arctic service were complete. But it is unfair and misleading to say that the present Expedition has gone out with greater advantages than were enjoyed by any that preceded it. The ships are more handy, and are fitted with powerful screw-propellers; but, on the other hand, they are not stronger, they draw more water, and the interior stowage is most seriously curtailed by the engine-room. The ships of former expeditions were

warmed with hot air by a Sylvester stove, ensuring comfort and thorough ventilation, with a place for drying clothes, making beer, and bathing at a suitable temperature. The 'Alert' and 'Discovery' have no warming apparatus, and must rely exclusively on stoves for warmth and ventilation. The scales of provisions and clothing are practically identical. The present explorers have no advantages that were not enjoyed by their predecessors, and in some respects are not so comfortable. They are facing exactly the same difficulties, and enduring exactly the same hardships and sufferings. That they will manfully face and overcome them is certain; and their achievements will assuredly be great and honourable. They have gone forth, the vanguard of England's chivalry, to emulate the deeds of the old naval worthies of our nation, and to add another glorious page to its maritime history. The heartfelt wishes of every true Briton for success and a safe return have gone with them.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.

## 3. FROM PORTSMOUTH TO THE WAIGAT.

WHEN the two Arctic ships left the dockyard and steamed slowly out of Portsmouth Harbour on that bright afternoon of May 29, there was such proof that the heart of the English nation was stirred to its core as has seldom been given even on the news of a great victory—never before on the departure of an expedition of discovery. The ringing cheers from the yards and rigging of the ‘St. Vincent’ and ‘Duke of Wellington,’ taken up and repeated by hundreds of boats, yachts, and steamers which surrounded and followed the ships across the waters of Spithead, gave forth no uncertain sound. But the most imposing sight was presented by the shore line, from the dockyard gate to Southsea Castle. It was a dense mass of human beings. The garrison, which was drawn up on Southsea Common, presented one thin red line, fringing the vast crowd, collected from far and near, to witness the departure of the Expe-

dition. This sympathising crowd represented the feeling of the whole people of England, who have now shown, in a way which cannot be mistaken, that the spirit of maritime adventure and discovery is as dear to them as it ever was to their ancestors. The despatch of the Arctic Expedition is a great and wise measure, which has received the complete and hearty approval of the nation.

The 'Alert' led the way round St. Catherine's Point, followed by the 'Discovery,' with the 'Valorous,' having additional coals and stores, to be transhipped at Godhavn, bringing up the rear. A fair easterly wind carried the Expedition down Channel; on the 1st of June the ships anchored in Bantry Bay, and on the 2nd the 'Alert,' 'Discovery,' and 'Valorous' commenced the voyage across the Atlantic.

Officers and men had not been a day on board and together before the 29th; but all soon settled zealously to their work, each, in his place, preparing to do his share and to help his comrades to the utmost.

For the first day or two after leaving Bantry Bay there was a fair prospect of a good passage, but on June 4th it began to blow from the west; and during the whole voyage the Expedition encountered contrary winds with very heavy weather. No Arctic Expedition on record has had so long or so boisterous

a passage across the Atlantic; yet this was not without its countervailing advantages. All the gear aloft was thoroughly tried, all things below were shaken into their places, and the men, amidst discomfort and hard work, more quickly formed that brotherhood, upon the strength of which so much depends. Their appreciation of the nature of the service and general good feeling was shown by many little things. For instance, on the 1st of June the petty officers came aft and requested to be allowed to take their turn at the wheel with the rest of the men. Sea-boots and fur-caps were served out during the first week, and in the forenoons every man comes on deck to drink his ounce of lime-juice, which is of excellent quality.

The bad weather began on June 11th, when the north-westerly wind increased to a gale, with occasional violent squalls, and the 'Valorous' parted company to make the best of her way to Godhavn. On the 12th it fell calm with a heavy swell, but on the 13th all three ships encountered a gale of unusual strength, undoubtedly portion of a cyclone travelling rapidly to the eastward. The 'Alert' was steering north in the south-east side of the circular storm, the vortex of which was moving to the north-east. The wind was consequently from the north-west, freshening rapidly with violent squalls and a high confused sea. At noon the latitude was  $53^{\circ} 41' N$ .

and longitude  $23^{\circ}$  W. In the evening it was blowing a whole gale, barometer falling rapidly. Green seas were coming in fore and aft, and both ward-room and lower deck were flooded. She was evidently very close to the vortex of the storm, and at 10 p.m. the barometer had fallen to 28.82. At the same time the ship was wore, and took in a green sea over the stern. Almost simultaneously the wind shifted to the north, showing that the 'Alert' had been within a very short distance of the vortex, and that she was now on its western side. The barometer began to rise again, but the gale from the north continued through the night. The fowls were all drowned, and the sea was washing about in the ward-room, where, after midnight, an enthusiastic naturalist might have been seen fishing for new organisms out of his cabin, with a hand-net. But they proved to be buck-wheat washed out of the hencoops. More serious damage was done by the storm on deck. The skids, with the boats on them, worked very heavily, and the whale-boat, hoisted up to the davits on the starboard side, was stove in and destroyed. On the 15th the wind gradually died away to nearly a calm; but on the 17th there was another gale of wind from the west-north-west with a heavy sea, the ship lying to, and drifting to leeward. On the 20th the gale continued, heavy seas coming in over the fore-castle and washing fore and aft, and the cutter was nearly lost,



being caught by a sea and half filled. A succession of gales with heavy seas continued until the 27th, when the 'Alert' was at length to the westward of Cape Farewell, and making for Cape Desolation on the west coast of Greenland.

It was on the 27th of June that the first ice was seen, a sight which was new to most of the explorers, and which gladdened their hearts. Mr. Egerton was officer of the watch, and charging a formidable block, he was the first to make the ship touch ice at 5 P.M. On the 28th the 'Valorous' was sighted, and the land round Cape Desolation, lofty snow-covered ridges and peaks with clouds hanging over them. This land is the most interesting in Greenland; for here the old Norse colonies were planted, and this coast was first touched at by Sir Martin Frobisher, who named it 'Charing Cross,' and afterwards by John Davis, who gave it the name of 'Desolation.'

During the following week the ships passed close along the Greenland coast, sighting all the peaks, and headlands, and entrances to fiords; which excited much interest on board.

On June 29th, from daylight until 10 A.M., the 'Alert' was passing through a stream of very heavy floe-pieces, and sustained several severe bumps, which brought the ship up all standing. Some of the pieces were 200 or 300 yards long, others were fragments of

pressed up hummock-ridges from 30 to 40 feet high. Many were worn into fantastic and beautiful shapes, the wash of the sea having frequently worked laterally into the ice-blocks until they consisted of two floors connected by ice-pillars of the deepest blue. This old ice was streaming round from the east coast of Greenland with the current, which is usually lost or deflected again near the Arctic Circle. The ship was clear of the ice before noon, and on the following night a gale of wind came on, and a very heavy confused sea with high perpendicular waves, which made her roll gunwales under and ship seas over the stern and forecastle. Everything began to fetch way, a tremendous sea came down into the ward-room, the masts laboured heavily, and there were several leaks from the upper deck. The 1st of July was a lovely day, and in the afternoon the 'Discovery' was sighted about ten miles in-shore. She had parted company during the cyclone of June 13th, had experienced the same weather, and had shaped almost the same course, but was actually in the ice during the gale of wind of June 29th.

The long succession of heavy gales tried the gear of the ships, and left various marks. Two valuable whale-boats were stove-in and destroyed, one in each ship. In the 'Alert' the iron main-truss, the patent wire rudder-chains, and the chain ties of both topsail halliards were carried away; and the iron

try-sail masts were started on all three masts. The patent gear on the foretopsail-yard was of bad iron, and the span connecting the spindle at the end of the reefing boom with the yard was also carried away.

All night, during the gale of the 29th, Kane the armourer and Stubbs the blacksmith were at work in the engine-room forging a new iron span for the top-sail-yard, with the water washing up to their knees; for it is one disadvantage of having placed the engine-room so low in the ship, almost on the flooring, that it becomes flooded during every gale of wind.

After July 1 the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' proceeded up the coast in company, passing Sukkertoppen on the 3rd, Holsteinborg, with all its dangerous outlying rocks and reefs, on the 4th, and the grounded icebergs off Rifkoll on the 5th; and on the morning of July 6 the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' anchored in the harbour of Godhavn or Leively, at the southwest end of the island of Disco, where the 'Valorous' had arrived on the previous Sunday evening, July 4. Godhavn is the principal Danish colony of North Greenland, and the residence of the inspector, Mr. Krarup Smith, as well as of Mr. Elborg, the Governor.

The island of Disco is in several respects an excellent locality for acquiring a first impression of the Arctic Regions and of their flora and fauna, while

the geology presents points of special interest. It is here that the volcanic formations overlie the gneiss, and the basalt presents sections in some of the ravines which were carefully studied; especially one described by Giesecké in a deep gorge above Englesmanders Havn, where the layers of columnar basalt and amygdaloid, with mesotype, may be seen resting on the gneiss. The points were noted where the gneiss formation disappears, near Fortune Bay on one side, and two miles from Godhavn on the other, and the mineralogy both of the basaltic and gneissose rocks was carefully observed. Here also there were special advantages for studying Arctic physical geography, the effects of frost and ice upon the rocks, the influence of summer rivers, the glacial phenomena, and those connected with the formation, drift, and breaking up of icebergs. From the summits of the Lyngmarkensfjeld, 2,300 feet above the sea, which overhangs the harbour of Godhavn, there is an enchanting view of Disco Bay, dotted with hundreds of bergs, and the fiord of Jacobshavn with its great discharging glacier, whence the icebergs were drifting in a continuous stream, was clearly visible. The Arctic officers eagerly examined and studied these phenomena, climbing the treacherous basaltic mountains, exploring the wild gorges, and crossing the flooded torrents. Icebergs were visited, as well as the coast at Ovifak, whence the

Swedes carried off the now famous meteoric stones in 1871.

The valleys and gorges of Disco, especially the Lyngmarken and the shores of Englesmanders Havn, in their gay summer clothing of mosses and wild flowers, furnish an excellent example of the *flora* of both North and South Greenland, both of the plants which will become familiar to the explorers farther north, and of the less hardy species which do not occur beyond this parallel. Of the 206 species which compose the Arctic Greenland *flora*, upwards of two-thirds were collected by the officers of the Expedition round Godhavn, and they were thus enabled to form a practical acquaintance with the plants they are likely to meet with in the unknown region. The vegetation covers the ground in thick masses, forming turf on the level places, while it fills the chinks and crannies of the rocks, and creeps over the surface of the stones, giving a very bright appearance to the near view of this land of Disco in summer. The prettiest thing of all, and the most abundant, is the club-moss (*Cassiope tetragona*) with its graceful little white bell-flowers, like miniature lilies of the valley. With it are generally the dwarf willows and birches, and the *vaccinium* with its red flower and glossy little leaves. But for the plague of mosquitoes these soft masses of vegetation would form most luxurious beds. The *Alchemillas*,

the *Angelicas*, and whortleberries in the Lyngmarken, and the rich masses of holly fern in Englishman's Bay, will not be seen farther north. But with them are many true polar flowers—the erect red blossom of *Pedicularis laponica*, and the yellow, tinging to orange, of another species *P. flammea*; the bright little saxifrages red and white, *S. oppositifolia* and *caespitosa*, the lovely *Dryas octopetala*, the familiar dandelion, the buttercup-like *Potentilla nivea*, the rather scarce *Ranunculus hypoboreus* with its yellow flower, the tiny white *Draba alpina*, the specially Arctic poppy, *Papaver nudicaule*, the *Silene acaulis* with its pretty little purple flowers level with beds of moss, the sweet-smelling *Ledum palustre*, and the showy purple blossoms of the *Epilobium alpinum*. Quantities of red snow were also found on the heights above Godhavn, and specimens were carefully collected and preserved. Here too were the salad-supplying plants, the sorrel and scurvy grass, and many others. The herbaria formed at Godhavn will be most useful to the explorers, in studying the botany of the unknown region.

Disco is also a specially good locality for commencing the acquisition of a knowledge of the polar fauna; for here the Arctic and the sub-Arctic forms meet. Great northern divers, razor-bills, puffins, harlequin ducks, mergansers, skuas, wheatears, pipits, and some phalaropes and sandpipers are seen



at Disco, and not farther north. At the same time the officers of the Expedition here became acquainted with most of the true Arctic birds—the falcon (*Falco candicans*), the two species of snow-bunting and their eggs (*Plectrophanes nivalis* and *laponica*), the raven (*Corvus corax*), the ptarmigan (*Lagopus rupestris*), the red phalarope (*Phalaropus fulicarius*), the purple sandpiper (*Tringa striata*), the Arctic tern (*Sterna hirundo*), the kittiwake (*Rissa tridactyla*), the glaucous gull (*Larus glaucus*), the fulmar or malle-moke (*Procellaria glacialis*), the dovekey (*Uria grylle*), the loon (*Alca arca*), the red-throated diver (*Colymbus septentrionalis*), the long-tailed duck (*Harelda glacialis*), and the king and eider ducks (*Somateria spectabilis* and *mollissima*); as well as with the eggs of many of them. Dr. Moss had examined many organisms brought from the surface water of Davis Strait, and the contents of a dredge containing molluscs, holotheria, and crustacea from 30 fathoms on the Torske bank; and he had made careful coloured drawings of all the microscopic organisms that were new to him. With reference to the scientific labours of the Expedition, Captain Nares issued a very judicious memorandum to Commander Markham and the other officers, at Godhavn. In order to render the scientific results of the Expedition as valuable as possible, he expressed reliance upon the co-operation



of each member to assist in forming and preparing natural history collections. While the most important specimens will be required hereafter for the general national collection, any supplementary collection will, after a proper inventory is made of it, for publication in the general account of the voyage, be at the disposal of the collector. Any paper or description, composed for the information of any learned society, will be forwarded to its destination, through the Secretary of the Admiralty, by the earliest opportunity, as an original paper by the writer.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A series of instructions, or rather of suggestions, was prepared by the Royal Society for the use of the Arctic officers: on meteorology by Mr. Scott; on the spectrum of the sun with a view to terrestrial absorption, by Professor Stokes; on the eclipse of March 25, 1876, by Mr. Hind; on pendulum observations, by Professor Stokes; on the polarisation of light, by Mr. Spottiswoode; on tides, by the Rev. Samuel Haughton, D.D.; on botany, by Dr. Hooker; on mollusen, by Mr. Gwyn Jeffreys; on the collection of hydroids and polyzon, by Dr. Allman; on terrestrial magnetism, by Professor Adam; general hints, by Professor Huxley and Mr. Tyndall; on the detection of meteoric cosmical dust in the snow, by Professor Rosecø; on the phenomena of the Aurora, by Mr. Rand Capron; on collecting mammalia, by Dr. Günther; on cetacea, by Professor Flower; and on the towing-net, by Dr. Allman. Papers from transactions of Societies, and extracts from books on Arctic zoology, botany, geology, and physics, with other matter, have also been reprinted and edited by Professor Rupert Jones, as an Arctic Manual. The portion on Arctic birds is by Professor Newton, of Cambridge.

The Royal Geographical Society has presented to the Expedition a volume of 'Selections of Papers on Arctic Geography and Ethnology.' The first part contains: papers by Dr. Robert Brown,

Commander Markham and Lieutenants Giffard, Archer, and Fulford were fully occupied with magnetic observations during several days, obtaining satisfactory independent results for dip and variation; and Captain Nares, with Lieutenant May, fixed the position of Godhavn, and made a survey. Other instruments were also tried, while Mr. White and Mr. Mitchell got to work with the photography, and obtained seven excellent negatives.

The Arctic Expedition was at Godhavn from the 6th to the 15th of July busily engaged in filling up with coals and provisions from the 'Valorous'; and receiving most hearty and cordial assistance from her captain and officers. The 'Alert' had 178 tons

on the geography of Greenland, with an account of its inland ice, and the formation of floods and icebergs, and a narrative of all attempts to penetrate into the interior; a paper proposing to attempt to reach the pole by the Smith Sound route, by Baron von Wrangell; a criticism on Dr. Kane's discoveries by Dr. Rink; a paper on the Arctic current by Admiral Irminger; and a most valuable series by Admiral Collinson on the ice along the coast of Arctic America, with a sketch of the work of all the expeditions that have made discoveries in that part of the frigid zone. The second portion contains papers on the origin and migrations of the Greenland Eskimo, and on the Arctic Highlanders; a sketch of the Eskimo grammar and classified vocabularies; and a list of all names of places on the coast of Greenland, with Eskimo names and their meanings, ancient Norman sites, Danish names, and names and latitudes on the Admiralty chart, with remarks, by Mr. Clements Markham; a note on the origin of the Eskimo, by Dr. Rink; a detailed memoir on the Western Eskimo, by the late Dr. Simpson; and a Report by a Committee of the Council of the Anthropological Institute, with a series of suggestive questions.

of coal on board when she left England, and had expended 44 in steaming, condensing, and cooking before reaching Godhavn. She had condensed 36 tons of water with 6 tons of coal. She thus had 136 tons left, and received 66 from the 'Valorous,' making a total of 200 tons. Of this 114 tons is steaming coal, sufficient, with an expenditure of 4 tons a day (the quantity required for a rate of 5 knots an hour) for 29 days' steaming. The rest, 86 tons, is for cooking and warming. The additional provisions from the 'Valorous' were taken in:—

Salt beef . . . . .	3000 lbs.	Preserved beef . . . . .	6372 lbs.
Salt pork . . . . .	3300 "	Preserved carrots . . . . .	1656 "
Boiled bacon . . . . .	2240 "	Rum . . . . .	784 gal.
Sugar . . . . .	4000 "	Flour . . . . .	18,000 lbs.
Peas . . . . .	2240 "	Biscuits . . . . .	5500 "
Dog biscuit . . . . .	4000 "	Candles . . . . .	16,800 "
Lime juice . . . . .	1400 "	Sperm oil . . . . .	30 drs.

The 'Alert' also received much gear from the 'Valorous,' and two boats, a four-oared whale-boat and a jolly-boat with oars complete, besides the little canvas coracle belonging to Captain Loftus Jones, which will prove very useful in sledging operations.

The 'Discovery' then filled up, and there was nothing that the officers of the 'Valorous' were not ready to supply, from a topmast to a harmonium. On completing this work Captain Nares addressed an official letter to Captain Loftus Jones, expressing

his warm appreciation of the obliging assistance the Expedition had received from the 'Valorous,' and specially thanking Mr. Eyre, the first lieutenant, Mr. Gain, the paymaster, and Mr. Conde, the chief engineer.

Mr. Krarup Smith, the Inspector of North Greenland, and Mr. Elborg, the Governor of Godhavn, were most anxious to furnish all the aid in their power. They had received orders from the Danish Government respecting the supply of dogs, and 24 good Greenland dogs were ready for embarkation at Godhavn and 20 at Ritenbenk. Mr. Krarup Smith also supplied the Expedition with a large net for catching white whales. The 24 Godhavn dogs were taken on board the 'Alert,' besides 9 sheep from the 'Valorous;' and at 4.45 p.m., of Thursday the 15th of July the Arctic Expedition left Godhavn with the intention of going up Disco Bay to Ritenbenk, passing down the Waigat between Disco and the Noursoak Peninsula, and thence onwards to Upernivik. The 'Alert' proceeded with the 'Discovery' in tow, and Mr. Krarup Smith on board, followed by the 'Valorous.' The crows' nests were in their places, and the boats (no longer on the skids, as when crossing the Atlantic) were all hoisted up to davits.

The surface of Disco Bay was like glass, and was dotted over with icebergs of great size and most

fantastic shapes, while to the left rose the basaltic cliffs forming the south shore of Disco, resting on the yellow sandstones of the Miocene period, which contain coal. At midnight of the 15th the 'Alert' passed close under the landward face of a magnificent iceberg, a cliff of dazzling white, the top of which was covered with *mollies*, which flew up in a great cloud. On the other side the berg rose to a peak 200 feet high, under which there was a grand arch, the inner sides being of a deep rich blue. The sea was smooth as glass, and the sky, seen through the arch, was crimson tinged with gold. As this scene of wondrous beauty presented itself, the 'Valorous' hove in sight through the arch, her dark hull and tall masts standing out against the brilliant sky. In another hour there was a dense fog, which cleared away towards morning, disclosing a fine panoramic view with glassy sea and cloudless sky. On the left were the high basaltic rocks of Disco, with the opening of the Waigat full of icebergs, ahead the lofty mountains of the Noursoak Peninsula, and to the right the gneiss cliffs and precipices of Arve Prins Island.

Passing the settlement of Ritenbenk the Expedition anchored in a deep fiord extending up to the foot of the central chain of Arve Prins Island. The 'Discovery' here received her 20 dogs, good serviceable animals. Neil Christian Petersen was engaged

as dog-driver in the 'Alert,' and came out from England. He is a Dane, aged 36, who had been cooper at Upernivik and served in the Expedition of Dr. Hayes in 1860-61. An Eskimo named Frederik was engaged at Godhavn as second dog-driver, and came on board with his kayak and the dogs at Godhavn. It was intended to try and engage the Eskimo Hans, then settled at Proven, who was in all three American expeditions up Smith Sound, as dog-driver for the 'Discovery.'

During the afternoon of the 16th Commander Markham, with Lieutenant Parr, Mr. Egerton, and Dr. Moss, took a party of men in two boats to Svartefugle Bay, on the north-west coast of Arve Prins Island, where there is a 'loomery,' and succeeded in bagging 75 looms, dovekeys, and razor-bills,<sup>1</sup> sufficient to supply officers and men with excellent fresh meat for two days. Other officers were away fishing and exploring the islands.

The 'Valorous' was to sail at 4 the next morning, and proceed to the Ritenbenk Kulbrud, on the Disco shore of the Waigat, to coal; and the discovery ships were to follow two hours later. The

<sup>1</sup> It is interesting to find the looms and razor-bills breeding together at this point (*Alca arra* and *Alca torda*). Farther north the latter are not met with. A young cormorant (*Phalacrocorax carbo*) was also obtained, with a curious malformation (one of its wings being wanting), and several eggs of the cormorant; besides numerous eggs of looms, dovekeys, and razor-bills.



16th of July was, therefore, the last day on which the gallant explorers would see any of their countrymen. At midnight the captain and officers of the 'Alert' assembled in the ward-room to bid farewell to the Author of this work, who had been their mess-mate thus far, and who was the last Englishman whose hand they would grasp for many a long day. Healths were drunk in bumpers of champagne, three hearty cheers from officers and men sent their echoes over the fiord, and their last-seen friend was pulled on board the 'Valorous,' at one in the morning of July 17, by the four lieutenants—Aldrich, Parr, Giffard, and May, with Commander Markham at the steer-oar.

The 'Valorous' sailed from Ritenbenk at 4 A.M. of July 17, the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' following; and at 8 A.M. the Arctic ships could be made out from the stern of the 'Valorous,' with their mast-heads and yards showing above the icebergs. At 1 P.M. the 'Valorous' anchored off the coal-bearing cliffs on the Disco shore of the Waigat. From the hills there was a magnificent view of icebergs streaming out of the Tossukatek Fiord, at the head of which there is a great discharging glacier, and down the Waigat, and among them the Arctic ships could be seen, over on the Greenland side of the strait, under all plain sail. They were standing down the Waigat (the 'Alert' leading), appearing and disap-



pearing behind the huge icebergs, about 6 miles off. At 5 p.m. the 'Valorous' hoisted a signal at all three mast-heads—*Farewell! Speedy return!* It was not seen for a long time, but at last the 'Discovery' hoisted *Thank you*, and afterwards the 'Alert' ran up the affirmative pendant. They continued to stand on, and were just about to disappear behind a point of Disco Island, when, at 6.15 p.m. the 'Alert' hoisted a signal to the 'Discovery,' '*Do you wish to communicate?*' A few minutes afterwards the 'Alert' went about, apparently intending to beat up to windward and communicate with the 'Valorous;' and at 6.30 p.m. she hoisted a second signal to the 'Discovery'—'*Optional, beat to windward.*' Then a fog suddenly sank down on the water, and hid both ships from view. Supposing that they were beating up to her anchorage, the 'Valorous' went on blowing the steam fog-horn every ten minutes; but when the fog rose again towards morning the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' were nowhere to be seen. When the fog came on the intention of communicating must have been abandoned, and the Arctic ships must again have stood down the Waigat, and proceeded on their way to Upernivik. May all success and prosperity go with that gallant band of dauntless explorers!

## CHAPTER XIX.

## THE ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.

## 4. THE LATEST NEWS AND FUTURE PROCEEDINGS.

AFTER passing down the Waigat on July 17, the Arctic Expedition reached Upernivik on the 21st, and, having shipped Hans and his family, proceeded on the voyage. The news respecting the weather received from Mr. Krarup Smith and other Danish officials had been encouraging. The last winter was very much colder in South Greenland than in the north, owing to strong westerly winds from America. In North Greenland the winter was unusually mild, and much ice kept drifting south until March. At Godhavn the mean temperature of the winter months was from 5° to 13° Fahrenheit higher than the average. But the spring was more severe than usual. The inferences were that an unusually large quantity of ice had been drifted out of Baffin's Bay, but that there was a check, owing to westerly winds, in the spring; consequently that this was a favourable season for navigation late in the summer, but not in

the early part, and that it would have been a mistake for the Expedition to have reached Melville Bay earlier than the latter half of July. We now know that these inferences, from the reports received at Godhavn, were well founded.

The Expedition sailed from Upernivik at 8 A.M. on July 22, but soon a dense fog made it necessary to take shelter in a small bay near Kingitok Island, the northernmost of the settlements in Danish Greenland. Here the 'Alert' ran on a rock, and remained immovable for five hours, getting off without any difficulty at high water. The fog having cleared off, the Expedition shaped a course due west (true), for it had been determined, instead of creeping round the land-ice of Melville Bay, to make a dash through the middle pack. At 1 A.M. on Saturday, July 24, the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' made the pack edge, and at once pushed into the ice, which was very loose, not more than 12 inches thick, and with lanes of water in all directions. Evidently all the ice formed during the winter had been drifted south by the northerly winds, and this new ice had been formed in the spring. It was an unprecedentedly open season.

In the afternoon of the 24th the first bear was sighted, and Commander Markham, with Lieutenant May and Dr. Moss, at once went in chase in the dingey, followed by Lieutenants Parr and Giffard

a mistake  
Melville Bay  
now known  
received at

at 8 A.M.  
it necessary  
took Island,  
in Danish  
a rock, and  
getting off  
. The fog  
ped a course  
ained, instead  
Melville Bay, to  
k. At 1 A.M.  
'Discovery'  
hed into the  
an 12 inches  
ll directions.  
e winter had  
nds, and this  
. It was an

first bear was  
th Lieutenant  
chase in the  
and Giffard

and Captain Feilden; but Bruin was too wary on that occasion, and the party returned, Lieutenant May having fallen through the ice. He was, however, none the worse for his cold bath.

At 11 A.M. on Sunday, July 25, the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' got clear of the pack and entered the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay. The Expedition had only been 34 hours in the ice, and 70 hours in going from Upernivik to Cape York. Former expeditions were thirty-eight and forty-two days struggling through the ice in Melville Bay before they sighted Cape York. The 'Discovery' then went inshore to communicate with the natives and endeavour to engage a brother-in-law of Hans as second dog-driver, while the 'Alert,' passing the crimson cliffs of Beverley and Cape Dudley Digges, proceeded to the easternmost of the Cary Islands, which she reached at midnight of July 26.

Two large depôts of 3,600 rations each, being one month's provisions for 120 men, were prepared, called A and B, which are stowed on the upper decks of the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' respectively, ready for landing. Depôt A consists of 28 casks and 101 cases, as follows:—

Sugar . . . . . 400 lbs.	Preserved potatoes . . . 350 lbs.
Fine salt . . . . . 32 „	Pickled onions . . . . . 111 „
Boiled beef . . . . . 3636 „	Piccalilli . . . . . 111 „
Stearine . . . . . 395 „	Tea . . . . . 60 „
Chocolate . . . . . 230 „	Biscuit . . . . . 2700 „
Pepper . . . . . 10 „	Rum . . . . . 55 gals.

One tin of beef weighs  $7\frac{3}{8}$  lbs. including tare. Dépôt B is the same as A in all respects. Dépôt A and the whale-boat supplied by the 'Valorous' were landed on the easternmost Cary Island, with the record and letters which were brought home by the 'Pandora'<sup>1</sup> during the night of July 26.

The 'Discovery' here joined the 'Alert.' There was an extraordinary absence of floe-ice, and the long prevalent northerly winds, which Allen Young found still blowing in August and September, must have carried the old ice out of Smith Sound and Baffin's Bay in unusually large quantities, and probably caused an extraordinarily open season. The temperatures seemed to corroborate this view. On the 26th that of the surface-water rose to 40° Fahrenheit, at 4 p.m., and was still 40° at 6 and 8 p.m. This was an indication that there was no more ice in the vicinity of the ships. At 6 a.m. on Tuesday, July 27, the Expedition left the Cary Islands and proceeded to Smith Sound, with the brightest prospect of an open sea, and of being able to obtain a high northern latitude. They had six weeks of navigable season before them.

The Expedition was to proceed to Sutherland Island and deposit a record, and, if the entrance was fairly clear of ice, also at Littleton Island on the east side. Sutherland Island is the position most easily reached by a vessel coming from

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix C.

the south, and Littleton Island from the north, as there is sure to be always much water in the narrow part of the channel. The ships were then crossed to the west shore of Smith Sound, and work their way to the north on that side. If there was much ice north of the Cary Islands, the principal cairn, with records, would be on Gale Point, south of Cape Isabella. The latest news will probably be found here, for if, as is likely, the 'Discovery' winters on the west side of the channel, it will be easier for her to communicate with Gale Point or Cape Isabella than with Littleton Island, owing to the difficulty in crossing Smith Sound. A boat was to be landed at Cape Sabine. Dépôt B was to be landed on the western side with a boat, and travelling dépôts of 240 rations (20 days for 12 men) at three specified points south of the 'Discovery's' winter quarters. Cairns were to be built near the dépôts, with notices buried 20 feet magnetic north of them.

It was hoped that suitable winter quarters would be found for the 'Discovery' on the north shore of Lady Franklin Strait, in latitude  $82^{\circ}$  N., or a short distance farther north. As soon as she was snugly established a dépôt of 10,000 rations was to be formed on shore, together with a supply of coals. Captain Stephenson would then at once throw out hunting parties, both to the shore and on the ice, to collect food for the dogs.

The 'Alert,' taking two officers and men for two

sledge parties from the 'Discovery,' was then to have pressed onwards alone to the north. Depôts and cairns would be landed, at intervals of about 60 miles, consisting of 480 rations each, or 40 days' provisions for 12 men. With these heavy undermanned ships the surest way of reaching the Pole, in the opinion of Captain Nares, is not to risk failure by pushing forward away from the land. If the 'Alert' can winter even in 84°, and there is land ahead, there is the certainty of attaining a very high northern latitude by sledge travelling, and of exploring the neighbouring coasts so as to be prepared to advance the ship along known shores during the following season. For Captain Nares considers a second season preferable to pushing off away from the land, and thereby risking a winter in the drifting pack, whence all chance of exploring is at an end. Consequently if the land north of Cape Union trends westward, with a navigable sea, but no land in sight to the northward, Captain Nares has made up his mind to remain by the shore for the first winter. Then, with increased knowledge of the trend of the land, the direction of the prevailing wind and the currents, and having ensured certain communication with the 'Discovery,' the 'Alert' can push boldly northward in the summer of 1876. If, however, there is continuous land to the north, the 'Alert' will be taken this summer to as high a northern latitude as is possible.



In preparing to face the sufferings and hardships of an Arctic winter there will be urgent necessity for considering the question of heating and ventilating with great care. For the ships have not been fitted with any warming apparatus, as was the case in previous Arctic expeditions, and no carefully thought-out plan has been furnished for guidance. There are the galley and the ordinary service stoves, which give the minimum of heat with the maximum of consumption. The stoves are of three sizes, large, medium, and small; the medium stoves having a lifting top, which supplies a hot plate for warming water. Round the funnel of the galley there is a reservoir for receiving ice and snow for water, which is drawn off through a tap below. The galley fire sends out steam, which will form ice forward, and cause much vapour in the fore part of the lower deck. There will be very small stoves for the fore peak and sick bay; a medium stove in the fore part of the lower deck; two large stoves in the after part of the lower deck; a large and a medium stove in the ward room, and a medium stove in the captain's cabin, all with copper piping passing along the beams, but contributing little or nothing to the heating of the air below them. There is also a small portable drying stove. The calculation was that  $1\frac{1}{2}$  cw<sup>t</sup>. of coal would be used each day, or 52 tons a year, for cooking and warming; 80 lbs. were allowed for the

galley; 14 lbs. for the large stoves. But this is altogether insufficient. The galley fire requires 100 lbs. at the very least, the large stoves 28 lbs., and the mediums 15 lbs. during the summer. In winter this allowance must be largely increased. The stoves alone will prove quite inadequate either for the due warming or the wholesome ventilation of the ships; and the officers will be thrown on their own resources to devise some improvement. Mr. White has already suggested a plan, which will probably be tried. He would have a funnel open at the top to the outer air, passing through the upper deck and the lower deck, and then up through the lower deck again, so as to form a syphon. It will then pass through a large stove, so as to heat the fresh outer air, and out a few inches above the deck, where there would be a valve to regulate the outflow of the pure hot air, which would then rise, and diffuse warmth while expelling the bad vapours. Sir George Back also made a very valuable suggestion to Commander Markham and Lieutenant Beaumont for ventilating the lower deck by means of a bell-mouthed wind-sail, with the mouth placed near the deck. It is very important that these or some other equally good plan should be adopted, for success entirely depends on the preservation of health and good spirits during winter quarters.

There will be no want either of occupation or

amusement in the long darkness of at least one hundred and twenty days, that the explorers must encounter. The observatory for magnetic observations has been taken out in pieces from England, with no iron in any part, and a copper stove has been supplied for it. This wooden edifice will be erected on shore, if the ship succeeds in finding winter quarters in a harbour, and there will be another observatory for the astronomical observations. Thus the scientific staff will be steadily at work through the winter, while the instruction and amusement of officers and men will be fully provided for. There will be schools for teaching navigation and other branches of knowledge. A large collection of excellent magic lantern slides furnishes the means of illustrating lectures on astronomy, as well as amusing tales and anecdotes. The ships are badly supplied with Arctic works,<sup>1</sup> but in other respects the forethought of friends and well-wishers has furnished an excellent and judiciously selected library, which has been catalogued and classified. The Expedition is rich in musical talent, and each ship has a piano and

<sup>1</sup> Unfortunately the following Arctic works have not been supplied to the Expedition:—

Barrington and Beaufoy on Approaches to the North Pole; Barney's Russian Arctic Discoveries; Crantz's Greenland; Egedo's Greenland; Fabricius's Natural History of Greenland; Graah's Greenland; Washington's Eskimo vocabularies; Hamel's White Sea Voyages; Rink's Greenland; Sabine's Pendulum Observations; Scoresby's 'My Father;' Trevelyan's Greenland.

a harmonium. Lieutenant Aldrich is an accomplished pianist, Lieutenants May and Egerton play the banjo, and there is a talented drum-and-fife band on the lower deck, besides any amount of vocal music fore and aft. Commander Markham, with Mr. Egerton as a confederate, will give entertainments of magic and legerdemain, and can perform all conjuring tricks, from the magic bottle to dark *séances* and clairvoyance. The histrionic talent is also in strong force on board both ships; many presents of dresses and properties were received, including one from Mr. Irving, and a magnificent proscenium has been painted for the 'Alert.' There will also be periodical literature and newspapers, besides printed play-bills and notices; the printing department being ably conducted by Lieutenant Giffard and Robert Symons. Nor has due provision for such festive occasions as birthdays and Christmastide been forgotten, and numerous plum-puddings and cakes, many pounds of mince-meat, and boxes containing bottles of punch, together with the nine sheep, supply the means to both officers and men for their celebration.

The importance of the duties of making the winter pass quickly and pleasantly away, by amusing as well as employing the minds of all on board, and preventing their caring for the inevitable hardships and sufferings, as well as by strictly enforcing the proper amount of daily exercise and the observance

of sanitary regulations, cannot be over-estimated; and every member of the Expedition, by cordially and heartily entering into the spirit of the work, will, each in his place, thus secure the maintenance of the general health both of mind and body. It is this alone that can ensure that elasticity and vigour which, in the spring of 1876, is destined to carry the crosses of St. George far into the unknown north.<sup>1</sup>

As the sun begins to approach the horizon the grand work of the Expedition will commence. The object will be to reach the Pole, and on the return of the supporting sledges much will be done in exploring nearer the ships. It is important, with a view to a proper understanding of the means by which this great national achievement is to be done, that geographers should be fully acquainted with the exact details of sledge-travelling as arranged for the present Expedition.

For each ship there are two 12-men sledges, six 8 and six 5-men sledges, three satellites and one ladder-sledge for glacier travelling; of the following dimensions:—

The 12-men sledge has 7 uprights 19 inches apart. It is 14 feet long, 3 feet 5 inches wide, 1

<sup>1</sup> For a description of the sledge-flags and mottoes of the officers, see under each name in the Biographical Dictionary of the Arctic Expedition, which forms Appendix A.

foot 2 inches high, and weighs 182 lbs. 8 ozs. complete with drag-ropes and bottom.

The 8-men sledge has 6 uprights 18 inches apart. It is 11 feet long, 3 feet 2 inches wide, 11 inches high, and weighs 122 lbs. 14 ozs.

The 5-men sledge has 4 uprights 15 inches apart. Its length is 8 feet, width 2 feet 8 inches, height 8 inches, and weight 5 lbs.

The tents are of light close unbleached duck. That for the 12-men sledge is 14 feet long at the bottom, and 10 at the top, 7 feet wide on the ground, 7 feet high, and weighs 41 lbs. The tent-ropes are 6 fathoms long, of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  inch, and the tent-poles of ash,  $10\frac{3}{4}$  feet long.

The 8-men tents are 9 feet 4 inches long at the bottom and 8 at the top, 7 feet wide and high, and weigh 31 lbs. 14 ozs. The tent-ropes are 6 fathoms long, of  $1\frac{1}{4}$  inch, and the tent-poles (weighing  $5\frac{1}{4}$  lbs.) are 8 feet 6 inches long. The 5-men tent is 7 feet long by 6 feet 6 inches wide and high, weight 22 lbs., the tent-ropes 5 fathoms long, of  $\frac{3}{4}$  inch, and length of tent-poles 7 feet 10 inches.

The tent-furniture (consisting of coverlet, lower robe, floor-cloth, sail, trough, and bottom) weighs 61 lbs. 3 ozs. for an 8-men tent, 52 lbs. 10 ozs. for a 5-men, and 96 lbs. 6 ozs. for a 12-men tent. The sleeping-bag, 6 feet 8 inches long, weighs 8 lbs. 2 ozs.

The clothing for each man, on starting, consists of:—

1 flannel or wove woollen frock.	1 drag belt of light horse girth (5 ft. long by 3 in.)
1 thick guernsey frock.	1 Welsh wig (1 spare).
1 duffle frock (1 spare).	1 cap, veil, and face.
1 pair of duffle trousers.	1 comforter (1 spare).
1 duck jumper and trousers.	1 tin water bottle to hold $\frac{3}{4}$ of a pint.
1 pair of worsted stockings (1 spare).	1 gutta-percha cup.
1 pair of thick wove woollen drawers (1 spare).	1 pair of coloured spectacles.
1 pair of blanket feet wrappers (2 spare).	1 pair of canvas boots (2 spare).
1 pair of wad quill boot hose (1 spare).	Towel and soap.
1 pair of smoked mooseskin mo- cassins (3 spare).	The weight of the knapsack (17 inches wide, 12 high, and 6 deep, weighing 9 oz.), in- cluding spare clothing, is 12 lbs.
1 pair of mitts (2 spare).	

The daily allowance of food to each man, while travelling, will be 1 lb. of pemmican,  $\frac{1}{4}$  lb. of bacon, 14 ozs. of biscuit, 2 ozs. of preserved potatoes,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of chocolate,  $\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of tea and sugar, 1 oz. ( $\frac{1}{2}$  a gill) of concentrated rum, 55 above proof; besides  $1\frac{3}{4}$  oz. of salt,  $\frac{1}{4}$  oz. of pepper, 1 of onion powder, and 3 of tobacco, a week. The weight of one ration is 2 lbs. 11 ozs., of 20 rations, 59 lbs. 2 oz.; and of 160 rations, or 20 days' provisions for 8 men, 473 lbs.

For depôts the pemmican cases are 20 inches long by  $10\frac{1}{2}$  by  $7\frac{1}{2}$ , weighing 56 lbs. full, and 8 lbs. empty. The depôt tins of bacon weigh 52 lbs., and



are filled up with 8 lbs. of tallow, weight 12 lbs. empty. A depôt of seven days' provisions for 8 men weighs 201 lbs., and can all be stowed in one cask weighing 90 lbs., total weight 291 lbs. There are also waterproof depôt cases of gutta-percha pressed upon coarse duck.

The cooking apparatus consists of a kettle resting on and fitting to the lamp, which is fed by alcohol or cocoa-nut stearine—6 pints a day of spirits of wine, or 1 lb. of stearine. The largest sized kettle holds 13 pints, and its lamp of 10 wicks requires 9 oz. of alcohol or 5 oz. of stearine for boiling. The next size holds 9 pints, and also has 10 wicks (6 oz. of alcohol and 3 of stearine to boil). The third size holds 6 pints (4 oz. of alcohol and 2 of stearine), with 7 wicks, and the smallest holds 3 pints, with a lamp of 5 wicks, needing 2 oz. of fuel to boil.

The supply of medicines and surgical appliances for the travelling parties has received the most careful attention from Dr. Colan; and he will give instruction on the subject to each officer commanding a sledge. At first he was only allowed a weight of 8 lbs. for medical stores, which has been extended to 12 lbs.; and the following is the list for each sledge, to be made up in a tin case (20 inches by 5 and 7) and a medicine tin for bottles ( $7\frac{1}{2}$  inches by  $5\frac{3}{4}$ ) together weighing 4 lbs.

MEDICAL STORES FOR EACH SLEDGE.

	oz. dwt.		oz. dwt. gr.
Sul volatile and aromatic spirits of ammonia (2 phials) . . . . .	3 0	Oil Silk . . . . .	1 0 0
Laudanum (2 phials) . . . . .	1 4	Sponge . . . . .	1 0 0
Wine of opium (2 phials) . . . . .	1 0	Pins in paper . . . . .	0 1 0
Gregory's powder (small tin) . . . . .	1 0	Expanding splints (2) and carbolized tow	20 0 0
Dover's powder (12 papers of 10 grains each) . . . . .	0 2	Fine tow or cotton wool . . . . .	3 4 0
Chalk powder (32 papers of 15 grains each) . . . . .	1 0	Catheter . . . . .	0 1 30
Sugar of lead (30 papers of 4 grains each) . . . . .	0 2	Tourniquet . . . . .	6 4 0
Turpentine liniment (bottle) . . . . .	6 0	Truss with pad . . . . .	8 4 0
Carbolic acid (phial) . . . . .	1 4	Lancet . . . . .	0 1 0
Glycerine ointment in oiled silk . . . . .	6 0	Twill . . . . .	0 0 10
Simple or white ointment . . . . .	3 0	Persian gauze . . . . .	0 4 0
Carbolic plaster . . . . .	1 0	Eye shades (2) . . . . .	0 4 0
Purgative pills (4 dozen in phials) . . . . .	0 4	Small splint . . . . .	0 1 0
		Scissors . . . . .	0 1 0
		Flannel ice goggles in metal case . . . . .	0 7 0
		Tape . . . . .	0 1 0
		Mustard (in paper) . . . . .	0 4 0
		3 calico bandages . . . . .	3 4 0
		2 flannel bandages . . . . .	6 0 0
		Lint . . . . .	6 0 0

Total weight of medicines, &c. . . . .	lbs. oz. dwt.
Weight of cases . . . . .	7 11 40
	4 0 0

The weight of the sundry bag has also been increased from 8 lbs. to 12 lbs. It contains slow match, palm and needles, senit and twine, nettle stuff, nails, tent-brush, chopping-axe, spare hide, 2 spare cross-bars. Then there are pannikins holding  $1\frac{1}{4}$  pint for each man, large horn spoon, spirit-measures, funnels, and daily rum-can.

ight 12 lbs.  
ns for 8 men  
in one cask  
There are  
ercha pressed  
kettle resting  
ed by alcohol  
of spirits of  
st sized kettle  
eks requires 9  
boiling. The  
0 wicks (6 oz.  
). The third  
ol and 2 of  
allest holds 3  
g 2 oz. of fuel  
ical appliances  
the most care-  
e will give in-  
r commanding  
ed a weight of  
en extended to  
for each sledge,  
es by 5 and 7)  
inches by  $5\frac{3}{4}$ )

The sledge, tent and furniture, clothing, cooking gear, sundry and medicine bags, &c., form the constant weights, which do not alter, and it is of the utmost importance to keep them as low as possible. The calculation for the constant weights for the different sledges is as follows:—

## CONSTANT WEIGHTS.

	12 men sledge.	8-men sledge.	5-men sledge.	2 men and dogs.
	lbs. oz.	lbs. oz.	lbs. oz.	lbs. oz.
Tent, complete . . . . .	41 0	31 14	23 4	23 4
Tent-poles . . . . .	39 4	22 5	22 5	22 5
Sledge, complete . . . . .	182 8	122 12	56 0	61 0
Bottom . . . . .	3 12	3 6	1 10	—
Trough . . . . .	12 0	8 4	5 2	5 5
Sail . . . . .	11 0	9 1	7 2	—
Floor-cloth . . . . .	16 0	11 4	8 9	8 2
Lower robe . . . . .	25 0	18 4	14 4	16 0
Coverlet . . . . .	28 2	21 0	15 8	—
Sleeping-bags . . . . .	97 8	67 0	40 10	16 4
Knapsacks . . . . .	114 0	96 0	60 0	24 0
Shovel and pick . . . . .	12 0	12 0	12 0	10 0
Cooking-gear . . . . .	24 7	20 5	15 0	8 0
Small cooking apparatus . . . . .	20 5	15 0	—	—
Ammunition . . . . .	16 0	16 0	8 0	8 0
Gun . . . . .	7 0	7 0	7 0	7 0
Sundry-bag . . . . .	12 0	12 0	6 0	6 0
Instruments . . . . .	13 0	13 0	—	—
Medical stores . . . . .	12 0	12 0	12 0	12 0
Luncheon-bag . . . . .	12 0	9 0	5 0	5 0
Saw and 5 snow-knives . . . . .	5 0	5 0	5 0	—
Sail-gear . . . . .	5 0	5 0	—	—
Pemmican-chopper . . . . .	3 0	3 0	3 0	—
	741 14	539 13	327 6	235 4
Weight for each man . . . . .	67 5	77 1	81 13	—

To the constant weights must be added that of 40 days' provisions, the largest amount that can be carried on one sledge. Each ration weighs 2 lbs. 11 ozs. For a 12-men sledge there will be 480 rations, weighing 1,290 lbs., or  $107\frac{1}{2}$  lbs. to every man, which added to 67 lbs. constant weights makes  $174\frac{1}{2}$  lbs. for each man to drag, of course getting less every day as the provisions are consumed. For an 8-men sledge there will be 320 rations, weighing 810 lbs., or 100 lbs. for each man, which added to his 77 lbs. constant weights makes 177 lbs. for each to drag. For a 5-men sledge there will be 200 rations, weighing  $537\frac{1}{2}$  lbs., or 107 lbs. for each man, which, added to  $81\frac{3}{4}$  lbs. of constant weights, makes  $188\frac{3}{4}$  lbs. for each man to drag. It will, however, be chiefly the 8-men sledges that will make the long journeys, with a load of 40 days' provisions.

The conveyance of a boat, with the long travelling parties, in the event of meeting open water, is a measure of the greatest importance. The sledges for carrying boats have the two end cross-bars fitted with two cleats, one on each side of the boat's keel. These cleats are 7 inches long, and are securely lashed to the cross-bars. Two battens of American elm, each 2 inches wide and half an inch thick, are lashed in a fore-and-aft direction to the top of the cross-bars  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches apart, that is to say,  $1\frac{3}{4}$  inch on each side of the central line of bearer. They are

men sledge.	2 men and dogs.
4. oz.	lbs. oz.
1 1	23 4
2 5	22 5
6 0	61 0
1 10	—
5 2	5 5
7 2	—
8 9	8 2
4 4	16 0
5 8	—
0 10	16 4
0 0	24 0
2 0	10 0
5 0	8 0
—	—
8 0	8 0
7 0	7 0
6 0	6 0
—	—
2 0	12 0
5 0	5 0
5 0	—
—	—
3 0	—
—	—
7 6	235 4
1 13	—

sufficiently long to allow of their being secured to all the cross-bars. When the boat is placed on the sledge the keel rests on the cross-bars between the cleats, and is held in an upright position by four cushions of stout canvas, stuffed with cork cuttings, the whole being kept in place by lashings. Two parts of inch rope are passed through the cork fenders to keep them in shape. The weight of the 20-foot boat on a 14-foot sledge, prepared for travelling with 4 paddles only, is 1,006 lbs.; of the 15-foot boat on an 11-foot sledge, 706 lbs.

Great assistance is often derived from the use of a sail on the sledge, which materially eases the labour of dragging. Two tent-poles are lashed together as a yard, with a spare pole as a foot-yard. The other two poles are used as sheers, and at their ends a mast-head iron or sheer head is fitted, consisting of two rings united by a piece of iron about 3 inches long, from the centre of which there is a hook on each side for the steadying guys, and a small block for the halyards is seized on to the iron between the rings. A spare cross-bar (with a span seized along its top side, and the bights, with a thimble in each, projecting just beyond the cross-bar) is placed on the trap of lading, over the midship upright, and lashed down to the bearer. The ends of the sheers are then stepped into the thimbles attached to this cross-bar, and the sail hoisted. On smooth ice, with the wind aft or

on the quarter, a sledge will travel under sail at a good pace.

Such are the arrangements which the results of long experience have shown to be best for Arctic travelling. It has been stated that a better system might be introduced by imitating that of the Hudson's Bay Company's traders in North America; but the circumstances are entirely different between the Company's territory and the true Arctic regions north of the 70th parallel, both as regards the country, the weather, and the men. Sir James Ross and Sir Leopold M'Clintock, the founders of Arctic sledge-travelling, were fully informed respecting the methods of the Hudson's Bay Company's traders, and would have adopted them if they had been suited to the conditions of the Arctic regions north of 70° N., but they are not. The flat Hudson's Bay sledges were tried in the autumn sledge-travelling of 1850, and were found to be worse than useless, while the snow huts are only necessary during intense cold, when they will be used.

The spring travelling of 1876 will probably commence about the 1st of April, and the main attempt will be made by six sledges and 52 men, an arrangement which will only leave ten in the ship, including officers. This fact proves how short-handed the Expedition really is. In Appendix A, under the name of each officer, are described the flags and other

cognisances of the officers commanding sledges, six of which will be seen fluttering in the breeze on some distant ice-field in the early days of next April. The object of all will be to enable one sledge to approach the North Pole, by advancing to the north for 56 days, and attaining a distance of 500 miles from the ship.

The grand achievement will be done by a system of depôts and auxiliary sledges. Let us call the sledges A, B, C, D, E, and F, five of 8 men, and one of 12 men, the object being to enable A to advance singly to the Pole. All start with 40 days' provisions, F (the 12-man sledge) consequently having 480 rations, and the other five 320 rations. After five days F has 432 rations left, and requires 60 to go home. He fills up the other five sledges (who by that time are down to 288 rations) to 320 rations again, leaves 176 rations at the depôt I., and returns (assuming they all started on April 1st) on April 10th. He then comes out again to depôt I., consuming 120 rations out and home, and leaves 360 rations, making 536 at the depôt. After another five days (10 days in all) E, in like manner, fills up the four other sledges to 320 rations, leaves 128 at depôt II., and returns to depôt I. with the 32 that are left to him. He there fills up to 320, goes back to depôt II. with 288, leaves 256 there, making 384 in all, and goes home.

Two depôts, at distances of five and ten days from



the ship, are now stocked with 216 and 384 rations respectively, and four 8-men sledges are loaded with 40 days' provisions each.

Sledges D, C, B, and A then advance for 5 more days (15 in all), and find themselves with 280 rations. D fills up the other three sledges to 320, and keeps enough to take him back to depôt II. (128 rations), leaving 120 rations at depôt III. He takes enough at depôt II. to take him to the ship, and returns home. Three sledges then advance for ten days (25 from the ship) when they have 248 rations left. Sledge C fills up the two others to 320 each, leaves 120 at depôt IV., and goes home, taking 40 at depôt III., 40 at depôt II., and 40 at depôt I. B and A then go on until they are 36 days from the ship, when A is filled up to 320 rations, and left to do battle with the unknown obstacles ahead single-handed. B leaves 80 rations at depôt V., takes up 48 at depôt IV., 40 at depôt III., the same at the other two, and so reaches the ship.

Sledge A is now 36 marches from the ship, and filled up to 40 days' provisions. He presses onwards to the North Pole until half are consumed, when he will be 56 marches from home on about May 26th; and, we may hope, at the goal. He returns to depôt V. in 20 days more, when all will be consumed. But he there finds 80 rations left by B, which takes him to depôt IV., where he picks up 48, at depôt III. 40, at depôt II. 40, at depôt I. what more he requires,

and so returns to the ship after an absence of 112 days. No one, who is without experience of Arctic travelling, can realize the hardships, dangers, and sufferings that these brave men will encounter and overcome. If ever heroes deserved well of their country for upholding her fame and battling for her interests, assuredly our dear friends, now far away in the unknown region, will take their places among the foremost. Anxiety for them we cannot but feel, but it may be softened by well-founded hope, and by confidence in their prudence and ability.

As the earlier sledges return they will be able to do much exploring and collecting work, as well as hunting, at shorter distances from the ship; and we may hope that oxen, reindeer, and birds will be abundant.

Then other officers, including Dr. Moss and Captain Feilden, will probably lead short sledge parties, and display their flags, while performing very useful work. The dogs will chiefly be used in keeping open communications with the 'Discovery'; and the two officers, with their sledge crews, belonging to the 'Discovery,' on board the 'Alert,' will return to their own ship, to be met half-way by parties from the 'Discovery,' who will advance as far as 84° N., and remain until May 15th at least.

The spring sledging work of the 'Discovery' will

be important, and forms an indispensable portion of the scheme. Her parties will continue the exploration of the north coast of Greenland, and a depôt will be formed beyond Cape Stanton. A party will go to Hall's grave and examine the stores. Another, with dogs, will communicate with the post at the entrance of Smith Sound, and leave despatches and letters there. It is fully expected that some vessel will go to the entrance of Smith Sound to communicate and receive news in the summer of 1876; and a boat will probably be sent down by the 'Discovery' during the autumn.

The probability of passing a second winter in the ice, and of not being able to complete the work until 1877, has been considered. If no news is obtained of the 'Alert' by the 'Discovery' in 1876, Captain Stephenson is to make a second attempt to communicate in 1877. But if there is still no news, the 'Discovery' is to land all provisions that can be spared, and to go home in August 1877. For it may then be concluded that the 'Alert' has advanced nearer to Cape Bismarek than to Robeson Channel, and may be expected to come out on the east coast of Greenland.<sup>1</sup> It will at once be seen that, if any

<sup>1</sup> Paragraph 17 of the Admiralty Instructions states that final separation is possible, owing to a sudden or unforeseen movement of ice, resulting in the 'Alert' being carried down the eastern shores of Greenland. This is not in the Report of the Arctic Committee.

such contingency happens, it is most urgently necessary that it should be known to the Government as soon as possible. It is, therefore, the bounden duty of the Admiralty to send a vessel to Smith Sound in 1876, as well as 1877. The relief-ship, which is to go out in 1877, must, if the 'Alert' has not been heard of, winter at the entrance of Smith Sound. If the 'Discovery' cannot get out before August 1877, she is to endeavour to communicate by boat or otherwise with the relief-ship, and the officers and crew are to abandon the 'Discovery' early in 1878, leaving her in a safe position, and as habitable as possible.

But if all goes well the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' will complete their perilous but glorious mission without accident, and return home in the autumn either of 1876 or 1877.

## CHAPTER XX.

## PUBLIC REWARDS FOR ARCTIC DISCOVERIES.

THE principle of granting rewards for public services, and for the achievement of great and memorable exploits, is one which has been established by a long and continuous succession of Parliamentary precedents, and which is now in full force.

It was believed that such rewards, besides serving as recognitions of the labours of those upon whom they were conferred, would act as incitements to others, and thus furnish motives for exertions which would stimulate invention and research. These considerations, which have been proved by long experience to be well founded, have led to the granting of rewards for special services by Parliament. This is now a part of the recognised public policy of the country.

As regards maritime research and discovery, such measures commenced in the reign of Queen Anne, with the passing of an Act (12 Anne, cap. xv.), in 1713, 'for providing a public reward for such per-

son or persons as shall discover the longitude at sea? In the preamble it is stated that 'nothing is so much wanted and desired at sea as the discovery of the longitude, and, though several methods of finding it have been discovered which are true in theory but very difficult in practice, some of which may be capable of improvement, while others may be invented hereafter, yet for want of reward as an incitement, and of money for experiments, no such inventions have been brought to perfection.' The Act, therefore, appointed Commissioners for the discovery of longitude at sea, consisting of several Cabinet Ministers, three Admirals, the President of the Royal Society, the Astronomer Royal, the Master of the Trinity House, and the Professors of Mathematics and Astronomy at Oxford and Cambridge. They were to examine proposals, experiments, and improvements, and to grant proportionate rewards for scientific discoveries, from 20,000*l.* downwards.

The Commissioners of Longitude did most important service in their day. They laid the foundations of the surveying branch of the navy, conceived and matured the plan of the *Nautical Almanac*, and inaugurated the wise system of rewards for Arctic discoveries.

In 1741 an Act (14 George II. cap. xxxix.) was passed for the execution of a survey of the coasts of Great Britain and Ireland, and the Commissioners

of Longitude were authorised to appoint a surveyor, and to incur the necessary expenditure. They selected a Mr. William Whiston, appropriating 5,000*l.* for his expenses; and they had also disbursed a sum of 1,250*l.* for experiments connected with longitude calculations, conducted by Mr. John Harrison. The rewards for Arctic discoveries began to be offered four years afterwards, in 1745 (18 George II. cap. xviii.). An Act was then passed for giving a public reward of 20,000*l.* 'to such person or persons, His Majesty's subject or subjects, as shall discover a North-West Passage through Hudson's Straits to the western and southern ocean of America.' The continued and watchful care of the legislature, as regards these measures, is shown by the passing of another Act in 1753 (26 George II. cap. xxv.), to render that of Queen Anne more effectual, and to enlarge the number of Commissioners; and of another in 1790 (30 George III. cap. xiv.), for continuing the encouragements and rewards, and again adding to the number of Commissioners.

But the great measure for promoting Polar discovery by the offer of rewards was adopted in 1818. This Act (58 George III. cap. xx), was entitled 'An Act for more effectually discovering longitude at sea, and for encouraging attempts to find a northern passage between the Atlantic and



Pacific Ocean, and to approach the Northern Pole; All former Acts on the subject were repealed, and the Commissioners of Longitude were declared to be the First Lords and Secretaries of the Treasury and Admiralty, the Sea Lords of the Admiralty, the Speaker, the President of the Board of Trade, the Governor of Greenwich Hospital, the Judge of the Admiralty Court, the Comptroller of the Navy, the Astronomer Royal, the Professors of Mathematics and Astronomy at Oxford and Cambridge, the President of the Royal Society, and three Fellows named in the Act (Lord Colechester, Dr. Davies Gilbert, and Colonel Mudge), and three other scientific men also named, who were to be paid: Dr. Wollaston, Dr. T. Young, and Captain Kater. For the discovery of longitude by any principle not already known, the Commissioners were to offer three scales of proportionate rewards of 5,000*l.*, 7,500*l.*, and 10,000*l.* They were also authorised to expend 1,000*l.* every year on the publication of experiments, observations, calculations, and tables, and another 1,000*l.* in fixing the positions of places, the latitude and longitude of which were uncertain. A reward of 20,000*l.* was offered for discovering the North-West Passage, and another of 5,000*l.* for reaching the latitude of 89° N. The Commissioners were empowered to award proportionate sums to those who might achieve certain portions of such discoveries. They

were also authorised to publish the *Nautical Almanac* annually.

The Commissioners of Longitude, in pursuance of the powers given them by the Act of 1818, resolved that 5,000*l.* should be awarded to the first ship that crossed the 110th meridian north of America, 1,000*l.* for crossing the 83rd parallel of latitude, 2,000*l.* for the 85th, 3,000*l.* for the 87th, 4,000*l.* for the 88th, and 5,000*l.* for the 89th. On September 4, 1819, Lieutenants Parry and Liddon, commanding the 'Hecla' and 'Griper,' succeeded in crossing the 110th meridian, and became entitled to 5,000*l.* In memory of the event, Parry named a headland on Melville Island, near this meridian, between Bridport Inlet and Winter Harbour, Cape Bonny.

On the return of Parry the first retrograde step was taken. There was a sordid apprehension that some one might claim the whole reward after a portion had been awarded for partial success, such as that of the 'Hecla' and 'Griper.' So, in 1821 (2 George IV. cap. ii.), an Act was passed to amend that of 1818, in which it was announced that proportionate rewards for partial successes were intended to be parts of the 20,000*l.* and 5,000*l.*, so that no more than those sums would ever be payable for making the North-West Passage or reaching the

North Pole. In 1827, when Parry made his gallant attempt to reach the Pole, his men naturally looked forward to the rewards. They justly and properly felt that by their perseverance and daring the comforts of their wives and children would thus be increased, and the prospect of reaching 83° gave an additional incentive to their exertions.

In 1828 the Parliament just preceding the Reform Bill, among other unpatriotic blunders, passed an untoward Act (9 George IV. cap. lxxvi.) repealing the laws relating to the discovery of longitude at sea and for encouraging attempts to find a North-West Passage, and to approach the North Pole, and the Lord High Admiral was authorised to publish the *Nautical Almanac*. The Board of Longitude, after an existence of 115 years, was thus abolished. It had done most admirable service in its day at very slight cost, and especially had it fostered maritime enterprise and promoted Arctic discovery. The expense of the Board of Longitude consisted of salaries of 1,000*l.* a year to each of the three men of science, and of 100*l.* a year to five other Commissioners. Sir George Clerk in his speech on the Navy Estimates on February 27, 1829, announced that although the Board of Longitude was abolished, the Admiralty had retained the services of the three men of science employed by it, Dr. Young, Captain Sabine, and Mr. Faraday, to act as

a council, whose advice would be resorted to on questions of science connected with the public service.

The repealing Act of 1828 was the reversal of a truly national policy, and was opposed to the feelings and traditions of the country and of Parliament. Hence it has been ignored by all subsequent Parliaments whenever the question of rewards for Arctic service has arisen, so that it may now be considered to have been practically, though not formally, abrogated by dint of repeated resolutions which condemn its spirit and intention.

When Sir John Ross returned from his long detention on the coast of Boothia a Select Committee, of which Mr. Gladstone was a member, was appointed to consider his claim for a public reward. This Committee made its report in April 1834. It was of opinion that a great public service had been performed by the discovery of 700 miles of new coast-line, and by the valuable additions to magnetic science. But it especially dwelt on the value of such expeditions in exciting public sympathy with daring enterprise and patient endurance of hardships, and in enlisting the general feeling in favour of maritime adventure. The House of Commons, in accordance with the recommendation of the Committee, granted a public reward of 5,000*l.* to Sir John Ross, and thus practically repealed the dis-

creditable Act passed by the unreformed Parliament in 1828.

On the return of Sir Robert M'Clure and his brave 'Investigators,' in the autumn of 1854, the question of a public reward for Arctic service again arose. On March 12, 1855, Mr. French asked, in the House of Commons, if it was true that the crew of the 'Investigator' had only received 3*l.* per man as compensation for their losses; and Admiral Berkeley replied that the petty officers had received 3*l.* each, but that the men had only been given 2*l.* 10*s.* This question was followed, on June 19, 1855, by a motion from Mr. Mackinnon for a Select Committee, like that which was appointed for Sir John Ross in 1834, to report whether Sir Robert M'Clure and the officers and crew of the 'Investigator' were entitled to any reward. Lord Palmerston at once agreed to the motion, observing that it would have been very unjust to Captain M'Clure and to the feelings of the House if the Government had not given cordial assent to the motion. This Committee made its report on July 31, 1855. It recommended the grant of a public reward of 10,000*l.* to M'Clure and the officers and crew of the 'Investigator;' observing that the reward for the discovery of a North-West Passage was 20,000*l.*, but that 5,000*l.* had already been granted to Sir Edward Parry in 1819, and 5,000*l.* to Sir John Ross in 1834, so that

only 10,000*l.* remained. The Report of the Committee was unanimously adopted. Thus the House of Commons, by treating the reward of 20,000*l.* as still in force, again virtually repealed the Act of 1828, and established another precedent for continuing the wise and just policy of voting rewards for Arctic discoveries. If in 1855 the reward for making the North-West Passage was considered by the House of Commons to be in force, in spite of the repealing Act of 1828, which was thus abrogated a second time, *à fortiori* the reward for reaching the 89th parallel is also in full force.

The above recapitulation of the history of public rewards for Arctic discoveries proves that the Polar Expedition now in the far north is entitled to similar consideration, and that the officers and crews of the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' will, on their return, have an undeniable claim to a suitable reward for their discoveries. But although the action of the House of Commons in 1834 and 1855 establishes the claim to a reward, the repeal of former Acts in 1828 leaves the amount of such reward uncertain and open to consideration.

It was supposed, when the Act of 1818 was passed, that a ship might, under very favourable circumstances, sail to the Pole and back in one season; while the discovery of the North-West Passage would be a more difficult and dangerous enter-

prise. Hence the reward for the former was fixed at 5,000*l.*, and for the latter 20,000*l.* But we now know that the one undertaking is quite as formidable as the other, that a very high latitude can only be reached by facing the same hardships, incurring the same dangers, and performing the same terrible sledge-journeys that were necessary for the discovery of a North-West Passage. Consequently the reward should be the same, namely 20,000*l.* No part of the work has yet been done, and no portion of the North Pole reward has yet been paid. The whole 20,000*l.* will therefore be due to the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' on their return, if any party or individual belonging to the Expedition reaches the 89th parallel. The proportionate rewards, according to former precedents, would be 5,000*l.* for reaching 83°, 10,000*l.* for reaching 85°, 15,000*l.* for reaching 87°, and the whole, or 20,000*l.*, for reaching the 89th parallel—the periphery of the bull's eye of which the North Pole is the centre.

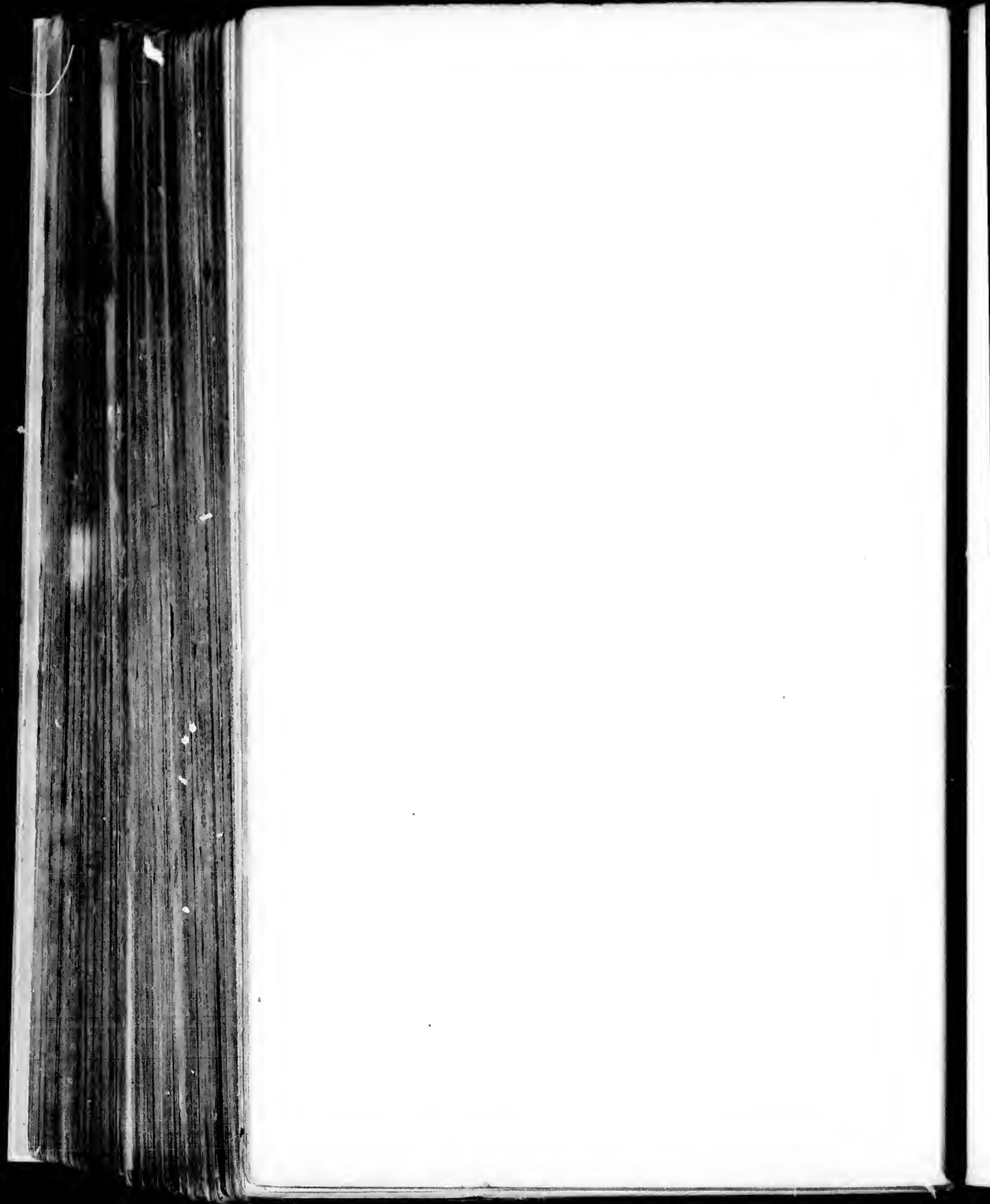
The Parliament and the country will be anxious to welcome the gallant explorers on their return, and it is fortunate that a public reward for their heroism and devotion will be in accordance with strict precedent, and with a policy which has been so often approved and followed on previous occasions, since the days of Queen Anne. It seems very desirable, however, that the history of these public



rewards should be brought to notice during the absence of the Expedition, in order that the facts, and their true bearing and significance, may be kept in mind, and be available, if the question should arise on the return of the Expedition.

It is remarkable that the present Government Arctic Expedition is, with a single exception, the only one which ever left this country, during the present century, without the incentive of a public reward. All others, but one, were either offered 20,000*l.* for making the North-West Passage, 5,000*l.* for reaching 89° N., or 10,000*l.* for discovering the fate of Franklin.

The members of the Arctic Expedition of 1875 have no such incentive; and are solely actuated by patriotic feelings, by a sense of duty, and by the love of adventure. In their absence it is, therefore, not out of place to recall the history of public rewards, and to place on record those precedents which may, hereafter, prove to be applicable to their case.



## APPENDIX A.



### BIOGRAPHICAL DICTIONARY

OF THE

### ARCTIC EXPEDITION OF 1875.

*Aldrich, Pelham.*—There was a Dr. Robert Aldrich, Bishop of Carlisle, and a friend of Erasmus, who was at the baptism of Edward VI., and the funeral of Queen Jane Seymour. He was a man of learning, but opposed to the Reformation, and sat on the trial of Bishop Hooper. His relation was Thomas Aldrich, Archdeacon of Sudbury in 1572, from whom descended Mr. Henry Aldrich of Westminster, whose son Henry was Dean of Christ-Church, 1689–1710. The Dean was an architect and a musician, and composed ‘Those Bonny Christ-Church Bells,’ to sing over his pipe with his friends. His grand-nephew was the Rev. Charles Aldrich, born in 1681, Rector of Henley, where he died in 1737. Another great-great-nephew was Mr. Robert Aldrich, who had three sons, Pelham, Robert, and Frederick. Pelham is a physician of Mildenhall, in Suffolk, and has two sons, Frederick and Pelham. Robert entered the navy in 1828, became a lieutenant in 1842, and went out in the Arctic Expedition of 1850–51 as first-lieutenant of the ‘Resolute’ under Captain Austin. A genial and warm-hearted officer, he was beloved by all on board. He gave lectures to the men on Arctic exploration during winter quarters; and in the sledge-travellings he was away sixty-two days going over

550 miles. He married in March 1853, and has two daughters. Frederick, in holy orders, has taken the name of Blake, and is Rector of Welsh-Bicknor, in Herefordshire. Pelham Aldrich was born on December 8th, 1844. Entering the service in 1857, he served for four years in the 'Marlborough' flag-ship in the Mediterranean; lieutenant September 11th, 1866, in the 'Scout' in the Pacific 1866-69. He was flag-lieutenant to Admiral Key at Malta 1870-72, and first-lieutenant of the 'Challenger' 1872-75. December, 1875, appointed first-lieutenant of the 'Alert.' In March, 1875, he was married to Edith, daughter of Dr. Isaacson, M.D. He is an accomplished musician, and plays the pianoforte. *Arms.*—Or on a fess vert, a bull passant argent. *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George. Per fess vert and or, a bull passant argent, a bordure gobbyony vert and or; the fly 4½ feet, swallow-tailed, the dip 1 foot. *Motto.*—'Fortitudo vincet.'

*Archer, Robert II.*—Son of Clement Robert Archer, Esq., formerly a captain in the army, of Hill House, Hampton. He was born on August 25th, 1851, and entered the service in 1866. Midshipman in the 'Galatea' under the Duke of Edinburgh, 1867-71. Obtained his lieutenant's commission on June 20th, 1872, for passing the best examination of his year (1, 1, 1). Lieutenant in the 'Agincourt' (flag of Admiral Hornby), in the Channel squadron, 1872-74. Second-lieutenant of the 'Discovery,' and in charge of magnetic observations. *Arms.*—Azure, three arrows or. *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George. Azure, three arrows or. The fly 4½ feet, swallow-tailed; the dip 1 foot. *Motto.*—'Bona acta quæ honesta.'

*Ayles, Adam.*—Aged 25, unmarried, Church of England. Born in Dorsetshire. Second-class petty officer in the 'Alert,' doing duty as fore-castle-man.

*Beaumont, Lewis A.*—Born at Paris on May 19th, 1847. Entered the service in 1860. Sub-lieutenant in the 'Belle-rophon' (Captain Macdonald), 1866-67, and in the Royal yacht. Lieutenant August 23rd, 1867, second-lieutenant of the 'Blanche' (Captain Montgomerie), on the Australian station, 1868-71, when he was a messmate of Commander

Markham. He then qualified for gunnery-lieutenant, and was appointed as instructor in the torpedo experiments. September 4th, 1874, he was selected as gunnery-lieutenant of the 'Lord Warden' flag-ship in the Mediterranean. First-lieutenant of the 'Discovery,' and in charge of the navigating duties, as well as of the pendulum observations. *Sledge flag*.—The cross of St. George. On a field gules a cinquefoil ermine. The fly  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet, swallow-tailed, the dip 1 foot. *Motto*.—'Erectus non elatus.'

*Beric, James*.—A native of Dundee, aged 32, married, with two children. Presbyterian. Ice-quartermaster of the 'Alert.' Brought up in the whaling trade, he had been boat steerer in his last voyage with Captain Walker, in the 'Erik.'

*Bulley, Samuel*.—A native of Devonport, aged 24. Stoker in the 'Discovery.'

*Bunyan, George*.—A native of London, aged 29. First-class petty officer in the 'Discovery.' He was with Commander Markham in the 'Victoria.' A man of infinite humour, marvellous play of feature, and sings an excellent song. Married.

*Burrongs, George S.*—Aged 31, married, with three children. Ship's steward of the 'Alert,' and plays the accordion. He was ship's steward's boy in the 'Galatea' with the Duke of Edinburgh, and was the life and soul of the ship's steward's mess on board the 'Duke of Wellington.'

*Bryant, George*.—A native of Southsea, aged 27. First-class petty officer in the 'Discovery.' Captain of the maintop.

*Cane, Frederick*.—Aged 29. From Hampshire. Married, with two children. Church of England. Armourer in the 'Alert;' with some talent for sketching, and a painter. Served in the Ashanti War. (Medal.)

*Capato, Spiro*.—A native of Cephalonia, aged 28. Single. Greek Church. Captain's steward in the 'Alert.' He was with Captain Nares in the 'Challenger.'

*Cartmel, Daniel*.—A native of Lancashire. Born on September 5th, 1838. Married. Senior engineer in the 'Discovery.'

*Chattel, Frank.*—A native of Jersey, aged 30. Captain of the forecastle in the 'Discovery.'

*Chalkley, Thomas.*—A native of London, aged 22. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Colau, Thomas, M.D.*—A native of Cork. Born November 7th, 1830. Served as assistant-surgeon during the Russian War in the Baltic (medal); including service with the advanced squadron in the ice in 1856. In the China War at the capture of the Taku forts, and in the Peiho in 1860 (medal). In the 'Pylades' with Captain Deyncomt, on the North-American station. 1873 in the 'Rattlesnake' during the Ashanti War, and saved the life of Commodore Commerell. Staff-surgeon 31st March, 1874 (medal). He gained the Gilbert Blane gold medal for his medical journal kept on the West Coast of Africa. 1874 in the 'Unicorn,' drill ship at Dundee. He is author of a *Memoir on Parasitic Vegetable Fungi and the Diseases induced by them*; also of an article on the West Coast of Africa. Fleet-surgeon in the 'Alert,' permanent President and Caterer of the ward-room mess.

*Conybeare, Crawford J. M.*—The great-great-grandfather, John Conybeare, was at Westminster School, Dean of Christ-Church, and Bishop of Bristol, 1751-55. He was a native of Devonshire. His son, Dr. William Conybeare, D.D., was a Prebendary of York, and died leaving two sons, John J. and William Daniel. John, born in 1779, was an Usher at Westminster, and Prebendary of York, Professor of Poetry at Oxford, in 1812, Vicar of Bath Easton, and Bampton Lecturer in 1824. William Daniel was Rector of Axminster and Dean of Llandaff, and one of the first English geologists. The Dean left several sons, of whom William John was a Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, and Principal of the Collegiate Institution at Liverpool. Henry, a civil engineer, designed the Vehara waterworks at Bombay; and the Rev. John W. Edward Conybeare is Rector of Barrington, Cambridgeshire. Another son of the Dean is the Rev. Charles Ranker Conybeare, Vicar of Itchin-stoke, in Hampshire, since 1857. His son is Crawford J. M. Conybeare, who was born on May 27, 1854. He served in the

'Liverpool' with Admiral Hornby, in the first flying squadron, and passed for a sub-lieutenant on October 29, 1872 (1, 2, 2). Sub-lieutenant of the 'Discovery,' and in charge of the spectrum analysis observations. *Arms.*—Argent on a saltire sable a pale gules. *Crest.*—A dove with an olive branch. *Motto.*—'Cruce pacem affero.' *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George: Per fess sable and gules, a dove with a branch. A bordure gobbony sable and gules. The fly, 4½ feet, swallow-tailed, the dip 1 foot.

*Cooper, James.*—A native of Ramsgate, aged 26. Second-captain of the maintop in the 'Discovery.'

*Coppinger, R. W., M.D.*—A native of Dublin, born on May 27, 1847. Surgeon in the navy on November 12, 1870, and serving in the 'Cambridge' at Plymouth since August 1874. He is a student of Trinity College, Dublin, and an officer of considerable scientific acquirements, being especially versed in geology. Surgeon in the 'Discovery.'

*Craig, Peter.*—A native of Dundee, aged 22. Presbyterian. Able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Cranstone, George.*—A native of Edinburgh, aged 25. Married, and a Presbyterian. Foretop man in the 'Alert.'

*Cropp, John.*—A native of Portsmouth, aged 28. A gunner of Royal Marine Artillery in the 'Discovery.'

*Darke, Thomas.*—A native of a village near Exeter, aged 29. A private of Royal Marines, in the 'Discovery.'

*Deuchars, David.*—A native of Dundee, aged 29. A Presbyterian, married, with 2 children. Brought up in the whaling trade, he was shipmate of Commander Markham in the 'Arctic' in 1873. Ice-quartermaster in the 'Alert.'

*Dobing, William.*—A native of Selby, near York, aged 28. Gunner of Royal Marine Artillery in the 'Discovery.'

*Doidge, James.*—A Welshman, aged 27. Unmarried. On May 28, 1875, he passed a very creditable examination for boat-swain. A seaman-gunner. Captain of the foretop in the 'Alert.'

*Dominick, Vincent S.*—A native of Gibraltar, aged 32. A



Roman Catholic. Unmarried. Ship's cook in the 'Alert.' Plays the drum.

*Dougall, William.*—A native of Peterhead, aged 40. Ice-quartermaster in the 'Discovery.'

*Edwards, H. W.*—Born at sea, aged 24. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Egerton, George le Clerc.*—Of the house of Egerton, of Egerton and Oulton. Nephew of Sir Philip Egerton, Bart., and son of the late General Caledon Egerton. A daughter of the house of Egerton was mother of Sir Hugh Willoughby, the great Arctic navigator. George le Clerc Egerton was born on October 17, 1852, and entered the service in 1866 in the 'Liffey' (Captain Johnson), in the flying squadron, and then in the 'Ariadne,' training-ship for naval cadets (Captain Carpenter), and 'Invincible' (Captain Soady). He passed for sub-lieutenant on October 15, 1872 (1, 2, 2). In the 'Bellerophon' in the West Indies, flag of Admiral Wellesley, and came home to give evidence on the collision trial. Sub-lieutenant of the 'Alert,' and in charge of the duties of paymaster; also of the amusement gear, and plays the banjo. He has a medal from the Humane Society for jumping overboard to save life. On October 15, 1875, he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant, and re-appointed to the 'Alert.' *Sledge flag.*—The Cross of St. George. Per fess gules and argent, 3 arrows—2 in saltire argent, and 1 in pale sable—banded with a ribband gules. A bordure gules and argent, gobony. The fly, 4½ feet, swallow-tailed. The dip, 1 foot. *Arms.*—Argent a lion rampant gules between 3 pheons. *Crest.*—Three arrows, 2 in saltire argent, and 1 in pale sable, banded with a ribband gules. *Family motto.*—'Virtuti non armis fido.' *Sledge motto.*—'Tanq je puis.'

*Ellard, William.*—A native of Northamptonshire, aged 26, unmarried, and Church of England. Private of Royal Marines in the 'Alert,' and servant to the Chaplain and Naturalist.

*Emerson, George W.* A native of Hull, aged 27. Boatswain's mate of the 'Discovery.' Sings sentimental and comic songs.

*Ferbrache, William.*—A native of Jersey, aged 23, unmarried. A forecandleman in the 'Alert.'

*Feilden, Henry Wemyss, F.R.G.S., F.G.S., Corr. Mem. Z.S.*—Is the second son of Sir W. H. Feilden, Bart., of Feniscowles, by Mary, daughter of Colonel Balfour Wemyss, of Wemyss Hall and Winthank, Co. Fife. He was born on October 6th, 1838, at Newbridge Barracks, Co. Kildare, where his father, then in the 17th Lancers, was quartered. He was educated at Cheltenham College, and became an ensign in the 42nd Highlanders on February 1st, 1856. He served during the Indian mutinies at Lucknow (*medal and clasp*). Afterwards appointed to staff employment with the 1st Gwalior Infantry in 1858, and served during 1859 against the rebels in Bundelcund. In 1860 he was transferred to the 8th Punjab Infantry, and served with that regiment at the Taku forts (*medal and clasp*). Promoted to lieutenant in the 44th, and returned to England in 1861. He went out to the Confederate States, with letters from Messrs. Mason and Slidell to President Davis, ran the blockade, and was appointed Captain and Assistant Adjutant-General on General Beauregard's staff. Afterwards was senior-officer on the staff at Charleston during the siege. He was on the staff of General Hardee when opposing Sherman's march, serving through the campaign which ended in the evacuation of Savannah and fall of Charleston. In the retreat to North Carolina he had a horse shot under him at the battle of Prestonville, and finally surrendered to Sherman in 1865. He married, at Greenville, South Carolina, on December 27th, 1864, Julia, daughter of the late David McCord, Esq., of South Carolina. He returned to England in 1866, and was appointed adjutant of the Lancashire Rifle-Volunteers, passing the Hythe class with an extra first-class certificate. On February 1st, 1868, he was appointed Paymaster of the 18th Hussars, and served with that regiment in India. 1869-73 Paymaster of the 4th, and in September, 1873, of the brigade of Royal Artillery at Malta. In 1872 he visited the Faroe Islands for the purpose of studying the birds. March, 1875, appointed naturalist to the 'Alert.' A good ornithologist, and an indefatigable worker at every branch of science. *Arms.*—Argent on a fess cotised azure three lozenges or, between two martlets in chief and a red rose in

base. *Crest*.—A muthatch perched upon a hazel branch fructed, holding in its mouth a red rose proper. *Motto*.—'Virtutis primum honor.' *Sledge flag*.—The cross of St. George. Per fess azure and argent, a muthatch perched on a hazel-branch. A bordure azure and argent gobbony. The fly 4½ feet, swallow-tailed, the dip 1 foot.

*Francombe, Reuben*.—A native of Oxfordshire, aged 25, married, and Church of England. Sings a good song. Main-topman in the 'Alert.'

*Frederick*.—An Eskimo of Godhavn. Joined the 'Alert,' with twenty-four dogs, July 14th, 1875, with his 'kayak;' highly recommended by the Danish officials as a good dog-driver and hunter.

*Fulford, Reginald B.*—Of the ancient Devonshire House of Fulford, seated at Fulford, near Exeter, since the time of Richard I. Sir Baldwin Fulford, Sheriff of Devon and Vice-Admiral under Henry VI., rescued a lady from a Saracen, Sir Thomas was a Lancastrian, slain at Tewkesbury. Faith, daughter of Sir John Fulford of Fulford, by Dorothy, daughter of the Earl of Bath, was the wife of John Davis of Sandrudge, the great Arctic navigator. Colonel Baldwin Fulford left four sons, the present Baldwin Fulford of Fulford, Dr. Francis Fulford, late Bishop of Montreal, Major William Fulford, R.A., and Vice-Admiral John Fulford, whose son Reginald was born on February 16th, 1850. He entered the service in 1864, and served on the coast of Africa in the 'Bristol,' 1865-66, and in the 'Royal Alfred,' on the West India station, 1867-69; in the 'Monarch' 1869-70, the 'Immortalité' 1870-72, and in the 'Cruiser' in the Mediterranean, 1872-74. Lieutenant on August 8, 1874. Fourth-lieutenant of the 'Discovery,' and assisting Lieutenant Archer with the magnetic observations; also Caterer of the ward-room mess. *Arms*.—Gules a chevron argent. *Crest*.—A bear's head argent. *Sledge flag*.—Square, a bear's head and the motto 'Bear up!' on a field gules. *Sledge*.—'The Faith.'

*Gear, Jonah*.—A native of Husebury, in Somersetshire, aged 30. Ward-room steward in the 'Discovery.'

*Gerard, Daniel.*—A native of Guernsey, aged 26. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Giffard, George A.*—Son of Captain Giffard, R.N., who was killed off Odessa in the 'Tiger.' He was born at Southampton on the 23rd of February, 1849, and entered the service in 1862; in the 'Anora,' under Sir Leopold McClintock, in the West Indies, 1863-67; in the 'Hercules' (Lord Gilford), in the Channel squadron, 1868-70; and then a sub-lieutenant in the royal yacht. Lieutenant 18th August, 1870; in the 'Niobe' (Sir L. Lorraine), in the West Indies, 1871-74. Third-lieutenant of the 'Alert,' assisting Commander Markham in charge of the magnetic observations, and also in charge of the printing. *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George. Gules, an arm issuing from a coronet, holding a stag's head. The fly  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet, swallow-tailed, the dip 1 foot.

*Good, Joseph.*—A native of Carmarthen, aged 30, and unmarried. Was captain's coxswain in the 'Challenger.' Chief Boatswain's Mate in the 'Alert.'

*Gore, W. J.*—A native of Portsea, aged 26. Stoker in the 'Alert.' Single.

*Gray, Alexander.*—A native of Peterhead, aged 37, brought up in the whaling trade. Ice-quartermaster in the 'Discovery.'

*Harley, Daniel.*—Was born at Madras, aged 26. Married. A seaman-gunner, and served in the Ashanti War (*medal*). Captain of the foretop in the 'Alert.'

*Hart, H. Chichester.*—Of Trinity College, Dublin. Born July 29th, 1847. He studied botany, and worked up the flora of parts of the west of Ireland in the field. He won a pedestrian prize in athletic sports at Dublin. Appointed as naturalist to the 'Discovery.'

*Hawkins, John.*—A native of Bristol, aged 33, married, with four children. Cooper and captain of the hold in the 'Alert;' also hair-cutter.

*Heddy, Edward C.*—Carpenter's mate in the 'Discovery,' aged 30.

*Hill, Elias.*—A native of Somersetshire, aged 25, single. A gunner of Royal Marine Artillery in the 'Alert,' and servant to Lieutenant Egerton.

*Hindle, Alfred.*—A native of Lancashire, aged 25. Able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Hitchcock, R. W.*—A native of Woolwich, aged 26. Able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Hobson, Rev. C. E.*—Became a chaplain in the navy on November 22nd, 1872; in the 'Briton' (Captain Bryne) on the East Coast of Africa, and was invalided from Triuncondee in 1874 for fever. Chaplain in the 'Discovery.'

*Hollins, John.*—A native of Bridgenorth, aged 27, a Roman Catholic, and single. Private of Royal Marines in the 'Alert,' and servant to the two engineers.

*Hodges, John.*—A native of Dorsetshire, aged 24. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Hunt, W. F.*—A native of Portsea, only 22, but married. Ward-room cook in the 'Alert,' a baker by trade.

*Joiner, Robert.*—A native of Sussex, aged 34, married, with 3 children. Served in the Ashanti campaign (*medal*). Landing stoker in the 'Alert.'

*Jolliffe, Thomas.*—A native of Portsea, aged 32, married, with one child. Captain of the maintop in the 'Alert.'

*Jones, Frank.*—A native of the Isle of Wight, aged 28. Stoker in the 'Discovery.'

*Kemish, George.*—He was servant to the Consul at Hako-dadi; afterwards steward in yachts. Ward-room Steward in the 'Alert,' and servant to the commander. An excellent steward and cook, zealous, full of resource, and incessantly at work. He is 30 years old, and married.

*Laurence, Edward.*—A native of London, aged 25. Captain of the fore-castle in the 'Alert.' Single.

*Leggatt, George.*—A native of Portsmouth, aged 23. Acting ship's cook in the 'Discovery.'

*Lorimer, William.*—A Scotchman, native of Paisley, aged 24. Single and a Presbyterian. He gave up his rate of leading seaman to join the Expedition. Foretop-man in the 'Alert.'

*Malley, William.*—A native of Cumbria, aged 23. Seaman-gunner. Signaller, but gave up his rate from zeal for Arctic service. In the Ashanti campaign (*medal*). Maintop-man in the 'Alert.' Single.

*Mann, Henry.*—A native of Plymouth, aged 25. Single, and a Wesleyan. Shipwright and carpenter's crew in the 'Alert.'

*Markham, Albert Hastings.*—Of the House of Markham, of Markham and Cotham, in Nottinghamshire; 'a family,' says Camden, 'very famous heretofore both for antiquity and valour.' Margaret, daughter of Sir Robert Markham, of East Markham, was the wife of Sir Henry Willoughby, father of Sir Hugh Willoughby, the great Arctic navigator. William Markham, Esq., of Becon Hall, eldest son of Dr. William Markham, Archbishop of York, had for his second son John a commander in the navy, and for his third the Rev. David Markham, whose son, Clements R. Markham, served in the Arctic Expedition of 1850-51. The youngest son of Commander John Markham, Albert Hastings, was born at Bagnières de Bigorre, on November 11, 1811. He entered the navy on January 25, 1836, and was in the 'Victory' from January to July, 1856. On August 25, 1856, he sailed from Plymouth for China in H. M. S. 'Camilla,' Captain Colville, and served in her until March 3, 1859, when he joined the 'Niger.' In May, 1859, he was in the 'Retribution,' Commodore Edgell, in India. On the breaking out of the war he volunteered for China, and joined the 'Chesapeake' on May 1, 1860; whence he went in May, 1861, to the 'Impérieuse,' flag-ship of Sir James Hope, serving also in the tender 'Coromandel,' and going up to Peking (*medal*). Lieutenant on April 3, 1862, for 'his

gallant conduct in capturing a pirate vessel.' February 1, 1862, acting-lieutenant of the 'Centaur' in Japan, in which vessel he returned to England in June, 1864, after an absence of 8 years. Lieutenant of the 'Victoria,' Captain Goodenough, in the Mediterranean, 1864-67. In 1865 he volunteered for the Arctic Expedition then proposed. First-lieutenant of the 'Blanche' on the Arctic station, 1868-71. Acting-commander of the 'Rosario,' cruising among the New Hebrides and Santa Cruz groups for the suppression of kidnapping, 1871. First-lieutenant of the 'Ariadne' training-ship for naval cadets, from August to November, 1872. Commander November 30, 1872. Author of the 'Cruise of the "Rosario,"' (1873). After going through a course of practical surveying at Southsea he sailed from Dundee in the whaler 'Arctic' for a cruise in Baffin's Bay and Prince Regent's Inlet, to acquire a knowledge of ice-navigation, May to August, 1873. Author of 'A Whaling Cruise in Baffin's Bay' (1874), F.R.G.S. Commander in H.M.S. 'Sultan' in the Channel squadron, October, 1873, to December, 1874. Appointed commander of the 'Alert' on December 8, 1874; also in charge of the magnetic observations, and those relating to the polarisation of light. *Arms.*—Azure on a chief or a demi-lion rampant issuant gules. *Crest.*—A lion of St. Mark winged, with glory or, the fore-paw on a pair of horse hames. *Sledge flag,* worked and embroidered by Mrs. Clements Markham, the cross of St. George. Per fess, or and azure, a winged lion of St. Mark passant, holding a pair of horse hames gules. A bordure gobbony or and azure. The fly, 4½ feet, swallow-tailed. The dip, 1 foot. *Motto.*—'Lucet et emergo.' *Name of Sledge.*—'Marco Polo.' *Flag-staff.*—Presented by Commodore Hoskins, R.N., of lance-wood, surmounted by a truck consisting of a solid silver naval crown, above which is a silver star of five points, and round the staff are silver bands with the Markham crest and monogram.

*Maskell, William.*—A native of Essex, aged 22. Single. His family have always belonged to the Liberal party. Maintopman in the 'Alert.'

*May, William Henry.*—Son of J. William Seaburne May,



Esq., Consul for the Netherlands at Liverpool, and godson to Prince Henry of the Netherlands. His grandfather was an admiral in the Dutch service, and his uncle was aide-de-camp to Prince Henry. He was born in Cheshire on July 31 1849, and entered the navy in 1864, serving in the 'Victoria,' Captain Goodenough, in the Mediterranean from 1864 to 1867 with Commander Markham. Afterwards in the 'Liffey' with the flying squadron, and in the 'Hercules' 1869. (1, 1, 2). Sub-lieutenant in the Royal yacht 1870. Lieutenant, September 7, 1871, and rejoined the 'Hercules.' Studying at Greenwich for gunnery-lieutenant 1874, with a certain prospect of obtaining a fellowship, which he gave up from zeal for Arctic service. Fourth-lieutenant of the 'Alert,' and in charge of the navigating duties; also with Lieutenant Parr, instructed in the use of the transit instrument and alt-azimuth, and in the observation of spectrum analysis. He is a surveyor and an excellent draughtsman, an accomplished musician, and a leader in all sports. *Motto.*—'Nil desperandum.' *Arms.*—Gules a fess between 8 billets or. *Crest.*—A leopard's head issuing from a coronet. *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George. Per fess or and gules, a leopard's head issuing from a coronet. A bordure gobony or and gules. The fly  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet, swallow-tailed. The dip, 1 foot.

*Miller, Matthew R.*—A native of Gosport, born January 31, 1847. Junior engineer in the 'Discovery.'

*Mitchell, Thomas.*—Son of Captain Mitchell, R.N., born on June 25, 1843. Assistant-paymaster in the 'Discovery,' photographer, and also a good artist, a sportsman, and ready to turn his hand to anything useful.

*Mitchell, David.*—An Irishman, aged 25. Maintop-man in the 'Alert.' Gifted with remarkable powers of mimicry, and a fund of dry humour. Single, and a Presbyterian.

*Moss, Edward, L., M.D.*—Son of the late Dr. W. Moss of Dublin, and born on December 15th, 1843. Educated at Dublin, and a medical graduate of St. Andrews in 1862. Travelled in the United States, and then entered the navy on February 29th, 1864. Served in the 'Bulldog' in the West Indies, and

February 1,  
apan, in which  
after an absence  
in Goodenough,  
unteered for the  
utenant of the  
1. Acting-com-  
ew Hebrides and  
ing, 1871. First-  
aval cadets, from  
ember 30, 1872.  
73). After going  
outhsea he sailed  
cruise in Ballin's  
nowledge of ice-  
of 'A. Whaling  
Commander in  
October, 1873, to  
f the 'Alert' on  
netic observations,  
t. *Arms.*—Azure  
es. *Crest.*—A lion  
e-paw on a pair of  
l embroidered by  
George. Per fess,  
sant, holding a pair  
or and azure. The  
*Motto.*—'Luctor  
Polo.' *Flag-staff.*--  
of lance-wood, sur-  
silver naval crown.  
and round the staff  
d monogram.  
, aged 22. Single.  
eral party. Maintop-  
iam Seaburne May,

in the action when she was blown up off St. Domingo; in the 'Simoom' troopship, 1866-70; and in charge of sick quarters at Portland, 1870. Became a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons of Ireland in 1869; and 1872-75 in charge of the Esquimaux Naval Hospital at Vancouver's Island. Dr. Moss has communicated several papers to the Linnæan, Zoological, and other Societies. He is a first-rate sportsman, a good artist, and excellent in figuring objects under the microscope, and possessed of considerable scientific attainments. He has invented an admirable way of obtaining microscopic organisms from sea-water by the use of a syphon, at the entrance of which cotton wool is placed, which catches them. Surgeon in the 'Alert.' *Sledge flag*.—The cross of St. George. Per fess sable, argent, and gules, a wivern's head issuing from a mural crown, charged with a pellet. The fly  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet, swallow-tailed; the dip 1 foot. *Motto*.—'In hoc signo vinces.'

*Murray, John*.—A native of Ayrshire, aged 30. Presbyterian. Private of Royal Marines in the 'Discovery.'

*Nares, George Strong*.—Mr. Nares, agent to the Earl of Abingdon, had two sons—James, born in 1715, and George, in 1716. Dr. James Nares was an eminent musician, organist to George II. and George III., and died in 1783, leaving a son, Robert,<sup>1</sup> born in 1783 and educated at Westminster School, who was Archdeacon of Stafford and editor of the *British Critic*, F.R.S., F.S.A., V.P.L.S., and died in 1829, having married a daughter of Dr. Smith, the Head-Master of Westminster School. The second son became Sir George Nares,<sup>2</sup> a judge of Common Pleas 1771-86, who married Mary, daughter of Sir John Strange, Master of the Rolls, by Susan, daughter of Edward Strong of Greenwich, the friend of Sir Christopher Wren and master-mason of St. Paul's Cathedral from its foundation to the placing of the last stone on the cupola in 1710. Sir George Nares died in 1786, leaving several children. Of these, Edward<sup>3</sup> was educated at Westminster School, and entered holy orders. He was Rector of Biddenden, Professor of

<sup>1</sup> *Gent. Mag.* lxxviii. 1157; *Ann. Reg.* lxxi. 220.

<sup>2</sup> *Gent. Mag.* lxiv. 578.

<sup>3</sup> *Gent. Mag.* lxxxiii. 215.

Modern History at Oxford, and author of *The Life of Lord Burleigh*. He married Lady Charlotte Churchill, and had several children. John Nares was many years police-magistrate at Bow Street, and married Miss Brigstock, whose sister, Mrs. Green, was grandmother of Sir Bartle Frere. He died on December 16th, 1816, leaving four sons. Sophia, a daughter of Sir George Nares, married Admiral Darcy Preston of Askham Bryan. Of the four sons of John Nares, Francis was an old bachelor and member of the Athenæum; John Bever was in the Ceylon Civil Service, and died on board H.M.S. 'Illustrious' in 1810, on his way home, aged 24; William Henry entered the navy in 1802, was a retired commander, and died in 1867, aged 78, leaving several children; and Edward Proby Nares, the youngest, was a solicitor. He married his cousin Ann, daughter of Admiral Preston, and had a son Edward, captain R.N., who in 1863 married Augusta, daughter of William Law, Esq., who died the same year, and has a daughter. Captain W. H. Nares married first, Elizabeth daughter of J. Dodd, Esq., who died in 1836, leaving John Strange Nares, in the Bengal Artillery, who died at Peshawur in 1856, George Strong Nares, and Owen A. Nares, in holy orders, Rector of Letherston in Pembrokeshire, who in 1858 married Emily, daughter of Dr. Llewellyn, Dean of St. David's. Captain Nares married secondly, in 1844, Susan, daughter of Alexander Innes and widow of John Ramsay, Esq., of Barra Castle, near Aberdeen, by whom she had the present John Ramsay Esq., of Barra Castle, and Christina. By Captain Nares she had a son, Henry Innes, in the 17th Regiment. George Strong Nares was born in 1831, and entered the navy on board H.M.S. 'Canopus' in 1845, when he was shipmate with his cousin Edward. From 1848 to 1851 he was in the 'Havannah' with Captain Erskine, in the Pacific and New Zealand. In 1852-54 he served as a Mate in the Arctic Expedition under Captain Kellett on board H. M. S. 'Resolute.' In the first winter he acted Lady Clara in 'Charles II.,' and in the second he read papers to the men, with diagrams, on the laws of mechanics and on winds. In the autumn travelling of 1852 he was away twenty-five days, and went over 186 miles. In the sledge

travelling he commanded Meekam's auxiliary party of 1853, going over 665 miles in sixty days. In 1854 he was away in the extreme cold of March for fifty-five days, and went over 584 miles. He was promoted in 1854, and was a lieutenant in the 'Excellent' from November 15th, 1854, to May 23rd, 1855. He then served in the 'Glatton' and 'Conqueror' in the Mediterranean, 1856-58. On June 22nd, 1858, he married Mary, daughter of William Grant, Esq., the banker at Portsmouth, and has issue. From 1859 to 1862 he was first-lieutenant of the 'Britannia,' training-ship for naval cadets, and from 1863 to 1865 of the 'Boscawen,' training-ship at Southampton. At this time he published his *Seamanship* (250 pages 8vo, and 400 woodcuts), which has gone through five editions. Commander, 1865, of the 'Salamander,' surveying in Torres Strait and inside the Barrier Reef 1865-68; of the 'Newport' 1868-69, surveying the coasts of Sicily and Tunis. Captain, 1869, of the 'Shearwater,' surveying the Gulf of Suez, 1869-72, captain of the 'Challenger,' 1872-74, and author of *Reports on Ocean Soundings and Temperature*, Nos. 1, 2, 3. On December 9th, 1874, he was appointed captain of the 'Alert,' to command the Arctic Expedition. F.R.S., F.R.G.S. *Arms.*—Gules on a fess or 3 pheons proper. *Crest.*—2 spears in saltire proper, banded azure. *Sledge flag,* worked and embroidered by Lady McClintock, a union-jack. On one side, in the centre of the cross, the Nares' crest and motto, on the other a rose, thistle, and shamrock. *Motto.*—'Dum spiro spero.'

*Ninnis, Belgrave, M.D.*—A native of London, born on October 8th, 1834. He was employed in Australia making natural-history collections, having entered the navy August 1st, 1861. Surgeon at the Plymouth Hospital, 1874. Staff-surgeon in the 'Discovery,' in charge of the meteorological observations, and wine-caterer to the wardroom mess.

*Norris, George.*—A native of the Isle of Wight, aged 29. A widower, and two children. Carpenter's crew in the 'Alert.'

*Oakley, Thomas.*—A native of Hampshire, aged 26. Private of Royal Marines in the 'Alert,' and servant to Lieutenants May and Giffard. Single.

*Parr, Alfred A. Chase.* Of the family of Parre of Parre in Prescot, Lancashire, was Sir William Parre, who married Elizabeth, heiress of Thomas de Ros, Baron of Kendal, and died in 1405. His descendant, Sir Thomas Parr of Kendal, died in 1518, leaving William Parr, created Marquis of Northampton, Catherine, wife of Henry VIII. and Queen of England, and the Countess of Pembroke. From a younger branch of the same family came John Parr of Rainford, whose great-great-grandson was John Parr, Mayor of Liverpool in 1773, who, by his wife Anne, daughter of the Rev. Henry Wolstenholme, Rector of Liverpool, had a son, John Owen Parr, a merchant of London. He had three sons, the Rev. John Owen Parr, Vicar of Preston, General Thomas Chase Parr, and Lieutenant-Colonel Samuel Parr, both of the Bombay Army. Of the four sons of General Parr, the two older were educated at Harrow: Charles Chase Parr, who became a lawyer in 1871, and Alfred A. Chase Parr, who was born on June 14, 1849, and entered the navy in 1864. He served on board the 'Victoria,' Captain Goodenough, in the Mediterranean, from 1864 to 1867, when he was a shipmate of Commander Markham. From 1868 to 1870 he was in the 'Pylades' on the Pacific station. He obtained his commission by his examination on June 15, 1870, and the 'Bennet Testimonial' for the best examination of the year at the Naval College. He was Lieutenant of the 'Hercules' in the Channel squadron, with Captain Sherard Osborn in 1871. He took a first class in gunnery in August 1873, and was appointed gunnery-lieutenant of the 'Monarch,' Captain Hood, on June 10, 1874. Second-lieutenant of the 'Alert.' In charge of astronomical observations, and those for spectrum analysis; he is wine-caterer to the wardroom mess. *Arms.*—Pale of four azure and argent, a bordure engrailed sable. *Crest.*—A woman's head, crowned. *Sledge flag.*—The cross of St. George. Per fess, argent and azure, a woman's head crowned. A bordure gablewise argent and azure. The fly,  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet, swallow-tailed; the dip, 1 foot. *Motto.*—'Faire sans dire.'

*Paul, Charles Wm.*—An able seaman, who volunteered from the 'Valorous,' and joined the 'Discovery' at Godhavn. He

is a seaman-gunner. A powerful man. A native of Plymouth.

*Pearce, Alfred B.*—A native of Surrey, aged 26. Able seaman in the 'Alert,' doing duty as forecandle-man, and a seaman-gunner. Single.

*Pearson, John.*—A native of Hastings, aged 25. Single. Seaman-gunner. Forecandle-man in the 'Alert.'

*Petersen, Neils Christian.*—A Dane, aged 36, and married, formerly in the Danish Greenland service, which he left, and joined the expedition of Dr. Hayes up Smith Sound in 1860-61, as dog-driver. A cooper by trade. Dog-driver in the 'Alert.'

*Petty, Henry.*—A native of Warwickshire, aged 32. A private of Royal Marines, in the 'Discovery.'

*Phillips, James.*—A native of York, aged 20, the youngest man in the Expedition. Ward-room cook in the 'Discovery.'

*Porter, George.*—A native of Birmingham, aged 26. Single. Gunner of Marine Artillery in the 'Alert,' and servant to Lieutenants Aldrich and Parr.

*Pullen, Rev. W. H., M.A.*—Minor Canon at Salisbury, 1863-75, author of 'Dame Europa's School.' Born February 29, 1834. Chaplain in the 'Alert.'

*Radmore, John R.*—A native of Faversham, aged 32. Married. Chief carpenter's mate in the 'Alert.'

*Rawlings, Thomas.*—A native of Portsmouth, aged 32. Married and one child. An old shipmate of Commander Markham in the 'Blanche.' Captain of the forecandle in the 'Alert.'

*Rawson, Wyatt.*—The name was originally Ravenson, of Fryston, in Yorkshire, whence many branches descend. In the fifteenth century the Lord Prior of Kilmainham and a Knight of St. John, was a Rawson, bearing 'party per fess undec sable and azure a castle with 4 towers argent.' Mr. Christopher Rawson has, with other children, Commander Rawson, R.N., of the 'Hercules,' and now of the 'Lord Warden,' and Wyatt Rawson, born on August 27, 1852, who passed some of his

early years in Canada. Wyatt Rawson entered the navy in 1866, in the 'Minotaur,' Captain Goodenough, and was afterwards in the 'Narcissus,' under Captain Codrington, in the flying squadron. During the Ashanti War he was in the 'Active' with Commodore Hewett, and distinguished himself in the march to Kumasi with the naval brigade, when he received a bullet wound in the thigh, at the battle of Amoaful (*medal*). Passed (1, 1, 2). Lieutenant, March 31, 1874. Third-lieutenant in the 'Discovery,' and has received instructions for pendulum observations. F.R.G.S. *Motto*.—'Laus virtutis actio.' *Arms*.—Per fess undee sable and azure, a castle with 4 towers argent. *Crest*.—A raven's head and neck couped, holding in the beak a ring or. *Sledge flag*.—The cross of St. George. Per fess undee azure and sable. On an escutcheon argent a raven's head with a gold ring in its bill. A bordure gobbony azure and sable. The fly, 4½ feet, swallow-tailed; the dip, 1 foot. *Flag-staff*.—On the truck a raven's head with a gold ring in its bill.

*Rayner, Eli*.—A native of Norfolk, aged 27. Gunner of the Royal Marine Artillery in the 'Discovery.'

*Regan, Michael*.—A native of Cork, aged 24. Able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Rourke, Jeremiah*.—A native of Ireland, aged 36. Leading stoker in the 'Discovery.'

*Suggers, John S.*—A native of London, aged 22. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Sarah, George R.*—A native of Falmouth, aged 24. Ship's-steward in the 'Discovery.'

*Self, James*.—A native of Hampshire, aged 27, single. Foretop-man in the 'Alert.'

*Shepherd, James*.—A native of Bristol, aged 33. Cooper and captain of the hold in the 'Discovery.'

*Shirley, John*.—A native of Landport, aged 34, married, with four children. Stoker in the 'Alert.'

*Simmonds, Thomas*.—A native of Kent, aged 30. Captain of the forecastle in the 'Discovery.'



*Simmons, John.*—A native of Gloucestershire, aged 27. Second-class petty officer in the 'Alert,' but doing duty as fore-castle-man. Seaman-gunner. Widower, one child.

*Simpson, Thomas II.*—A native of Kent, aged 24. A seaman-gunner. Maintop-man in the 'Alert.'

*Smith, Thomas.*—A native of Daventry, aged 26, single. Private of Royal Marines in the 'Alert,' and servant to the two medical officers.

*Smith, John E.*—Sailmaker in the 'Discovery.'

*Stephenson, Henry Frederick.*—Son of Mr. Stephenson, for many years Commissioner of Inland Revenue, by Lady Mary Keppel. His brother is Solicitor to the Treasury. He was born on June 7th, 1842, and entered the navy in 1855, serving in the Black Sea (*medal*). In 1857 he went out in the 'Raleigh' with his uncle, Sir Henry Keppel, to China (*medal*), and afterwards joined the 'Pearl,' serving in the Naval Brigade under Captain Sotheby during the Indian mutinies (*medal*). Lieutenant, January 7th, 1861, in the 'Emerald' in the Channel, 'Cormorant,' East Indies, and from May, 1863, to February, 1865, in the 'Rattler' in China. Commanded the gunboat 'Heron' during the Fenian disturbances, on the Canadian lakes, from March, 1866, to January, 1867. In 1867 went out as flag-lieutenant to his uncle, Sir Henry Keppel, in China, and was promoted to a death vacancy in the 'Rattler' on April 26, 1868. She was lost on a rock in the Strait of La Perouse in September, 1868. Commander of the Royal yacht 1871-74. Captain, January 6th, 1875. Appointed as Captain of the 'Discovery.'

*Stewart, David.*—A native of Edinburgh, aged 27. A Presbyterian. Captain of the foretop in the 'Discovery.'

*Stone, George.*—Aged 28. Petty officer, and second captain of the foretop in the 'Discovery.'

*Stubbs, Edward.*—A native of York, aged 25. Stoker and blacksmith in the 'Alert.' Single.

*Stuckberry, Thomas.*—A native of Surrey, aged 31. Single. Captain of the maintop in the 'Alert.'

*Sweet, William R.*—A native of Devonport, aged 31. A stoker in the 'Discovery.'

*Symons, Robert.*—A native of London, aged 23. A main-topman in the 'Alert,' and printer's assistant to Lieutenant Gillard. A widower, with one child. A seaman-gunner.

*Taws, Edward.*—A native of Dundee, aged 43. Ice-quartermaster in the 'Discovery.'

*Thores, John.*—A native of Peterhead, aged 36. Brought up in the whaling trade, and now a harpooneer. Married, with nine children.

*Thornback, James.*—A native of London, aged 23. An able seaman in the 'Discovery.'

*Waller, W.*—Private of Royal Marines in the 'Discovery.'

*Ward, William.*—A native of Flamborough, in Yorkshire, aged 39. Armourer in the 'Discovery.'

*Wellington, W. C.*—A native of Portsca, aged 29. Sergeant of Royal Marine Artillery in the 'Discovery.'

*White, George.*—A native of Hampshire, born on April 20th, 1847. Engineer in the 'Minotaur' with Captain Goodenough. Junior Engineer in the 'Alert,' and in charge of the photography. Married.

*Windsor, Henry.*—A native of Plymouth, aged 24. Carpenter's crew in the 'Discovery.'

*Winstone, George.*—A native of Gloucestershire, aged 29. Foretop-man in the 'Alert,' a nephew of Good, the boatswain's mate, and with him in the 'Challenger.'

*Wood, William.*—A native of Warwickshire, aged 30, married, and two children. Colour-sergeant of Royal Marines in the 'Alert;' also photographer, assistant to Mr. White.

*Woolley, William.*—A native of Bridgewater, aged 24, married. A signalman, but gave up his rate out of zeal for Arctic service. Foretop-man in the 'Alert.'

*Wootton, James.*—A native of Nova Scotia, born April 10th, 1840, married. Senior Engineer of the 'Alert.' He was a shipmate of Commander Markham, as an engineer, in the

'Sultan,' 1873-74, and his seniority as engineer is from June 27th, 1867. In 1874 he was studying at the College at Greenwich.

*Wyatt, Benjamin.*—A native of Westminster, aged 27. An able seaman in the 'Discovery,' and printer.

<i>Officers and men.</i>	<i>Officers.</i>
Average weight 149½ lbs. . . . .	150½ lbs.
.. height 5 ft. 6 in. . . . .	5 ft. 8¾ in.
.. girth 36¾ in. . . . .	36¾ in.
.. chest capacity, 257 cubic in. . . . .	259 cubic in.
.. age 28 . . . . .	29½ "

THE  
was  
Feb  
mus  
in M  
the s  
God  
Aret  
to e  
Davi  
take  
Hols  
tudes  
serial  
perat  
Athl  
longi  
Sir L  
and t  
taken  
south  
4th, C  
Dredg

is from June  
ago at Green-  
er, aged 27.

Officers.  
0½ lbs.  
5 ft. 8¾ in.  
3¾ in.  
0 cubic in.  
0½ "

## APPENDIX B.

---

### THE CRUISE OF THE 'VALOROUS.'

THE 'Valorous,' an old paddle-wheel steamer of 1,200 tons, was commissioned by Captain Loftus Jones at Devonport, in February, 1875, with a very young ship's company, having an unusually large proportion of boys and ordinary seamen; and in March she was selected for the important duty of filling up the ships of the Arctic Expedition with coals and provisions at Godhavn. Her further orders were, after taking leave of the Arctic ships, to fill up with coal in the Waigat Strait, and then to carry a series of deep-sea soundings and dredgings down Davis Strait and across the Atlantic. Her instructions were to take a few dredgings on a line from Disco to the latitude of Holsteinborg, and eight deep-sea soundings between the latitudes of Holsteinborg and Cape Farewell, the 3rd and 8th with serial temperatures, the rest only with surface and bottom temperatures. Then twelve soundings were to be taken across the Atlantic, between 60° and 57° N. latitude, ending at 20° E. longitude, in the space between the line of soundings taken by Sir Leopold McClintock in the 'Bulldog' in 1860, to the north, and those on a great circle between Valentin and Newfoundland, taken by Captain Dayman in the 'Cyclops,' in 1857, to the south. The 1st, 3rd, 5th, 7th, 8th, 10th, and 11th were to be soundings with bottom and surface temperatures, and the 2nd, 4th, 6th, 9th, and 12th were to be with serial temperatures. Dredgings were also to be taken when practicable, and Mr. Gwyn

Jeffreys, with Mr. Herbert Carpenter as his assistant, went out in the 'Valorous' to examine the results of the dredgings. The necessary apparatus for deep-sea sounding and dredging was supplied.

Sailing in company with the Arctic ships, the 'Valorous' parted company on June 11, encountered the same severe weather, and again sighted the 'Alert' on June 28, the day on which the heavy eastern pack was first met with, drifting round Cape Farewell and up the Greenland coast. It became necessary for this paddle-wheel steamer to pass through the formidable drifting-ice; and Captain Jones, by the exercise of great care, and himself coming the ship from aloft, succeeded in bringing her through the pack without serious injury to the paddles. He prudently kept away to the westward with a view to getting clear of the ice, but a strong ice-blink, indicating the near proximity of the middle pack, was seen away to the westward on the afternoon of the 28th, and the 'Valorous' was in no small danger of having to encounter risks to which such a vessel ought not to be exposed. Captain Jones is a careful officer and a thorough seaman. In going to the north he kept outside the Torske (cod) banks, and well away from the dangerous coast of Greenland, with its many unsurveyed outlying reefs and islets, and, to avoid a rock near Disco, the position of which is doubtful, he kept away close to the Whale Fish Islands, and arrived safely at Godhavn on Sunday evening, July 4.

The 'Valorous,' in going up, took seventeen soundings between latitude  $63^{\circ} 45'$  N. and Godhavn.

From the 4th to the 15th the officers and ship's company were actively engaged in filling up the 'Alert' and 'Discovery' with coals and provisions, and supplying the explorers with everything that forethought could suggest as likely to be useful. It was then necessary, as the 'Valorous' had become very crank after discharging all the stores, to get in ballast, and Captain Jones's intention was to remain at Godhavn after the Expedition had sailed, and to get in the required quantity of ballast before proceeding to carry out the latter, and less important, part of his instructions. But Captain Nares expressed a wish that the 'Valorous' should accompany him as far as Ritenbenk, in order

to enable him to finish his letters, a request to which Captain Jones of course readily acceded.

After accompanying the Expedition to Ritenbenk, and receiving the mail-bags, the 'Valorous,' with Mr. Krarup Smith, the Inspector of North Greenland, on board as pilot, proceeded to Ritenbenk Kulbrud, on the Disco shore of the Wüigut Strait, on July 17, anchoring off that exposed coast, in front of the coal cliffs, at 1 p.m. The cliffs are of shale and sandstone, with four horizontal seams of coal clearly visible from the ship. High above them there is a ridge of basaltic buttresses formed by the waterfalls pouring over their summits, and a steep green slope of spongy grass and mosses intervenes between the foot of the basalt precipice and the top of the coal cliffs.

The 'Pandora' was expected to arrive at Disco about July 20, and Captain Allen Young had requested that, if possible, an arrangement might be made for having a supply of coal ready for him on his arrival. Mr. Krarup Smith, on being applied to, very obligingly took prompt measures to ensure compliance with the request; and when the 'Valorous' arrived at the Ritenbenk Kulbrud, a party of Eskimo, with an old Danish overseer, had already been at work since Monday, July 12, digging out coal. Two tents were pitched on the cliff, a gang of rather pretty girls were digging away at one of the upper seams, and the men were fishing in kayaks, while another tent was pitched on the beach near the two large *umiaks*, in which the women, tents, and provisions had come from a place on the Disco shore called Ujrasussuk. The Eskimos were clearing away the overlying shale, so as to lay bare a large surface of coal about two-thirds of the way up the cliff. Mr. Krarup Smith inspected the work, and, before taking leave and returning in his boat to the Settlement of Ritenbenk, he said that 40 tons of coal would be ready for Captain Allen Young as soon as the 'Pandora' arrived.

The lowest seam of coal close to the beach appeared to be the best, and here the working parties from the 'Valorous' commenced operations. It is a light coal, containing bitumen, and it was found that 1 lb. of it boiled a gallon of water in 25 minutes, which English coal did in 18 minutes.

The strait between the island of Disco and the Noursoak Peninsula, on the mainland of Greenland, is eighty miles long from Arve Prins Island to Hare Island at its outlet in Ballin's Bay, and ten miles wide. At the north corner of Arve Prins Island there is a deep fjord separating it from the Noursoak Peninsula, with the great discharging glacier of Tossukatek at its upper end. The glacier sends forth a constant stream of huge icebergs down the strait, which the Dutch well named the 'Waigat,' or blow-hole. The Danes call it 'Waigattet,' and the Eskimo 'Skareseksak.' A current generally flows down the Waigat into Ballin's Bay, which carries with it the whole of the icebergs from the Tossukatek glacier, and many from that of Jacobshavn; but the drift of the bergs is also influenced by the winds, which blow up or down the strait. The S.E. wind drives the icebergs over to the Greenland shore, while those from the N.W. bring them across to the Disco side. Dark mountains rise up on either hand. Those of Disco average a height of 3,000 feet, while on the Greenland side the Noursoak Mountains are loftier, with mighty precipices and serrated ridges and peaks.

It would be difficult to conceive a more precarious anchorage than that off the open coast of this iceberg-laden Waigat. The best position that presented itself had been selected in front of the coral cliffs, which are in  $70^{\circ} 3' 24''$  N. latitude, and about half-way down the strait. At each end of the cliff, which extends for about two miles, there is a wide swampy delta formed by the drainage of the inland glaciers, off which shoals have formed. These shoals afforded some slight protection to the 'Valorous,' for the icebergs grounded at them, and remained aground until the heat and sea reduced their bulk and set them afloat again. Several bergs of enormous size were thus aground, and in threatening proximity to the ship.

When the 'Valorous' arrived the mass of icebergs was on the Greenland side, the wind being from the south-east, but it was evident that a wind might spring up from the opposite direction at any moment, when the ice would come over, and the ship would be in a hazardous position, particularly if the weather was foggy. On Sunday, the 18th, Captain Jones sent



the cutter across the Waigat with the Navigating Lieutenant, Mr. Broad, who was accompanied by Lieutenant Callwell, and the Author of the present work, to ascertain whether there was safe anchorage at Atanekerdluk; the locality famous for the fossil miocene plants that have been found there by Dr. Walker, Dr. Brown, Professor Nordenskiöld, and others, and described by Professor Heer. It took five hours to beat across the strait, against a dead foul wind, amidst hundreds of icebergs and drifting berg pieces.

Atanekerdluk Harbour is formed by a mass of coarse-grained dolerite about a mile long, which is connected with the mainland of the Noursoak Peninsula by an isthmus of sand, forming a bay on either side, the northern bay being further protected by a basalt rock joined to the main by another spit of sand. The water in the north bay is very deep, and the entrance was blocked up with icebergs. The south bay, facing the stream of bergs, was entirely filled with ice. The mountains above Atanekerdluk rise abruptly to a height of 4,000 feet, ending in sharp peaks, and the strata containing fossil plants consist of ferruginous clay 1,200 feet above the sea. The deep gorges lower down show the geological section described by Brown and Nordenskiöld, shales with thin sand-beds and coal-seams belonging to the upper cretaceous period. The whole is crossed by vast dykes of eruptive rock, which are weathered out into distinct walls on either side of the ravines, about ten feet broad. One basaltic pillar, called 'Rink's Obelisk,' stands on the face of the mountain, just over the harbour. Above, where the fossils are chiefly found, the formation is of the Miocene period.

At 6 P.M. it came on to blow hard with rain, and threatening dark clouds were banking up across the Disco Mountains. The scene was indescribably grand and wild. An army of icebergs was drifting down the Waigat, and occasionally calving or turning over with a loud echoing noise. Some of them were of great height, with their pinnacles and summits peering up through the wild sea and mist. Now and then a beam of sunlight broke out a peak of Disco Range in a brief relief. The wind carried the bergs swiftly out of the

harbour, with only the oars squared. Then a close-reefed foresail was hoisted, and she scudded before the squalls at a brave pace, breasting and dashing through the waves, while the white spray curled round her and flew from her bows. The spray also dashed wildly over the icebergs, which were drifting down the Waigat, rising and falling on the waves, and occasionally coming into collision with a loud roar. It was no easy work to steer clear of them, so thickly were they crowded together, and once a shift of wind in a squall took the sail aback. It was a wild and dangerous passage, and the boat did not reach the 'Valorous' until near midnight. Neither Atanekerdluk nor any part of the Waigat are fit places for a paddle-wheel steamer.

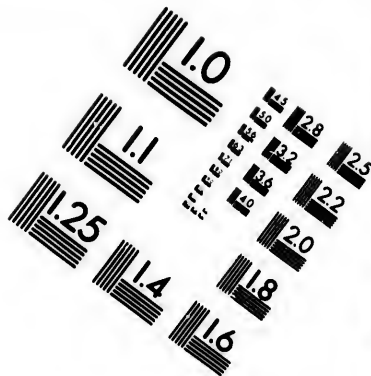
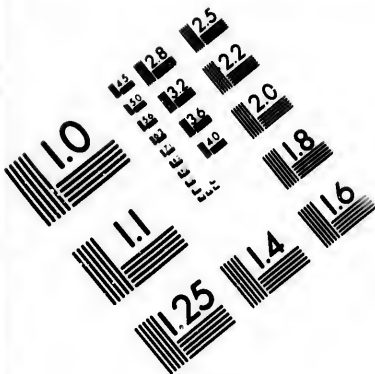
In calm weather the scenery of the Waigat is, however, very lovely. Icebergs rest quietly on the glassy surface of the sea, and the sharp serrated outline of the Noursoak Range stands out in clear relief against a bright golden sky, while the grand precipices of Disco have a ruddy reflection on them from the midnight sun. There is certainly no better place for studying the formation and movements of the icebergs, which can be seen drifting in hundreds out of the glacier-discharging fjord, and floating in imposing masses down the strait, grounding and again afloat, calving with loud discharges, and breaking up with a noise like thunder. On one, with lofty peaks and much snow, a thin reddish band was observed running diagonally across and passing through the berg—being on both sides. These discolourations in bands are not uncommon. They must be layers deposited on the surface glacier by dirty running water, and when seen on a berg they show the angle at which it has fallen over. Again a line of clear sapphire blue is frequently seen to cross the white mass of an iceberg, which also passes through it and appears on the other side. When the berg breaks up this transparent blue ice separates from the white opaque mass, and the two kinds may be seen floating on the sea, and washed up on the beach. When the berg was a portion of the mother glacier a rivulet must have spread over the surface at one time and been frozen, forming the hard transparent layer of blue ice, afterwards snow has fallen and

been compressed above it, and thus a blue line or a brown line, according as the rivulet was clean or dirty, is formed, which appears in the iceberg when it becomes detached. Off the Ritenbenk coal cliffs there is an incessant rumbling noise through the night, a combination of the roar of many waterfalls pouring over the basalt summits, of others dashing down the cliffs, of the grinding of ice on the beach, and of the calving of bergs in the offing.

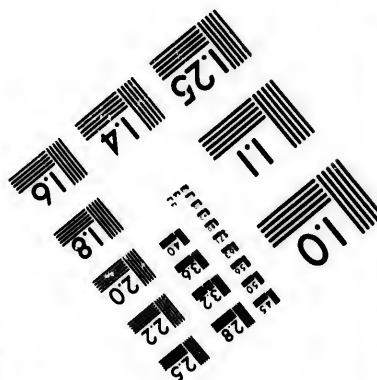
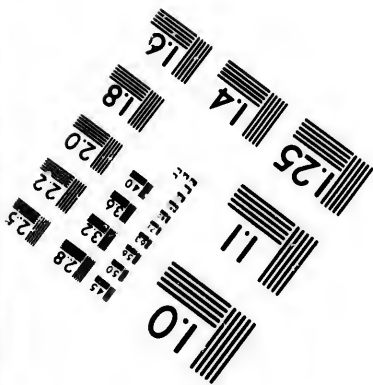
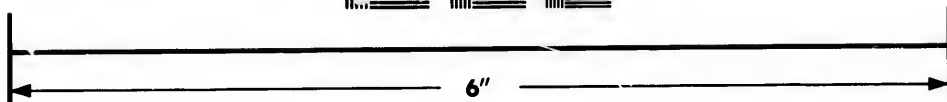
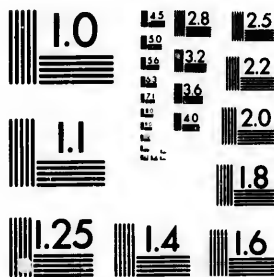
At one part of the cliffs a dyke of white basalt has cut through the strata to the beach, and at the south-eastern end there is a mass of ferruginous clay, which contains many impressions of fossil plants of the upper cretaceous period. Beyond the cliffs is the delta two miles across, formed by the drainage of the interior glacier, which here breaks through the basaltic ridge, and, in the course of ages, has entirely worn down the cliffs, grinding the sand to powder and scattering the coal over the plain and adjacent sea. The delta is traversed by numerous streams flowing from the glacier, and winding amongst great tufts of turf and boggy earth, covered with *equisetum* and dwarf willow. The delta presents a concave outline to the sea, formed of a ridge of sandy beach with a narrow backwater having tidal outlets between it and the swampy plain. The shores of the Waigat consist of cliffs alternating with these swampy deltas, and are quite different from the outline laid down on the chart.

The ship had been in constant danger from the bergs, and on Wednesday, the 21st July, a larger mass of ice than usual drifted down and made it necessary to get under weigh. The wind was shifting to the north, and the anchorage was no longer safe. During five days the men had worked admirably at the coal-seams, and in eighty-eight hours they got on board no less than one hundred and five tons. In the evening of the 21st the 'Valorous' steamed down the Waigat, and was off Hare Island, at the north end of Disco, the next morning. She was not an hour too soon, for the wind had shifted round to the north with fog, which would have brought all the ice over to the Disco side of the Waigat, and the ship would have stood a good chance of being driven on shore.





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N. Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

18  
20  
22  
25

1.0  
1.5  
2.0

The second and supplementary part of the work imposed upon the 'Valorous' now commenced, namely, the dredging and sounding between Disco and the latitude of Holsteinborg. But it was also necessary to complete the work of getting in the ballast, which had been broken off at Godhavn, and Captain Jones decided upon putting into Holsteinborg for that purpose. Godhavn would now be considerably out of the way, while Holsteinborg is clear of the east ice drifting from the south, and at the same time conveniently situated for commencing the deep-sea soundings on the parallel of  $67^{\circ}$  N., in accordance with the instructions.

The first deep-sea sounding and dredging in Baffin's Bay was attempted by Sir John Ross in 1818. He invented what he called a deep-sea clam, consisting of a pair of forceps kept asunder by a bolt, and so contrived that, on the bolt touching ground, a weight slipped down a spindle and closed the forceps, which retained samples of the bottom. On September 1, 1818, in  $73^{\circ} 37'$  N. and  $75^{\circ} 25'$  W., he sounded in 1,000 fathoms, and obtained a beautiful *Caput Medusæ* (*Asterophyton*) entangled on the line, the first animal that was ever brought up from such a depth. It is a very curious star-fish with long branching tentacles. In July, 1871, the Swedish steamer 'Ingegra,' which brought home the meteoric stones found by Nordenskiöld at Ovisak, took soundings with surface and bottom temperatures off Upernivik and Svarte Huk, two off Disco, and eleven off the coast from Rifkoll to Cape Amalia, twenty altogether, but no deep-sea dredgings.

The first dredging of the 'Valorous' was a few miles north of Hare Island, at the mouth of the Waigat, in latitude  $70^{\circ} 35'$  N. But Mr. Gwyn Jeffreys had already dredged both in and outside the harbour of Godhavn, obtaining a good collection of the molusca, crustacea, and other organisms; as well as off the Ritenbenk Kulbrud, with the interesting result that the bottom of the Waigat, though covered with glacial mud, is found to be rich in animal life. The arrangements for dredging on board the 'Valorous' were similar to those in the 'Challenger,' except that the work was done from the fore instead of the main yard-arm. In sounding it is necessary to shorten and



furl sails, and have the ship under steam to keep her over the line. An iron pulley is placed on the fore-yard outside the boom-iron, and a four-inch hawser is rove through it to trice up the accumulator, which consists of twenty pairs of india-rubber bands three-quarters of an inch in diameter, three feet long, and stretching to seventeen feet, when they exert a pressure of seventy pounds. This arrangement takes off all strains on the dredge-rope, which might otherwise cause it to part. The bands are kept separate by being rove through holes in a circular disc of wood, at the bottom of which there is a nine-inch block with a patent sheave, and through it the dredge-rope runs. The dredge-rope, two-and-a-half inch, of the best Italian hemp, is coiled away in a rack or 'sheep-pen' abaft the mizenmast, and is marked as a sounding-line. It passes through the block at the end of the accumulator, and is then made fast to the dredge, the other end being brought to the donkey-engine for heaving in. The dredge is an iron framework with arms connected together by iron screw-bolts, and between them there is an iron tongue with a swivel, to which the rope is attached. On each of the long sides of the iron framework there is a broad piece of knife-edged iron, at an angle of about  $10^{\circ}$  from the perpendicular, to skim the surface off the bottom and throw it into the sack, which is made of net-work of soft line in very small meshes, and secured to the framework by lacing. The sack was covered with hides in which holes were pierced to prevent it from being cut by rocks. An iron bar was secured to the lower end of the framework, to which a line of swabs was fastened, to entangle any animals missed by the dredge.

At 1 P.M. of July 22 the dredge went down in 175 fathoms, and was brought up by the donkey-engine. It contained many organisms in very tenacious mud, and several splendid specimens of the *Asterophyton* (*Caput Medusæ* of Sir John Ross) were adhering to the swabs. There was a second dredging at 4 P.M. On the 23rd two dredgings were taken in the afternoon, with equally valuable results; but it was found that the long tentacles of the *Asterophytions* and other echinoderms got inextricably entangled in the thick swabs; so Captain Jones had some yarns of duck carefully frayed out and secured in a row to the

bar below the dredge, which answered much better. On Saturday the 24th the 'Valorous' was in sight of Rifkoll, and over the Torske bank, where there were twenty and sixteen fathoms. Two very rich hauls of the dredge were taken in the afternoon, which brought up many echinoderms, including a great number of *Holothuria* and crustacea, among which was the curious *Caprella* or naked shrimp, and a good supply of molluscs of Arctic forms. Another dredging was taken on the 26th in sixty fathoms.

On Sunday the 25th the ship was near the Knight Islands, a long reef placed on the chart just to the north of Holsteinborg; but the weather was foggy, and Captain Jones prudently stood out to sea, waiting for the mists to clear away. The 26th was also foggy, and the 'Valorous' continued to stand off the land, being about forty miles from Holsteinborg, and to the southward at midnight.

The fog cleared away in the morning of Tuesday, July 27, and the 'Valorous' shaped a course to Holsteinborg, the current setting her rapidly to the north until, at 7 A.M., she sighted the outermost of the Knight Islands. According to the general chart the harbour of Holsteinborg is approached by an east course a mile or two to the south of these islands. There is also a special plan of the harbour, which was surveyed by Mr. Stanton, the master of the 'Phoenix,' in 1854; but it only shows the inner anchorage, and affords no information respecting the approaches. Captain Jones, after getting well clear of, and three miles to the south of the Knight Islands, the only danger indicated on the chart, found himself ten miles outside Holsteinborg and—so far as the chart or sailing directions informed him—in the fair way for the harbour. Feeling his way carefully in, he shortened sail, and shaping a course nearly east, proceeded under steam at a rate of four knots. This speed was necessary to keep the ship under command, as there was a strong tide flowing to the northward, and setting against the ship's starboard bow. Ahead, at a distance of five miles, there was a round island, which was taken to be one shown on the plan with a beacon on it. Although several miles from the port, Captain Jones was on the point of stopping the engines and sending a

boat in for a pilot, when the ship struck on a sunken rock at 9.15 A.M. At the time there were two leadsmen on each paddle-box with leads constantly going, and a minute before the port leadsmen had got seventeen fathoms. Most providentially the tide was rising, but the wind was freshening, and for the next hour the ship continued to bump heavily on the rocks both ahead and under the engine-room on the starboard side. Captain Jones wisely determined not to back the engines, but to wait for the tide to rise, and in the meanwhile the paddle-box boats were got out, anchors were laid out, and all necessary precautions were taken. If a gale had come on the danger would have been very great, but otherwise there was good hope that the ship would float at flood tide.

The cutter was sent away at 10.30 A.M., in charge of Lieutenant Wood, accompanied by the Author of this work, to ascertain the position of Holsteinborg, get a pilot, and give notice of the accident. There was a chop of a sea with a fresh breeze, and heavy fog hanging over the Greenland Mountains, though the Knight Islands were in sight to the north, and the round island, for which the cutter steered, was visible five miles to the east. On coming closer no beacon was to be seen, and it became a puzzle to know how to proceed, for the charts were evidently wrong and misleading. Hauling closer to the wind, to look round another island further north, three kayaks came in sight, containing Eskimos belonging to a party encamped on one of the islands (that called Marryat Island in the plan, the proper name of which is Iglutalik) to fish for halibut. One named Gideon was at once sent off to the 'Valorous' as a pilot, while red-haired grinning Isak and another guided the cutter through a labyrinth of islets and rocks to the settlement. It turned out that the round island was not on the plan or chart, while it intercepted the view of the island on which the beacon is placed according to the plan, called Fredrick VII. Isle, but the real name of which is Amertlok. There is no beacon, but only a flag-staff. Holsteinborg consists of five very neat wooden houses, a store, a church, and a dozen Eskimo habitations; the houses painted black or white with red roofs, the huts of stone with glass windows and wooden

gable-roofs. The church dates from 1773, and the clergyman's house is a few years older. The population of the settlement, the native name of which is Sisimiut, is 201; and of the whole colony of Holsteinborg, including Sisimiut and eight other stations, 565. Holsteinborg stands on a patch of bright green turf surrounded by sombre masses of granite with a background of magnificent precipitous mountains, ending in a sharp peak called *Nususak*, or 'the top-knot,' in Eskimo; and in Danish *Kærling-hetten*. It is improperly named Mount Cunningham on the Admiralty plan. The settlement is approached from the harbour by a little creek, with perpendicular gneiss rock on one side, and on the other an inner cove containing a schooner-rigged boat and several whale-boats. The harbour is very deep, and protected by outlying islets, and opposite Holsteinborg fine masses of gneiss, with bright patches of green in the ravines, rise to a height of 2,000 feet. It was here that the Holsteinborg settlement was originally formed, and the lofty peak above the old site is called the *Preeste Fjeld*, from the famous priest and naturalist Fabricius having climbed its almost perpendicular sides, and built a cairn on its summit.

Mr. Lassen, the Governor of Holsteinborg, with Johan Leonard, the pilot, at once came out in the cutter. Fortunately the wind had died away and the ship had floated off soon after noon. But she was making much water, and there was a serious leak near the fore-foot. She was piloted round to the south of all the unknown dangers, and safely anchored off the settlement of Holsteinborg at 7.10 P.M.

Mr. Lassen said that, owing to reefs and sunken rocks not indicated on the chart, Holsteinborg could only be approached from the south. It so happens that ships always have come from the south: the 'Victory,' with Sir John Ross, in 1829, the 'Phoenix' and 'Brendalbane' in 1853, the 'Fox' in 1858, the 'Juniata' in 1873, and the annual ships from Denmark. But it appears that, between 1850 and 1860, a Scotch fishing-schooner, approaching from the west, struck on this very reef. Mr. Lassen reported that to the westward there are three reefs at a distance of nine, twelve, and fourteen miles from the harbour, on the innermost of which the 'Valorous' struck;

while further to the south, and fourteen miles from the harbour, there are other rocks not visible above water. None of these dangers are indicated either on the plan or chart. On the 28th and 29th Captain Jones and Mr. Broad were occupied in making a survey of the approaches to the harbour. It was found that the Knight Islands, instead of running out from the land in an east and west line, as shown on the general chart, trend at a sharp angle to the south-west, that other islands were out of their places, and that several islands and rocks were not shown; while no warning of danger is either given in the sailing directions or indicated on the plan. Practically it was a very dangerous and unsurveyed coast, and without reliable charts no precautions can remove all risk in approaching it. Certainly the captain of the 'Valorous,' throughout the voyage, was most careful and watchful in the performance of the difficult and hazardous service that had been entrusted to him.

At first the water made at the rate of eight inches an hour, and the pumps were kept constantly going. The divers reported that several feet of the main keel and the lower part of the gripe were torn away or split, and that the garboard strakes on both sides were started. When the ship was docked it was found that her injuries were even more serious, but it was also found that the divers had made a very good job of the temporary repairs. A strong bulkhead, as a coffer dam, was built at a distance of twelve feet from the stem, and nine feet high and wide, fitting to the flooring, orlop deck, and sides, and forming a nearly watertight compartment to confine the main leak. The keel was drawn together by a clamp, and the garboards by seventeen bolts driven through them, and into the dead wood, the whole being covered with lead sheeting and copper, which made all safe for crossing the Atlantic. A mizen trysail was thrummed, in case it should be required. The ship's company, composed mainly of mere lads, both at the coal-seam and at the weary pumps, worked well and cheerfully, and when the ship was on shore they showed energy, promptitude, and presence of mind. If ever men earned special reward for exceptional service the young ship's company of the 'Valorous' struck;

have so earned, and well deserve the recognition they have since received.

The Holsteinborg region presents much that is interesting, especially as regards the difference between its flora and fauna and those of the more northern parts of Greenland. The vegetation is richer, and flowers, such as *epilobium*, grow in great profusion, while bunches of sorrel and angelica are brought off for sale. The Knight Islands literally swarm with razor-bills, which take the place occupied by the looms in the far north. The plumage of the two species (*Alca arra* and *Alca torda*) is the same, and the only difference is in the bills, one razor-shaped, the other short and pointed, indicating the difference of food as the cause for the northern and southern habitats of the two birds. The razor-bill appears to live chiefly on the sea-eggs (*Taropneustes Dröbachiensis*), bits of the broken shells of which are scattered over the rocks. Glaucous gulls and kittiwakes breed on the Knight Islands. The handsome red-breasted merganser (*Mergus serrator*), and the harlequin duck (*Histrionicus torquatus*) are also birds common round Holsteinborg, which are not met with north of Disco. Eider and king-ducks are abundant. There is a great fishery of rock-cod, salmon, trout, and huge halibut on the banks outside, and trout abound in the small lakes and streams. Edible scollops are procured from the rocks (*Pecten islandicus*), and among the crustacea were found the very curious little creatures which swim about on their backs in small ponds on the islands (*Apus glacialis* and *Branchipus paludosus*), and are well described by Fabricius. The former resembles the trilobite of Silurian times. They form the common food of ducks and divers. Mr. Gwyn Jeffreys and Mr. Carpenter were enabled to obtain four interesting dredgings, with the use of the governor's boat, in ten and in thirty fathoms.

On August 8th, the divers having completed their labours, the 'Valorous' sailed from Holsteinborg, and recrossed the Arctic Circle at midnight. Although, in her injured condition, it was necessary to return to England with as little delay as possible, Captain Loftus Jones was determined to do his utmost to carry out his instructions; and he succeeded in taking a most

important line of soundings down Davis Strait and across the Atlantic, over previously untouched ground.

The four following soundings were taken down the centre of Davis Strait:—

August 10.—Lat. 64° 5' N.; Long. 56° 47' W.

410 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . . 41°

Bottom " . . . . 36°

The dredge brought up three molluscs (one a brachiopod) belonging to the Norwegian seas, but not previously known as Greenland species; also *Antipathes arctica*.

August 11.—Lat. 63° 9' N.; Long. 56° 43' W.

1170 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . . 42°

Bottom " . . . . 36°.18

The dredge brought up a *dentalium*, and many foraminifera.

August 12.—Lat. 62° 6' N.; Long. 55° 56' W.

1,350 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . . 45°

Bottom " . . . . 35°.4

August 14.—Lat. 59° 10' N.; Long. 50° 25' W.

1,750 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . . 45°

Bottom " . . . . 33°.8

The dredge brought up two minute crustaceans new to science, caprellæ, and a minute bivalve, besides other molluscs, siliceous sponge spicules, globigerinæ, and a rare crustacean (*Pourtalesia*).

The Atlantic soundings go over an unexplored area between the lines of the 'Bulldog' and 'Cyclops.' They are seven in number, as follows:—

August 16.—Lat. 58° 14' N.; Long. 46° 29' W.

1,660 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . . 49°

Bottom " . . . . 34°.27

Serial temperatures were taken at every 200 fathoms.



*August 17.*—Lat.  $57^{\circ} 50' N.$ ; Long.  $44^{\circ} 52' W.$

1,860 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . .  $53^{\circ}$

Bottom „ . . . .  $33^{\circ}.4$

The dredge brought up globigerina ooze.

*August 19.*—Lat.  $56^{\circ} 11' N.$ ; Long.  $37^{\circ} 41' W.$

1,450 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . .  $53^{\circ}$

Bottom „ . . . .  $36^{\circ}.2$

Stony bottom. The dredge brought up stones, exquisite siliceous sponges, a brachiopod, and foraminifera.

*August 20.*—Lat.  $56^{\circ} 2' N.$ ; Long.  $34^{\circ} 51' W.$

690 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . .  $53^{\circ}.5$

Bottom „ . . . .  $38^{\circ}.2$

Black volcanic stones, echinoderms, siliceous sponges, annelids.

*August 21.*—Lat.  $55^{\circ} 58' N.$ ; Long.  $31^{\circ} 41' W.$

1,220 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . .  $55^{\circ}.5$

Bottom „ . . . .  $36^{\circ}.76$

Mud.

*August 22.*—Lat.  $55^{\circ} 38' N.$ ; Long.  $28^{\circ} 42' W.$

1,485 fathoms—

Surface temperature . . . .  $54^{\circ}.5$

Bottom „ . . . .  $36^{\circ}.66$

Mud.

*August 23.*—Lat.  $55^{\circ} 10' N.$ ; Long.  $25^{\circ} 58' W.$

1,785 fathoms—

A gale of wind, with a very heavy sea, came on on the 24th, and continued during the two following days, which put an end to further sounding, as by the 26th the 'Valorous' had reached known ground off the west coast of Ireland.

Besides performing her chief duty connected with the Arctic Expedition, the 'Valorous' has undoubtedly done much useful work during her cruise of three months to Greenland. The positions of several places in the Waigat, incorrectly placed

in the Admiralty chart, have been accurately fixed. Holsteinborg has been surveyed, and the dangers in approaching it have been laid down. No less than fifty-seven soundings have been taken in Davis Strait and the Atlantic; and dredgings, which have yielded very important results, have been brought up within and outside Godhavn, in the Waigat, off Hare Island, on a line down the centre of Davis Strait, and in a previously unexamined part of the Atlantic. Several new forms have been discovered, but the most interesting results have reference to questions of geographical distribution of the Greenland and Norwegian marine faunas. The Atlantic soundings show that there is a 'cap' or ridge, with only 690 fathoms on it, and comparatively steep sides, at a distance of about 400 miles S.E. of Cape Furrowell, in  $56^{\circ}$  N. and  $34^{\circ} 51'$  W. Basaltic and other volcanic stones were brought up, and it is remarkable that these stones are sharp and angular, and not water-worn, as would have been the case if they had been conveyed any considerable distance by a current.

The 'Valorous' arrived at Devonport, after an absence of three months, on August 29. Her officers and ship's company have done good service, and have met cheerfully and zealously faced dangers, borne hardships and discomforts, and performed much heavy additional work of a novel character. Their services deserve some recognition, whilst those of their gallant captain, to whose energy, prudence, and high seamanlike qualities the success of the voyage is due, are sufficiently indicated by the above succinct statement of the work that has been achieved. Captain Loftus Jones has been exonerated from all blame by the Lords of the Admiralty for the grounding of the ship off Holsteinborg, and the able and judicious way in which he carried out his instructions has been fully approved. The officers and ship's company of the 'Valorous,' in recognition of the arduous character of the service, have been granted double pay from the day the ship left Spithead to the day of her return to Devonport. The results of the cruise of the 'Valorous' are a collateral benefit derived from the despatch of an Arctic Expedition, and have been looked upon and rewarded as the first-fruits of that great national enterprise.

## APPENDIX C.

---

### THE CRUISE OF THE 'PANDORA.'

THE object of the Expedition fitted out by and at the expense of Captain Allen Young, R.N.R., and Lieutenant Frederick G. J. Lillington, R.N., was to proceed up Bassin's Bay, to execute such exploring work as might be possible, and especially to attempt to reach King William Island, and make a more thorough search for the relics of the 'Erebus' and 'Terror.' They also intended, if possible, to bring home late news of the Arctic Expedition. Although Captain Allen Young was fully prepared for a winter, he had no intention of risking detention, unless he succeeded in reaching such a position as would enable him easily to make a thorough examination of King William Island, with the snow off the ground.

A suitable vessel for the purpose was found in the 'Pandora,' a gunboat purchased from the Government, of 430 tons, and engines of 80 nominal horse-power, with a lifting screw. She was well strengthened for Arctic work at Southampton, barque-rigged, and, when heavily laden, she has a draught of water of 12 feet. She has 8 boats, including a small steam-launch and 3 complete whale-boats. The 'Pandora' hoisted the white ensign of the Royal Yacht Squadron.

The complement of the 'Pandora' was 31 officers and men all told. Captain Allen Young is well known as the companion of Sir Leopold M'Clintock in the 'Fox,' and one of the most per-

sovering and during of Arctic travellers. Lieutenant Frederick G. J. Lillingston, R.N., is a young officer who is deeply interested in Arctic work; and the third executive English officer was Navigating Sub-Lieutenant George Pirie, R.N., an accomplished young surveyor, who was a volunteer for the Indian Marine Survey Department. Through the intervention of Commodore Jansen, Lieutenant Koollemans Beynan, of the Royal Dutch Navy, an observant and very promising officer, also joined the 'Pandora,' with a view to acquiring experience in ice-navigation. He had recently returned from the Sumatra squadron, in which he has been for the last two years, including service with the naval brigade on shore at Achin. The other companions of Captain Allen Young were Mr. McCahan of the *New York Herald*; Mr. de Wilde, an artist; Dr. Horner, the surgeon; Messrs. Ball, Porteous, and Jones, the engineers; Mr. Mitchell, the boatswain; Mr. James, the carpenter; and Mr. Henderson, the harpooneer. Mr. Henry Toms, quartermaster in the 'Fox' during her memorable voyage in 1857-59, joined his old shipmate as gunner of the 'Pandora.' Joe, the Eskimo, the faithful companion of Captain Hall, came over from New York to join the 'Pandora'; and there were seventeen seamen, including Thomas Florence, aged 61, who like Mr. Toms had served with Captain Allen Young in the 'Fox.'

The 'Pandora' sailed from Plymouth on the 28th of June, 1875, and, like the Arctic Expedition, encountered head-winds and a succession of heavy gales from the west and north-west. On the 9th of July she lost her jibboom. The first ice was seen on July 28th, in 58° 50' N., and 45° 30' W., and on the next day a fresh breeze from the S.E. took them into Davis Strait. Passing through the stream of Spitzbergen ice, the 'Pandora' reached open water close in-shore, and arrived at Ivigtot, the port for the cryolite mine in South Greenland, on the 1st of August. Here Allen Young purchased and took on board 20 tons of coal, and, sailing the next day, he discovered an extensive reef on the coast of Greenland in 66° 12' N., and 53° 42' W., about 42 miles south of Holsteinborg Harbour, where H.M.S. 'Valorous' was then repairing damages. The 'Pandora' arrived at Godhavn, in Disco Island, on August 7,

encountered a gale of wind in Disco Bay on the 8th, obtained a good team of dogs at Ujarasussuk, took in 40 tons of coal in 12 hours at the Ritenbenk Kulbrud, and proceeded down the Waigat Strait into Baffin's Bay on August 10. On August 13 the 'Pandora' arrived at Upernivik, but only stopped an hour to purchase more dogs.

Melville Bay was found to be in a most extraordinary state. Excepting a few bergs, there was not a piece of ice of any description to be seen in the very place where, at this time of August, the 'Fox' was beset and forced to winter. On the 16th the 'Pandora' passed Cape York and the Crimson Cliffs of Beverley, of which the artist made some fine sketches, and arrived at the Cary Islands, having had to beat against a strong northerly gale. Captain Allen Young landed the mails for the Arctic Expedition on the north-west island, but he did not find the letters for home on that occasion, as they had been placed, with Dépôt A, on the easternmost island of the group. He found, however, the remains of the cairn, with the record, erected by the Author of this work, when serving as a midshipman on board H.M.S. 'Assistance,' on August 21, 1851, on the site of an older cairn, on which was a piece of wood with the date 1827 cut on it. Captain Young also found two other cairns, built by whalers in 1867 and 1869. The 'Pandora' then ran before a northerly gale for Lancaster Sound, killing two bears and capturing one alive off Cape Horsburg. But on entering the Sound on August 21, a barrier of ice was found to extend across from Cape Warrender. At last an opening was found along the southern shore, and the 'Pandora' reached Beechey Island on the 25th, where the house built by Captain Pullen in 1854, when in command of the 'North Star,' was found to have been broken into by bears, and the dépôt was much injured by them. The stores were surveyed and put in order, the house again made secure, and Mr. de Wilde, the artist, made several sketches and took photographs of the graves of the 'Erebus' and 'Terror's' men. Captain Allen Young weighed the same evening, and shaped his course for Peel Sound.

On the 28th, after some difficulties with fogs and ice-floes, the 'Pandora' entered Peel Sound, and passed the furthest

point reached by the 'Fox' in 1858. There was not a particle of ice to be seen to the south, and the 'Pandora' sailed along the coast of North Somerset, all on board being full of hope of reaching King William Island without a check. In the evening they were off the part of the coast where Sir James Ross had built a cairn at the farthest point reached during his memorable sledge journey with M'Clintock, in 1849. Captain Young landed on Sunday, August 29, found the record left by Ross, and deposited one in its place. The 30th was a lovely day, the waters of Peel Sound were as smooth as glass, and the explorers were rapidly approaching Bellot Strait. The land on either side had first been examined and laid down by Allen Young himself, during his arduous journey in the spring of 1859. They reached Roquette Island, only ten miles north of Bellot Strait, but only to find an impenetrable field of old ice stretching from shore to shore. At this point the 'Pandora' was 150 miles from King William Island, too great a distance for examining its shores in July and August, when the snow is off the ground (which was the aim of the Expedition), and getting back to the ship before the navigable season was over, without danger of being detained a second winter. The 'Pandora' was only provisioned for one winter; it therefore became necessary to return, with a view to preventing a ruinous waste of power and resources, and to making another attempt next year. This first trial had been gallantly made, and was, on the whole, encouraging. The 'Pandora's' voyage was already a most remarkable one.

Captain Young reluctantly turned from the scenes of his former labours and triumphs, as it was obviously impossible to approach nearer to King William Island during the navigable season. With some difficulty the 'Pandora' retraced her steps out of Peel Sound and Barrow Strait, and, before returning home, it was resolved to make another attempt to find the letters of the Arctic Expedition at the Cary Islands. After beating up from Lancaster Sound against a northerly gale, the 'Pandora' arrived off the south-east Cary Islands on September 11, and sighted the cairn built by the 'Alert.' Lieutenants Lillingston and Beynan landed, and brought off the letters and records, and the 'Pandora's' head was turned south.

They reached Disco again on September 20, passed Cape Farewell on October 2, and, running before a fierce north-west gale, the 'Pandora' arrived safely at Spithead on October 16.

The cruise has been extremely interesting and instructive, and has been most useful in giving experience of ice-navigation to the young officers; while complete harmony and good feeling prevailed fore and aft. The 'Pandora' penetrated far down Peel Sound, to a point never known to have been attained by any vessel, and Captain Allen Young, at considerable risk, performed a great and valuable public service in bringing home the letters of the Arctic Expedition.



A.

ed Cape Fare-  
orth-west gale,  
ber 16.  
nd instructive,  
ice-navigation  
nd good feeling  
ted far down  
n attained by  
siderable risk,  
e in bringing

# INDEX.

## AAR

**AARSTRÖM**, Capt., his voyage with Tobiasen, 89  
 Abel Island (Wiehe Island), 92  
 Adams, Capt. W., of the whaler 'Arctic,' 48, 50, 153, 155  
 Admiralty, first Arctic expedition sent out by, 35; second, 65; third, 67; despatches Parry to reach the Pole, 71  
 Admiralty Inlet, explored by whalers, 150  
 'Advance,' Dr. Kane's brig, 162, 163, 167, 269  
 'Æolus,' schooner of Capt. Tobiasen, 89  
 'Albert,' winter voyage of, to relieve ice-bound crews on Spitzbergen, 97  
 Aldrich, Pelham, lieutenant, 395; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 327  
 'Alert,' H.M.S., equipment of for the expedition of 1875, 325; officers and seamen of, 326-330; strengthening of, 333; boats and engines, 334, 335; provisions on board, 336; damage done during the gales, 345; additional coals and stores received from the 'Valorous,' 353; advance and intended winter quarters, 364; importance of

## ANJ

the heating and ventilation of, 365  
 Aleutian Isles, 209  
 'Alexander,' Capt. Ross's ship, 137  
 Alexander Cape (Smith Sound), 138, 161, 164, 169  
 Alfred, King, told the story of the first Arctic expedition, 3  
 Allman, Dr., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318  
 Altmann, Norwegian captain, rediscovery of Wiehe's Land by, 90  
 America, discovery of, by Normans, 112  
 American Expedition (*see* Kane, Hayes, Hall)  
 American Geographical Society, reception of Capt. Hall by, 172  
 Amsterdam Island (Spitzbergen), 44  
 Amsterdam, 26; Arctic research promoted by merchants of, 9, 11  
 Amusements, winter, of the Arctic expedition of 1875, 368  
 Anadyr, Gulf of, 199  
 Anjou, Russian Admiral, open water seen by, 19; his expeditions, 202, 203; his achievements, 214

## ANT

- Anthropology (*see* Ethnological Results)
- Archangel, Burrough arrives at, 6; Dutch open trade with, 9; ships for Arctic discovery built at, 64; Russians sail from, along Siberian coast, 197
- Archer, Robert H., lieutenant, 396; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331
- Arctic Botany, study of, 348
- Arctic Committees, 318
- Arctic Deputation, interview of, with Mr. Lowe, 316; with Mr. Disraeli, 318
- Arctic discoveries, public rewards for, 383-393
- Arctic enterprise of the English, 1; and *passim* (*see* Expeditions) of the Dutch, 9 (*see* Barents, Spitzbergen); of the Swedes, 82, 93; of the Norwegians, 87, 216; of the Germans, 84, 85, 93, 122-126; of the Russians, 64, 65, 70, 196-215; of the Americans, 162, 179
- Arctic expeditions, by Government, by Spitzbergen route, 65, 67, 69, 71; Russian, 64, 70, 196-215; Swedish, 82, 83, 94-97; German, 84, 122-126; Austro-Hungarian, 224-261 (*see* Phipps, Buchan, Parry, Clavering, Baffin, Ross, Graah, Inglefield, Kane, Hayes, Hall, Belcher, Richards, Osborn, McClintock, Mecham, McClure, Kellett, Collinson, Leigh Smith); equipment of an English naval, 263; advantage of, 263; importance to the navy, 273; absurd objections to, 274; small percentage of deaths in, 275; necessity for being under Government, 282; John

## ARC

- Milton's view of, 8; campaign of 1873, 151; by sledge travelling (which *see*), 266, 267; importance of, 181; results of, 288 *et seq.*
- Arctic expedition of 1875, 314; efforts to secure its despatch, 315; preparation of the Arctic memorandum, 317; decision of Mr. Disraeli, 318; officers, 325; ships, 325; appointment of committee and their report, 319; intended route, 320; equipment of the ships, 325; description of the ships, 332; provisions, 336; scale of diet, 337; advantages and disadvantages of, 338; departure of the Expedition, 340; experience bad weather, 341; the first ice, 344; arrival at Godhavn, 346; scientific observations, 352; departure from Godhavn, 354; receive a supply of dogs, 354; last farewell, 357; at Upernivik, 359; news regarding the weather, 359; progress through the Middle Pack, 360; intended winter quarters, 362; future proceedings, 362; progress up Smith Sound, 362; importance of the heating and ventilation of the ships, 365; observatory and schools, 367; winter amusements, 368; details of the sledge-travelling, 369; outline of the work of, 381; Biographical Dictionary of, 395
- Arctic Highlanders (*see* Esquimaux)
- Arctic Manuals, 351
- Arctic phenomena, study of, 347
- Arctic regions, healthiness of, 180, 275-279

## ARC

- Arctic travelling, danger of, 380  
 'Arctic' whaler, 148; sails from Dundee, 150; her loss, 154  
 Arctic Zoology, study of, 349  
 Arrowsmith, Mr., his opinion of Morton's work, 165  
 'Assistance,' H.M.S., north of Carey Isles, in Baffin's Bay, 161; nipped in Barrow's Strait, 170  
 Atanekerdluk Harbour, 421  
 Atlantic soundings, 431  
 Austin, Capt. T. H., up Jones' Sound in 'Pioneer,' 183; sledge-travelling during expedition of, 268  
 Austria Sound, 244; journey up, 248  
 Austro-Hungarian Arctic expedition, 224-262  
 Ayles, Adam, 396

- B**ACK, Admiral Sir George, dedication to, iii.; in Buchan's expedition, 68; his advocacy of Arctic discovery, 282; his suggestions on ventilation, 366  
 Baer, Russian explorer, 214  
 Baffin, William, in the Spitzbergen seas, 33; his expedition with Bylot, 133; discoveries of, 134, 144, 174; tardy justice to, 134; claims as a discoverer vindicated, 137; discovers Smith Sound, 159, 161  
 Baffin's Bay, 63, 121, 129, 174; discovery of, 131; position of ice in, 135; current, 19, 135, 179; thickness of ice in, 136; voyage of Ross, 137; passages through, 138; whalers sail for, 150; voyage of Capt. A. H. Markham, R.N., to, 151

## BAR

- (see Melville Bay, Whalers, Dundee)  
 Banks' Land, explored by Sir R. McClure, 187; ice to westward of, 187, 188; tide on shore of, 192  
 Bannerman, Capt., of the whaler 'Ravenscraig,' 149  
 Barlsen, Ivar, Chorography of old Greenland colony, 109, 110, 111  
 Barents' Island (Spitzbergen), 84, 88  
 Barents, William, his life and character, first expedition, 9; second voyage, 10; views of, in undertaking third voyage, 11; discovery of Spitzbergen by, 12; forced to winter in Ice-Haven (Novaya Zemlya), 14; death of, 18; return of his companions, 18; points for consideration, with reference to voyage of, 18; winter quarters of, visited by Carlsen, 20; list of relics, 21; description of house, 22; description of relics, 25  
 Baring, Sir Francis, more adequate provision for surveying and exploring branches of naval service in time of, 286  
 Barkham, Mr., a merchant adventurer in the time of James I., 39  
 Barrington, Daines, evidence collected by, 49, 51, 53, 54; advocates Polar discovery, 65  
 Barrow, Sir John, strait named after, 135  
 Barrow Strait, 135; whalers in, 150, 170; tides in, 192, 270  
 Barrow Point, 192  
 Bartlett, Captain, of 'Tigress,' picks up boat's crew of 'Polaris,' 178

## HAS

Bassendine, sent on a voyage by Muscovy Company, 6  
 Bear Island, discovered by Barents, 12, 13, 91  
 Beaumont, Lewis A., lieutenant, 396; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 330  
 Beechey, Admiral, in Buchan's expedition, 68  
 Beechey Island, 192  
 Behring, Commodore, his expedition, 199; death, 200, 187, 192, 194, 196; discovered, 200  
 Beke, Dr., his edition of the voyages of Barents, 11; theory of, as to circumnavigation of Spitzbergen by Barents, 12  
 Beleher, Sir Edward, his discoveries, 183  
 Bel Sound (Spitzbergen), 33, 40, 65, 98  
 Bennet, Stephen, gave name of Cherie to Bear Island, 12  
 Bergen, German expedition sails from, 84  
 Berrio, James, 397  
 Bessells, Dr., in charge of the scientific work in the 'Polaris,' 172  
 Beverley, Dr., with Parry in his Polar boat expedition, 73  
 Boynan, Koolemans, lieutenant, 435  
 Biographical Dictionary of the Arctic expedition of 1875, 395  
 Bird, Edward (now Admiral), with Parry in his Polar boat expedition, 73  
 Birkbeck, Mr., his voyage to Spitzbergen, 86  
 Bismarck, Cape (East Greenland), 125  
 Board of Longitude, important services of, 384; abolition of, 388

## CAR

Botanical results of an Arctic expedition, 300  
 Botany; Arctic, study of, 348  
 Bounties, to Spitzbergen whalers, 55  
 Bounty, Cape, 387  
 Broch Isle (Spitzbergen), 77  
 Brook, Captain, his survey of Spitzbergen, 67  
 Browne, a sailor sent on a voyage by the Muscovy Company, 6  
 Bruce, Mr. David, manager of the Dundee Seal and Whale Fishing Company, 149 (*note*); information from, 149 (*note*)  
 Bryant, George, 397  
 Buchan, Captain, his expedition, 67; examination of the pack edge by, 68; results, and return of his expedition, 69  
 Buddington, Captain, sailing master of 'Polaris,' 172  
 Bulley, Samuel, 397  
 Bunyan, George, 397  
 Burrough, Stephen, expedition of, 4; off Kola, 5; discovers straits into sea of Kara, 197, 220  
 Burrough, Straits of, 218, 221  
 Burroughs, George S., 397  
 Busk, George, Esq., F.R.S., on the Arctic Committee, 318  
 Bylot, Robert, 133  
 CABOT, Sebastian, bids the expedition of Burrough 'God speed!' 4  
 Campbell, Dr., 53  
 'Camperdown,' whaler of Dundee, 148  
 Cano, Frederick, 397  
 Capato, Spiro, 397  
 'Caracas,' Captain Lutwidge's ship, in Phipps' expedition, 65

## CAR

- Caroy Islands (Baffin's Bay), 161
- Carlson, Norwegian captain, discovers winter quarters of Barents, 20; first to circumnavigate Spitzbergen, 12, 23, 88, 216; grant of a gold watch to, by the Royal Geographical Society, 89; returns to Hammerfest with Barents' relics, 23; his correction of the maps of Novaya Zemlya, 25; his Novaya Zemlya voyage, 216; joins the Austrian Arctic expedition, 226
- Carolus, Toris, Dutch explorer, 48
- Carpenter, Dr., F.R.S., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318
- Cartmel, Daniel, 397; engineer to the 'Discovery,' 331
- Cary Island Depot, 361
- Chalkley, Thomas, 398
- Chancellor, voyage of, 4, 6
- Charles XII. Isle (Spitzbergen), 77
- Chattel, Frank, 398
- Cholngskoi, Cape, 199, 205, 207, 209
- Cholyuskin, Lieutenant, discovers northern point of Siberia, 198
- Cholyuskin, Cape, 19, 197, 198, 228
- Cherie Island (*see* Bear Island)
- Chermside, Lieut., R.E., sails with Mr. Leigh Smith's expedition, 100
- Chirikof, Lieut., with Behring, 200
- Christiania, Meteorological Institute at, 24; vessels sailing from, 95 (*see* Mohn, Professor)
- Clark, John, Esq., information from, respecting Messrs. Gibbs' expedition, 120 (*note*)

## COP

- Clavering, Capt., his voyage to Spitzbergen, 69; to the east coast of Greenland, 117
- Clothing used for sledges-traveling, 371
- Cloven Cliff (Spitzbergen), 70
- Cobbe's Bay, rendezvous for Leigh Smith's expedition, 100
- Colan, Thomas, D.D., fleet-surgeon, 398; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 327
- Collins, Grenville, second in command in Wood's expedition, 36; his opinion as to a passage between Spitzbergen and Novaya Zemlya, 37
- Collinson, Vice-Admiral, C.B., his explanation of the drift of Polar ice, 103; his edition of Frobisher's voyages, 171; his account of the ice on American coast, 188, 189; advocates Arctic exploration, 282; on the Arctic Committee, 318
- Comfort, Cape (Novaya Zemlya), passed by Barents, 14
- Committees (*see* Arctic)
- Companies (*see* East India, Muscovy)
- Constitution, Cape (up Smith Sound), 174
- Conybeare, Crawford J.M., sub-lieutenant, 398; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331
- Cooke, John, Hudson's boat-swain, 31
- Cooper, James, 399
- Copeland, Mr., astronomer in second German expedition, 122
- Coppinger, Richard W., M.D., surgeon, 399; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331

## COB

- Cornelissoon, Claas, Dutch captain, 48  
 Cornwallis Island, 192  
 Court, Stephen, his account of the ice during McClure's voyage, 189  
 Craig, Peter, 399  
 Cranstone, George, 399  
 Cropp, John, 399  
 Crozier, Capt., R.N., left by Parry in command of the 'Hecla,' 73  
 'Cambrian' whaler, in Melville Bay, 143  
 Currents, in Spitzbergen seas, 79, 80, 81; in Baffin's Bay, 135, 136, 177; down Smith Sound, 176, 178, 193; on Siberian coast, 196, 209; argument from, for continuation of land north of Smith Sound, 271 (*see* Gulf Stream, Polar Current, Baffin's Bay, Forchhammer)
- D**ALLIE, alleged voyage of, towards the Pole, 53  
 Danger, objection to Arctic discovery on ground of, 280; disgraceful nature of objection, 283; its absurdity, 282; of crew of 'Hansa,' 122, 123, 195  
 Danish colonies in Greenland, 130; Shipwrecked whalers able to escape to, 143; Kane and his men escape to, 167  
 Darke, Thomas, 399  
 Davis, John, his voyages of discovery, 130  
 Davis' Strait, 3, 130, 144; Dutch fishery in, 134; soundings of, 431  
 De Jonge, Mr., his account of the Barents' relics, 23, 25

## DOR

- Denmark, kings of, send expeditions to search for lost Greenland colony, 109, 114, 115; grant of a charter to Messrs. Gibbs, from Crown of, 119  
 Derrick, Hans, 53  
 Deshnef, Simon, Russian explorer, 199  
 Desolation, Cape, 344  
 Deuchars, Captain of whaler 'Victor,' 148  
 Deuchars, David, 399  
 De Veer, Gerrit, historian of the voyage of Barents, 11; evidence of his journal as to route of Barents, 13; narrative of, 21, 25  
 Dicerowe, a merchant adventurer, 39  
 Disco Bay (Spitzbergen), 48  
 Disco (Greenland), 173; Arctic phenomena of, 347; lovely scenery in, 355  
 'Discovery,' Baffin's ship, 133, 162; officers and seamen of, 330, 331; strengthening of, 333; its boats and engines, 334-335; intended winter quarters, 363; importance of the heating and ventilation of, 365; outline of the work of, 381  
 Disraeli, Right Hon. Mr., letter to Sir Henry Rawlinson, announcing the decision of the Government to despatch an Arctic expedition, 318  
 Dobing, William, 399  
 Docks (*see* Ice)  
 Doidge, James, 399  
 Dominick, Vincent S., 399  
 Doma, Norwegian captain, voyage to Novaya Zemlya, 218  
 Donnell, Captain, 115  
 'Dorothea,' Captain Buchan's ship, 67; severely injured by ice, 69

## DOU

- Dougall, William, 400  
 Dove, Glacier, 245  
 Dredgings of the 'Valorous,' 424, 431  
 Drift (*see* Current)  
 Drift-wood, at Barents' winter-quarters, 15; on Edge Island (Spitzbergen), 14; on Wiche's Land, 91; seen by Lieut. Payer, 225; brought down by Siberian rivers, 104; carried down the Yenisei, 212  
 'Dundee,' steam whaler, 146  
 Dundee, whaling trade of, 147; whalers—the sealing voyages, 63, 121; steamers from, 145, 146; jute manufactories at, 146; ship-building, 146; value of whaling trade, 147; build and equipment of whalers, 148; whalers sail on voyage of 1873, 150  
 Dundee Seal and Whale Fishing Company, whalers owned by, 148  
 Duner, M., in Swedish expedition, 82  
 Dutch, Arctic enterprise of, 9, 44; purchase of Barents' relics by Government, 23; whaling ventures, 38; whale fishery, 44, 47, 51; chart of Spitzbergen by, 50; approaches to the Pole, 47, 52; fishery of, in Davis' Strait, 34 (*see* Barents)

**E**AST India Company, generosity to Mrs. Hudson, 33 (*note*); sends whalers to Spitzbergen seas, 39; Mr. Richard Wiche one of the founders of, 39 (*see* Smith, Sir T.)  
 Eaton, Rev. Mr., naturalist, with Mr. Leigh Smith, 100  
 Eclipse Sound, explored by whalers, 150, 269

## ESQ

- 'Eclipse' whaler commanded by Captain David Grey, 127  
 Edge, Capt., his whaling voyages to Spitzbergen, 39, 40  
 Edge Islands, 3, 43, 48; explored by Von Heuglin, 84  
 Edwards, captain of whaler 'Victor,' 150  
 Edwards, H. W., 400  
 Egerton, George le Clerc, lieutenant, 400; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 327  
 Eklumiut, on the east coast of Greenland, 119  
 Elborg, Mr., Governor of Godhavn, 354  
 'Elizabeth' of Aberdeen, second whaler to reach the 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay, 137  
 Ellard, William, 400  
 Emerson, George W., 400  
 'Endeavour,' one of Parry's sledge boats, 73  
 English Whale Fishery (*see* Whale Fishery)  
 'Enterprise,' one of Parry's sledge boats, 73  
 'Enterprise,' Captain Collinson's ship, 188, 189  
 'Erik,' Messrs. Gibbs' exploring ship, 121; employed as a whaler, 121, 148, 150, 151  
 Esquimaux, with Capt. Graah, 116; seen by Clavering, 118; seen by Davis, 130; seen by Baffin, 133; at north end of Baffin's Bay, 160; with Morton on his journey, 164, 165; their kindness to Dr. Kane and his crew, 166, 167; reports of, respecting land up Smith Sound, 168; migrations of, 311; traces of, up Smith Sound, 176; in the boat of the 'Polaris,' 177; at Cape York, 179



## ESQ.

- Esquimaux whaler, of Dundee, 148, 157  
 Estotiland, 113  
 Ethnological results of Arctic exploration, 306  
 Evans, John, Esq., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318  
 Expeditions (*see* Arctic)  
 Expense, of an Arctic expedition, 284; of McClintock's voyage in the 'Fox,' 285; of Parry's attempt to reach the Pole, 285; small cost, 285; present inadequate expenditure on surveying and exploring branch of the naval service, 286
- FADDEYEF**, one of the New Siberia Islands, 202  
 Fairweather, Captain of the 'Diana' (Leigh Smith's expedition), 100  
 Fanshawe, Cape (Spitzbergen), 77  
 Farewell, Cape, 116, 124  
 Farøe Isles, 107  
 Fauna of Greenland, 349  
 Feilden, Henry W., F.R.G.S., naturalist, 401; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 328  
 Ferbrache, William, 400  
 Fergusson, J., Esq., F.R.S., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318  
 Findlay, A. G., Esq., on the Arctic Committee, 318  
 Fishery (*see* Whale Fishery, Norwegians, Dutch)  
 Floe-ice, 344  
 Flora of Greenland, 348  
 Food used for sledge travelling, 371  
 Forchhammer, on Greenland current, 81

## FUL.

- Fossils (*see* Geological and Botanical results)  
 Foster Island (Spitzbergen), 77  
 Foster, Lieut., of H.M.S. 'Hecla,' surveys Hinlopen Strait, 77  
 Fotherby, R., voyage of, 34, 37, 71  
 Foulko Port, 20, 169  
 'Fox,' Captain McClintock's steamer, 60; drift of, 35, 135; in Melville Bay, 141  
 Foyn Isle (Spitzbergen), 77  
 Francombe, Reuben, 402  
 Franklin, Sir John, second in command in Buchan's expedition, 68; suggests Polar exploration by sledge travelling, 71; search for expedition of, by Hall, 172; discoveries of officers in search of, 182-187; impossibility of recurrence of disaster which befell the expedition of, 281; cause of catastrophe to expedition of, 281  
 Franklin, Lady, letter in favour of renewal of Arctic exploration, 283  
 Franz Joseph Fiord (East Greenland), 126  
 Franz Josef Land, 247  
 Frederick, dog-driver, 356, 402  
 Freeman, Alderman Ralph, a merchant adventurer, 39; inlet or strait named after, 43, 50, 88  
 Freeman Strait, explored by Von Heuglin, 84  
 'Frein,' schooner of Capt. Nilsen (*see* Nilsen), 92  
 Friedrichsthal (Greenland), 124  
 Frobisher, Sir Martin, 6, 114; relics found by Hall, 171; voyages, edited by Admiral Collinson, 171  
 Fulford, Reginald B., Lieut., 402; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331

## GAL

and Bo-  
zbergen), 77  
M.S. 'Hecla,'  
Strait, 77  
ge of, 34, 37.  
99  
McClintock's  
t of, 35, 135;  
141  
gen), 77  
n, 402  
n, second in  
han's expedi-  
ts Polar ex-  
ge travelling,  
expedition of,  
discoveries of  
h of, 182-187;  
recurrence of  
efell the expe-  
cause of calu-  
dation of, 281  
etter in favour  
Arctic explora-  
d (East Green-  
, 247  
ver, 356, 402  
an Ralph, a  
turer, 39; in-  
ned after, 43,  
explored by Von  
of Capt. Nilsen  
reenland), 124  
artin, 6, 114;  
y Hall, 171;  
l by Admiral  
d B., Lieut.,  
s in the Arctic  
875, 331

**G**ALE HAMKE (East Green-  
land), 118  
Gear, Jonah, 402  
Geodetic results of Arctic ex-  
ploration, 290  
Geographical results of Arctic  
exploration, 289  
Geographical Society (*see* Royal  
Geographical)  
Geological results of Arctic  
exploration, 294  
'George,' ship of Arthur Pett, 6  
Gerard, Daniel, 403  
German expedition, to Spitzber-  
gen, 84; to the east coast of  
Greenland, 122-126  
'Germania,' German Arctic dis-  
covery ship, 84, 122  
Gibbs, Messrs. Antony & Sons,  
their expedition to East Green-  
land, 119-121; owners of the  
whaler 'Erik,' 148  
Giffard, George A., Lieut., 403;  
his duties in the Arctic ex-  
pedition of 1875, 327  
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, his noble  
sentiment, 283  
Gilies, Cornelius, remarkable  
voyage of, 49, 51  
Gilies Land, 49, 50, 51, 82, 88,  
89, 90, 92  
Gillis (*see* Gilies)  
Godhavn, arrival of the Arctic  
expedition of 1875 at, 316  
Good, Joseph, 403  
Goodenough, Commodore, his  
death, 324  
Gore, W. J., 403  
Goschen, Mr., 316  
Goulden, Capt., 54  
Graah, Capt., expedition to east  
coast of Greenland, 109, 116,  
117  
Gravill, Capt., of whaler 'Cam-  
perdown,' 148  
Gray, Alexander, 403

## GUN

Gray, David and John, captains  
of Peterhead whalers, 127  
Greenland, position of, 3, 7;  
Spitzbergen so called, 12, 40,  
41; sighted by Hudson, 29,  
30; Mr. Major's discoveries  
relating to lost colony of, 106;  
proof of the position of the  
Oster Bygd, 109; hot springs  
used by monks of, 110; dis-  
coveries on east coast, 115,  
116, 117; expedition of Messrs.  
Gibbs to east coast, 119; part  
of east coast still unknown,  
117; German expedition to  
east coast, 122-126; sighted  
by Davis, 139 (*see* Baffin's  
Bay, Melville Bay); discovery  
of northern coast of, desirable,  
270, 289; mineralogy of, 297;  
flora of, 298, 318; fauna  
of, 319  
Grey Point (Spitzbergen), 97  
Grey, Mr., 53  
Grinnell, Mr., presents a flag to  
Captain Hall, 173  
Grinnell Land, 184, 270  
'Griper,' Capt. Clavering's ship,  
69, 117  
'Groenland,' Norwegian vessel  
sent to relieve ice-bound crews  
on Spitzbergen, 98  
Groot Hoog Eyl (*see* High  
Island)  
Gulf Stream, observed by Hud-  
son, 32; forms a bight in the  
winter ice, 58, 59; forks off  
south end of Spitzbergen, 80;  
Mr. Leigh Smith's observa-  
tions, 81; Von Heuglin on,  
85; observed off Novaya  
Zemlya, 217  
Gulf Stream Islands (Novaya  
Zemlya), 217  
Gunnbjornus Skerries, identified  
by Mr. Major, 109

## HAA

- HAARFAGREHANGEN**  
(Wiche's Land), 93
- Hakluyt Headland (Spitzbergen), 29, 34, 56, 66, 70, 72
- Hakluyt Society edition of the voyages of Barents, 11; published Marten's account of Spitzbergen, 49 (*note*); edition of Frobisher's voyages, 171
- Hall, Messrs., of Aberdeen, build two whalers, 127
- Hall, Capt., expedition of, 171, 181; previous voyages, 171; discovery of Frobisher relics, 171; reception of, by American Geographical Society, 172; sails from New York, 173; sails up Smith Sound, 173, 269; his sledge journey and death, 174-176
- Hamilton, Capt. R. Vesey, R.N., his sledge journey, 185; advocates renewal of Arctic exploration, 282
- Hammerfest, 20, 23, 93
- Hans the Esquimaux, his version of what Morton saw, 165, 172; on board 'Polaris,' 174
- 'Hansa,' of German expedition, loss of, 123; danger of crew, 123, 124, 195
- Harley, Daniel, 403
- Hart, H. Chichester, naturalist, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331, 403
- Hawkins, John, 403
- Hayes, Dr., 20, 195; his expedition to Smith Sound, 168, 170, 269; his sledge journey, 169
- Healthiness of the Arctic regions, 275-279; preservation of, in the Arctic regions, 181
- 'Hecla,' Parry's ship, on the

## HOO

- Polar expedition, 72; Crozier left in command of, 73; her return to England, 76
- Hecla Cove (Spitzbergen), 72, 77
- Heddy, Edward C., 403
- Hedenström, Russian surveyor; explored New Siberia Isles, 202, 214
- Heeniskereh, Jacob van, commands the ship of Barents, 11
- Hegemann, captain of the 'Hansa,' 122
- Helder (*see* Walig)
- Heley, a merchant adventurer in the days of James I., 39
- Henry VIII., question of Arctic discovery raised in time of, 4
- 'Herald,' H.M.S., Capt. Kellett's ship, 188
- Henglin, Baron von, sights Wiche's Land, 41, 84; his exploring expedition to Spitzbergen, 84
- High Island (Spitzbergen), 88, 89
- Hill, Elias, 404
- Hindle, Alfred, 404
- Hinlopen Strait (Spitzbergen), 43, 49, 50, 88, explored by Lieut. Foster, 77; by the Swedes, 82; by Koldewey, 84; by Leigh Smith, 86; by Norwegians, 88
- Hitchcock, R. W., 404
- Hodges, John, 404
- Hodson, Rev. E. C., chaplain to the 'Discovery,' 331, 404
- Hofer, Herr, with Count Wilczek, 228
- 'Hold with Hope,' Hudson's, 29, 115
- Hollins, John, 404
- Holsteinborg, 427
- Hondius, evidence from map of, as to route of Barents, 13
- Hooft promontory (Novaya Zemlya), 218

## HOO

- Hooker, Dr., C.B., on the botanical results of an Arctic expedition, 297; on the Arctic Committee, 318
- Hopo Island (Spitzbergen) discovered by British whalers, 39, 88
- 'Hope,' whaler of Peterhead, 127
- Hopo Sanderson (Greenland), 130
- 'Hopewell,' Hudson's ship, 27, 28, 31, 32
- Horn Sound (Spitzbergen), 33
- Horn Sound Peak, 82
- Hudson, Henry, 10, 43, 71, 115; his parentage, 27; importance of his voyage, 27; sails on his first Polar voyage, 28; discovers East Greenland, 29; examines the coast of Spitzbergen, 30; results of his first voyage, 31; second voyage to Novaya Zemlya, 31; as a Polar explorer, 32; his voyage led to a lucrative whaling trade, 38
- Hudson, John, sails with his father, 31
- Hudson, Mrs., kindness of the East India Company to, 33 (*note*)
- Hudson's 'Hold with Hope,' 19, 115
- Hudson's Tutches (same as Jan Mayen Isle), 30
- Hull, whaling ships from, 40
- Humboldt glacier, up Smith Sound, 164, 308
- Hungarian Arctic expedition (*see* Austro-Hungarian)
- Hunt, W. F., 404
- Hydrographical results of Arctic exploration, 289

[CARIA, identified by Mr. Major as Kerry, 113

## ISA

- Ice, supposed only to form near land, 12; drift of, as observed by Barents, 19, 20, 23; observations of Hudson on, 29; position of edge of, in winter, 58; size of fields of, in Spitzbergen Seas, 60; formation of, proximity of land unnecessary, 60; temperature at which sea-water freezes, 61; observations of Scoresby on, 62; state of, as seen in Parry's boat expedition, 76; on east coast of Greenland, 116, 117, 120; drift in Baffin's Bay, 136; in Melville Bay, 140, 142; docks cut in, 143; Kuno stopped by, in Smith Sound, 163; Morton's report on, in Smith Sound, 164, 165; in Kennedy Channel, as seen by Hayes, 169; at extreme north point, reached by Hull, 175; to west of Jones' Sound, 184; north of Parry Isles, 185; west of Banks' Land, 187, 189, 195; off Cape Taimyr, 199; north of New Siberia Isles, 203, 204
- Icebergs, in Melville Bay, 136, 143; in Smith Sound, 163, 164; in Disco Bay, 354
- Ice Fiord (Spitzbergen), 90, 98, 100
- Ice-Haven (Novaya Zemlya), 14, 20, 23
- Iceland, voyages set forth to, by Richard III., 3
- Indigirka river (Siberia), 196
- Inglefield, Capt., at the entrance of Smith Sound, 161, 163, 269; up Jones' Sound, 183
- 'Intrepid,' whaler of Dundee, 148, 150
- 'Investigator,' Sir Robert McClure's ship, 187
- 'Isabel,' Inglefield's steamer, 161

## ISA

- 'Isabella,' Parry's ship, in Ross's first voyage, 137  
 Isabella, Cape, 138, 161  
 Isaksen, Nils, Norwegian captain with Von Henglin, 84; voyage to Novaya Zemlya, 218  
 Ishjorn, winter voyage of, to relieve ice-bound crews, 98; vessel of Count Wilczok, 226  
 Italian officer in Swedish Arctic expedition, 95  
 Italian Arctic expedition (*see* Zeni)

- J**ACKMAN, Charles, sent out by the Muscovy Company, 6, 197  
 Jacobszoon, Jacob, Dutch explorer, 48  
 Jakau, Cape (Siberia), 208; Wrangell Land in sight from, 209  
 Jakuts, Siberian tribe; their endurance of cold, 278  
 'Jan Mayen,' brig of Carlsen, 88  
 'Jan Mayen,' whaler of Peterhead, 128  
 Jan Mayen Island (*see* Hudson's Tutches), 30, 58, 63, 100  
 Janson, Commodore, his account of Dutch whale fishery, 41  
 Johannesen, Captain, in the sea of Kara, 216, 218  
 Johnsen, Captain Nils, re-discovers Wiche's Land, 91  
 Joiner, Robert, 404  
 Jolliffe, Thomas, 404  
 Jones, Frank, 404  
 Jones, Loftus, Captain of the 'Valorous,' 417  
 Jones' Sound, 182, 191, 270; drift of ice in, 135; intention of Captain Hall to go up, 172; tide in, 191; explored by Lee and Osborn, 183  
 Juet, Robert, Hudson's mate, 31

## KIR

- Julianshaab, 111  
 'Junata,' steamer, sent by the United States' Government for tidings of the 'Polaris,' 178  
 Juto fibre, importation into Dundee; whale oil required for, 146

**K**AMSCHATKA, 200

- Kane, Dr., 61, 124, 135; 162-168; kindness of Esquimaux to, 166; reasons of his failure, 166, 167; his ship improperly victualled, 276  
 Kara, Sea of, straits leading to, discovered by Burrough, 197; and Pett, 7; heavy Polar ice in, 7, 9; voyage of Barents to entrance of, 11; Norwegian voyages into, 216, 217; voyage of Captain Wiggins to the sea of, 220  
 Kay, Mr. Lister, purchases the relics of Barents, 23  
 Kellett, Captain, land seen by, north of Behring's Strait, 188, 189, 194, 209  
 Kemish, George, 404  
 Kennedy Channel, 165, 169, 170, 269; Hall sails up, 175  
 Kennedy Port, 20  
 Kepes, Dr., in the Austrian Arctic expedition, 226  
 Kerry (*see* Teuria)  
 Keulen, Van, charts published by, 50, 51, 82 (*see* Van Keulën)  
 Khatanga, River (Siberia), 197, 199  
 King William Island, reached by Captain Young, 138  
 Kilgour, captain of the whaler 'Polyma,' 148  
 Kirkealdy, iron whaler, built at, 147

## KFF

- Kjelsen, captain of 'Isbjorn,' 97  
 Knight, John, history of his voyage, 131, 132; his disappearance, 132; preservation of his journal, 132  
 Knots (*Tringa canutus*), migrations of, 308  
 Kola, survivors of Barents' crew reach, 18  
 Koldowoy, Captain, commanding German expeditions, 84, 122; his views, 126; in favour of Smith Sound route, 127  
 Kolyma, river, 196; reached from mouth of Lena, 199, 205  
 Koskelef, sails from the Obi to the Yenisei, 197  
 Kostin Shar, 222  
 Kotelnoi, one of the New Siberia Islands, 202  
 Kotzebue Sound, 192  
 Krisch, Mr., engineer of the Austro-Hungarian expedition; his death, 242

**LADY FRANKLIN STRAIT,**  
 intended for the winter quarters of the 'Discovery,' 363

- Lambe, Mr., builds ships for Russians at Archangel, 64  
 Lamont, Mr., his yacht voyages to Spitzbergen, 85; owner of the 'Diana,' 100  
 Lancaster Sound, drift of ice in, 135; open water in, 136  
 Land floe, importance of sticking to, 140  
 Lapland (*see* Kola, Warehouse)  
 Laptef, Lieutenant, attempt to sail round Cape Taimyr, 198  
 'Larkins,' of Leith, first whaler to reach the 'North Water,' after Baffin, 137

## LYA

- Lassen, Mr., the Governor of Holsteinborg, 128  
 Lawrence, Edward, 404  
 Lee, captain of whaler 'Prince of Wales,' explored Jones' Sound, 182, 270  
 Leggatt, George, 405  
 Leively, arrival of the Arctic expedition of 1875 at, 346  
 Lena, river, 196, 198  
 Leopold Island, 192  
 Lewis, James, 321  
 Liakhof, or New Siberia Islands (*which see*)  
 Lief, son of Eric the Red, discovered America, 112  
 Lillingston, Frederick G. J., R.N., lieutenant, 436  
 Linschoten, 53  
 Lisborne, Cape, 188  
 Lockhart, Mr., of Kirkcaldy, owner of whaler 'Ravensraig,' 149  
 Lockyer, Mr. Norman, on importance of observations near the Pole, 292  
 Lomme By (Spitzbergen), 49  
 Long, Capt., sighted Wrangell Land, 209  
 Longitude, Board of, important services of, 384; abolition of, 388  
 'Loomery,' n, 356  
 Lorimer, William, 405  
 Lowe, Mr., Chancellor of the Exchequer, interview of Arctic Deputation with, 316; correspondence with Sir Henry Rawlinson, 316  
 Lupton, Cape, of Hall, 176  
 Lutke, Russian Admiral, his voyages in Novaya Zemlya sea, 70, 71, 214  
 Lutwidge, Capt., second in command in Phipps' expedition.  
 Lyall, Dr., fossil flora collected by, 297

## LYD

'Lydiana,' schooner, of Capt. Johnsen, 91

**M**CCLINCKOCK, Admiral Sir Leopold, 20; system of sledge travelling of, 72, 220; opinion as to Baffin's Bay currents, 135; drift of in the 'Fox' (*see* 'Fox') 177, 223; discovery of Prince Patrick's Land, 185, 186, 189, 190; advice followed by the Austro-Hungarian explorers, 243; telegram to, 261; distances travelled by, 266; expedition in the 'Fox,' 276; cost, 285; advocates renewal of Arctic exploration, 282; one of the Arctic Committee, 317, 319; his knowledge of sledge-travelling, 321

McClintock Land, explored by Lieut. Fayer, 287

McClure, Admiral Sir Robert, discovery of shores of Banks' Land, 187; no death by scurvy on board ship of, until fourth year, 276; reward for his Arctic discovery, 390

Mack, Norwegian captain, meets Carslen off Novaya Zemlya, 24; his correction of longitudes on Novaya Zemlya coast, 24; his voyages round Novaya Zemlya, 217

Mackenzie, river, 187

Maclellan, captain of whaler 'Narwhal,' 148

Magdalena Bay (Spitzbergen), 68

Magnetism, phenomena of, their investigation by an Arctic expedition, 292

Maguire, Capt., R.N., 192

Major, Mr., his discoveries respecting the voyage of the *Zeni*, 106, 114

## MEL

Malgyn, Lieut., reached the mouth of the Obi, 197

Malley, William, 405

Mann, Henry, 405

Manuals, Arctic, 351

Markham Island, discovered by Capt. R. V. Hamilton, R.N., 185

Markham Sound, discovered by the Austro-Hungarian expedition, 256

Markham, Albert Hastings, F.R.G.S. 405; his voyage to Baffin's Bay, 151; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 326

Markham, Clements R., Esq., C.B., F.R.S., on the Arctic Committee, 318

Markland, 112

Marmaduke, J., a Hull skipper in the time of James I., 38

Martens, Frederick, his account of Spitzbergen, 48

Maskell, William, 406

Mathias, Capt., his voyage with Tobiasen (whom *see*), 90

Maury, Capt., opinion as to Baffin's Bay current, 135

May, William H., lieutenant, 406; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 327

'Mazenthian,' a whaler of Peterhead, 128

Mecham, Capt. Frederick, R.N., notice of, 185; his discoveries, 186, 187, 189, 190; distance travelled by, 266, 267

Medicines used for sledge-travelling, 372

Medina, work on navigation by, among the Barents' relics, 25

Melsom, Capt. Jacob, voyage for release of ice-bound crews on Spitzbergen, 98

Melville Bay, 133, 149; ice in, 138; time of passage through,



## MEL

- 140, 141, 144; dangers of, 142; scenery of, 143; scarcity of ice in, 437
- Melville Island, 184, 185, 192; two voyages to, 270; pendulum observations at, 290
- Mendoza's history of China, among the Barents' relics, 26
- Menin, Russian Pilot, sails from the Yenisei to the Pyasina, 198
- 'Mercurius,' ship of Barents in his first voyage, 9
- Meteorological results of Arctic exploration, 293; observations of Herr Hofer, 228
- Meyer, meteorologist on board the 'Polaris,' 172; in the rescued boat, 77
- Middendorf, Russian explorer, his expedition to Cape Taimyr, 198, 210, 212, 214
- Middendorf, Mount (Spitzbergen), 84
- Middle Paek, in Baffin's Bay, 136, 144; passage of the Arctic expedition of 1875 through, 360
- Middle passage of Baffin's Bay, 138
- Migrations of birds in the Arctic regions, importance of investigations as to, 304
- Miller, Mr., letter of, to Sir E. Sabine, on pendulum observations, 290
- Miller, Matthew R., 407; engineer to the 'Discovery,' 331
- Milton, John (the poet), his view of Arctic exploration, 7
- Mitchell, Assistant Paymaster, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331
- Mitchell, David, 407
- Mitchell, Thomas, 407
- Mohn, Professor, of Christiania, 87

## NEW

- Mohn, Cape (Spitzbergen), 87
- 'Moonshine,' one of John Davis's ships, 130
- Moore, Capt., R.N., of H.M.S. 'Plover,' 192
- Moss, Edward L., M.D., Surgeon, 407; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 327
- Moxon, Mr., the hydrographer, his ale-house yarn, 54
- Muravief, Lieut., sails from Archangel for the Obi, 197
- Murray, John, 408
- Muscovy Company, expedition sent out by, 6; despatches the voyages of Hudson, 27; report of Fotherby to, 33; sends whalers to the Spitzbergen seas, 39, 40
- Musk oxen up Smith Sound, 168, 176, 180, 277
- N**ARES, George Strong, R.N., Captain of the Arctic expedition of 1875, 326, 408-410
- 'Narwhal,' steam whaler, of Dundee, 146, 148
- Nassau Cape (Novaya Zemlya), 10, 18, 70
- Navy, Arctic discovery must be achieved by the, 272; importance of Arctic enterprise to, 274; expenditure on, 286 (*see* Admiralty, Arctic Expense)
- Navy Board Inlet, explored by whalers, 150, 269
- Nelson, Horatio Ford, in Phipps' Arctic expedition, 65
- Nemtinoff, Russian Lieut., forms a depôt on Spitzbergen, 64
- Nenotalik, Graah's point of departure on west coast of Greenland, 116
- Newland (*see* Spitzbergen)
- New Siberia Islands discovered, 201; mammoth bones on, 202;

## NEW

- surveyed by Hedenström, 202; visited by Anjou, 203
- Newton, Professor, accompanied Mr. Birkbeck to Spitzbergen, 86; on migrations of birds in the Arctic regions, 303
- Nijni Kolymsk, founded, 199; head-quarters of Wrangell, 204, 206, 207, 208
- Nilsen, Norwegian captain, re-discovery of Wiehe's Land by, 92
- Nimis, Belgrave, M.D., staff-surgeon, 410; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331
- Nordenskiöld, Professor, in Swedish expeditions to Spitzbergen, 81; his views of ice-navigation, 82, 83; in the Swedish expedition of 1872-73, 96
- Normans, discovery of America by, 112
- Norris, George, 410
- 'North-about Passage' (*see* Melville Bay), 138, 139
- North Cape, drift-wood off, observed by Hudson, 32
- North-East Land of Spitzbergen, 43, 49, 50, 77, 87; coast of, altered by Leigh Smith, 87; coast explored by Carlsen and Tobiesen, 88, 89
- 'Northern Gate,' of Norwegians, 88, 90
- North Pole (*see* Pole)
- 'North Star,' detention in Melville Bay, 141
- North-West Passage, Company for discovery of, 160; Acts granting rewards for discovery of, 384-392
- 'North Water' of Baffin's Bay, reached by Baffin, 134, 136 (*see* 'Larkins,' and 'Elizabeth'); reached by Ross, 137; by whalers, 138; position of,

## OIL

- 138, 140; usual time of reaching, 141-2; earliest passage into, 140, 144, 149; reached by the 'Advance,' 163; 'Polaris,' 179
- Northumberland Island, 'Polaris' wintering off, 204
- Norwegians, sealing fleet, 63; voyages of, 87, 93; number of vessels in Arctic fishing trade, 93; voyages of, to Novaya Zemlya, 217, 218
- Novaya Zemlya, 5, 7, 32, 58, 124, 188, 197; Dutch scheme to sail round north end of, 9; first sighted by Barents, 10; voyage of Barents round north-west point of, 13; Barents forced to winter at, 15; drift of ice on coast of, 16, 18, 19; circumnavigation of, by Carlsen, 23; correction of N.E. prolongation of, 24; Hudson's voyage to, 32; Capt. Wood's expedition to, 36; Dutch voyages to, 46; coast surveyed by Admiral Lutke, 71; voyage of Lieut. Payer to coast of, 225; circumnavigation of, by Norwegians, 218; Austrian expedition of, 226, 229; geology of, 228
- Nugarlik, Capt. Graah's winter quarters, 116
- OAKLEY**, Thomas, 410
- Obi, Siberian river, 6, 196, 197, 212; mouth reached from Archangel, 197; Norwegians sail towards, 216; voyage of Capt. Wiggins to the Gulf of, 220
- Observatory of the Arctic expedition of 1875, 367
- Oil, whale and seal, demand for, 145; used in manufacture of

## OKH

time of reach-  
 -liest passage  
 49; reached  
 -ance, 163:  
 land, 'Polaris'  
 1  
 -g fleet, 63;  
 -3; number of  
 -fishing trade,  
 -; to Novaya  
 8  
 5, 7, 32, 58.  
 Dutch scheme  
 -rth end of, 9;  
 - Barents, 10;  
 -sround north-  
 -13; Barents  
 -e at, 15; drift  
 -of, 16, 18, 19;  
 -on of, by Carl-  
 -tion of N.E.  
 24; Hudson's  
 - Capt. Wood's  
 6; Dutch voy-  
 -st surveyed by  
 71; voyage of  
 - coast of, 225;  
 -n of, by Nor-  
 -Austrian ex-  
 26, 229; geo-  
 Graah's winter  
 nas, 410  
 - river, 6, 196.  
 -h reached from  
 -; Norwegians  
 16; voyage of  
 -to the Gulf of,  
 the Arctic ex-  
 5, 367  
 -ul, demand for,  
 -manufacture of

-jute, 146; price of, 147 (*see*  
 -Whale Fishery)  
 Okhotsk, Behring's expedition  
 fitted out at, 200  
 Oldenburg, Mr., 53  
 Olenek river (Siberia), 198  
 Ommanney, Vice-Admiral, C.B.,  
 advocates Arctic discovery,  
 282; on the Arctic Committee,  
 318  
 Orange Islands (Novaya Zemlya),  
 10, 18  
 Orkney, Henry Sinclair, Earl of,  
 107  
 Osborn, Capt. Noel, his death,  
 322  
 Osborn, Rear-Admiral Sherard,  
 C.B., 127; explored Jones'  
 Sound in the 'Pioneer,' 183;  
 discoveries on shore of Parry  
 Islands, 185; his views as to  
 heavy Polar pack west of  
 Banks' Land, 188-195; urges  
 the importance of Arctic enter-  
 prise to the Navy, 273; advoca-  
 tes a renewal of Arctic ex-  
 ploration, 282, 315; on the  
 Arctic Committee, 318, 319;  
 his interview with Mr. Disraeli,  
 318; his visit to the Arctic  
 ships, 322; his death, 323  
 Ostre Bygd (*see* Greenland)  
 Outger Reps, Dutch explorer,  
 voyage of, 51  
 Outger Reps' Island (Spitzber-  
 gen), 77

**P**ACK (*see* Ice, Polar Pack),  
 wintering in, 195  
 Palander, Lieut., commanding  
 Swedish Arctic expedition, 94  
 Palliser, Norwegian captain,  
 voyage to Novaya Zemlya,  
 216  
 'Pandora,' the, arrival at Disco,  
 419; the cruise of, 435-439

## PEN

Parent, Lieut., Italian officer  
 in Swedish expedition, 95  
 Parr, Alfred A. Chase, Lieutenant,  
 411; his duties in the Arctic  
 expedition of 1875, 327  
 Parry, Sir William Edward, 2;  
 proposes Polar exploration by  
 sledge travelling, 72; equip-  
 ment of his boat expedition,  
 73; passes the Seven Islands,  
 74; details of his journey  
 over the ice, 75, 76; his  
 extreme northern point, 76;  
 his return, 76; reflections on  
 his attempt to reach the Pole,  
 77; his voyage with Ross to  
 Baffin's Bay, 137, 161; cost  
 of his attempt to reach the  
 Pole, 285; rewards for his  
 Arctic discovery, 387  
 Parry, Cape (Smith Sound), 165,  
 270  
 Parry Island, 182; discovery of  
 northern shores, 184, 185;  
 tides along shores of, 192, 193;  
 efficiently examined by sledge  
 travelling, 268  
 Paul, Charles Wm., 411  
 Payer, Lieut., in the Austrian  
 service; his voyage in the sea  
 between Spitzbergen and No-  
 vaya Zemlya, 224; in the  
 second German expedition,  
 122, 125; sledge travelling on  
 east coast of Greenland, 125;  
 in the Austro-Hungarian Arct-  
 ic expedition, 226; his first  
 sledge journey, 241; second  
 journey, 243; his farthest  
 north, 253; third journey,  
 257; reads a paper before the  
 Royal Geographical Society,  
 262  
 Pearce, Alfred B., 412  
 Pearson, John, 412  
 Pendulum observations, 69, 117,  
 291 (*see* Sabino)

## PEP

- Pepys, Mr. Samuel, Secretary to the Admiralty; fitted out Wood's Arctic expedition, 35  
 'Periwinkle,' former name of the 'Polaris,' 172  
 Petchora, Count Wilezok returns by the, 228  
 Peter the Great, his desire to have Siberian coasts explored, 199  
 Peterhead whalers, 63, 127  
 Petermann, Dr. Augustus, 126; his map of the route of Barents, 10; his theory as to circumnavigation of Spitzbergen by Barents, 12; casts doubts upon the discovery of Wiehe's Land by the English, 40; careful, as a rule, to restore old names, 41; promotes German Arctic expedition, 84  
 Petersen, Kane's interpreter, 165; reports of Esquimaux obtained by, 168  
 Petersen, Neils Christian, dog-driver and interpreter, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 355, 412  
 Pet, Arthur, sent out by the Muscovy Company, 6, 197,  
 Potts' Strait, 218  
 Petty, Henry, 412  
 Phillips, James, 412  
 Phipps, Capt. R.N., Polar Expedition commanded by, 65; his efforts to penetrate the Polar Pack, 66; return of, 67, 71  
 'Phoenix,' Captain Inglefield's steamer, 183  
 'Pioneer,' H.M.S., up Jones' Sound, 183  
 Pirie, George, R.N., sub-lieutenant, 436  
 Pitt, Mr., Engineer, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 323

## POL

- Planeius, Peter, the Dutch cosmographer, 9, 11; his instrument among Barents' relics, 25  
 Plants, limits of Siberian vegetation, 212, 213 (*see* Botanical Results)  
 Platen, Cape (Spitzbergen), 77; rounded by Swedes, 82; by Leigh Smith, 87  
 'Plover,' H.M.S., 192  
 Polar basin, Swedish view of, 83; Payer, 224; theories as to, 85, 105  
 Polar current, 80, 81, 193 (*see* Forehammer), 81; Von Heuglin on, 84  
 Polar Discovery, rewards for, 385  
 Polar Pack, edge of, reached, 4; voyages which led to examination of, 7; reached by Barents, 12; drift of, at north end of Novaya Zemlya, 14, 18; examined by Hudson, 22, 30, 32; examined by Wood and Grenville Collins, 37; edge of, well known, through whaling voyages, 38; position of edge, in winter, 56; edge of, in summer, 59; observations of Scoresby on, 61; state of, as seen by Phipps' expedition, 66; Buchan's, 68; Claverings, 69; examined by Admiral Lutko, 70; enumeration of explorers who have examined the, 71; as seen during Parry's boat expedition, 76; views of Swedes on, 82, 83; fed by ice from Siberian coast, 210; hitherto impassable, 264  
 Polar research, commencement of, 4; projected by Planeius, 9; advocated by Daines Barrington, 65; its importance, 181; best route for, 263; by sledge travelling, 266; absurd objections to, answered, 274

## POL

- (*see* Arctic Expeditions; Results)
- 'Polaris,' Capt. Hall's ship, successful voyage of, 170, 171; staff of, 172; drifts down Smith Sound, 177; nip, 177; drift of boats, 177; goes into second winter quarters, 178; steamers sent by American Government for relief of, 178
- Polaris Bay, discovered by Hall, 175
- Pole, North, Dr. Thorne on a voyage to the, 4; Henry Hudson sent on a voyage to, 27; arguments of John Wood respecting, 36; Dutch voyages towards, 48; fabulous voyages to, 53, 54, 55; reward offered for reaching, 57; Impracticability of sailing to, by Spitzbergen route, 71; true way of reaching by Smith Sound and sledge travelling, 71; coast line in Smith Sound stretching towards, 159, 174; attempt of Captain Hall to reach, 171, 173; land near, 188, 270; may easily be reached by sledge travelling, 270; value of pendulum and other observations at, 290
- 'Polar Star,' whaler, of Peterhead, 128
- Polynia, seen by Morton, 164, 168; of the Russians, 210, 211; meaning of the word, 210 (*note*)
- 'Polynia,' whaler, of Dundee, 100, 156
- Pond's Bay, 138, 141, 269
- Pontanus, map of Hondius (whom *see*) published in work of, 13
- Poole, Jonas, his whaling voyages to Spitzbergen, 33, 71

## RAW

- Porter, George, 412
- Potter, Mr., sailed in Mr. Leigh Smith's expedition, 100
- Prestwich, Mr., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318
- Prince Charles' Isle (Spitzbergen), 46
- 'Prince of Wales,' whaler, explores Jones' Sound, 183
- Prince Patrick's Island, 185, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191
- Princess of Wales' Strait, 192
- Pronchishchef, Lieut., expedition of, 198
- 'Prosperous' pink, one of Wood's vessels, 36
- Pullen, Rev. W. H., chaplain to the 'Alert,' 328, 412
- 'Purchas his Pilgrimes,' account of the discovery of Wiche's Land in, 40; chart of, with reference to position of Wiche's Land, 41; chart of Spitzbergen in, 43; treatment of Baffin's papers by, 132
- Pyasina river (Siberia), 197, 198
- 'QUEEN,' whaler from Peterhead, 128
- RÄBOI Cape (New Siberia), 203
- 'Racehorse,' Capt. Phipps' ship, 65
- Radmore, John R., 412
- Rations of the men in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 337
- 'Rattler,' whaler, turned inside out, 143
- 'Ravensraig,' whaler of Dundee, 149
- Rawlings, Thomas, 412
- Rawlinson, Sir Henry, K.C.B.,

## RAW

- with the Arctic Deputation, 316; correspondence with Mr. Lowe, 316; letter from Mr. Disraeli to, 319
- Rawlinson Sound, 244, 249
- Rawson, Wyatt, F.R.G.S., Lieutenant, 412; his duties in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 331
- Rayner, Eli, 413
- Read, General Meredith, his biography of Hudson, 27
- 'Recherche,' French discovery ship to Spitzbergen, 50
- Regan, Michael, 413
- Reikjavik, 121
- Relics of Barents, list of, 21; description, 24-26
- Renselaer harbour, Kane's winter quarters, 162, 169
- 'Resolute,' H.M.S., drift in Baffin's Bay, 135
- 'Resolution,' Scoresby's ship, voyage of, 61
- Results to be derived from Arctic exploration, 288 *et seq.*
- Rowards, public, for Arctic discoveries, 383, 393; recapitulation of, 391
- 'Richard,' Fotherby's ship, 34
- Richard III., sets forth voyages to Iceland, 3
- Richards, Rear-Admiral C.B., discoveries on the shores of Bathurst and Melville Islands, 184, 192; advocates a renewal of Arctic exploration, 282; on the Arctic Committee, 318, 319
- Rickaby, Mr., his trip to Baffin's Bay, in the 'Erik,' 151
- Rijk Ys Islands, 50 (*see* Ryk Ys Isles)
- Rijp, Jan Corneliszoon, colleague of Barents in third voyage, 11; parts company with Barents, 13; picks up survivors of crew of Barents, 18

## RUS

- Rink, Dr., 111; his opinion of Morton's story, 165
- 'Rink's Obelisk,' 421
- Ritenbenk, 355
- Robeson, Mr., American Secretary of the Navy; aids Hall, 171
- Robeson Strait, discovered by Hall, 175; current flowing down, 176
- Rosenthal, expedition to Novaya Zemlya, 218
- Ross, Captain James, R.N., with Parry in his Polar boat expedition, 73; false analogy from his Antarctic voyage exposed by Admiral Collinson, 103; drift in his ship down Barrow's Strait, 194
- Ross, Captain John, R.N., voyage up Baffin's Bay, 137, 161, 174; reward for his Arctic discoveries, 389; his invention of the deep sea clam, 424
- Roule Cornelis, discovery of land to the north of Novaya Zemlya, 47
- Rourke, Jeremiah, 413
- Royal Society, advocacy of Arctic discovery by, 65; appoints an Arctic Committee, 318
- Royal Geographical Society (*see* Deputation and Committee), grant to Capt. Carlsen, of a gold watch by, 89
- Russians, never at Barents' winter quarters, 25; expedition to Spitzbergen, 64; surveys by Admiral Lutke, 71; discoveries on Siberian coast, 196, 203; views respecting a 'Polynia,' 210-11; achievements of in the Arctic regions, 214 (*see* Tchitschakoff, Anjou, Hedenström, Wrangell, Beh-

## RYK

- ring, Middendorff, Laptef, Lutke)  
 Ryk Ys Isles, 50; touched at by Laumont and Birkbeck, 85; by Norwegians, 90  
 Rytina Stelleers, 201, 203 (*see* Steller)

- S**ABINE, Sir Edward, his voyages to take pendulum observations, 69, 117, 290; on Arctic discovery, 289  
 Saggars, John S., 413  
 'St. Andrew,' whaler, early passage of, into 'North Water,' 141  
 St. John's, Newfoundland, 'Polaris,' boat's crew brought to, 178  
 St. Olaus, Greenland monastery, 110  
 Samoyeden, peninsula, 218  
 'Sampson,' yacht of Mr. Leigh Smith, 87, 100  
 Sarah, George R., 413  
 Sastrugi, waves on snow, as guides to Siberian travellers, 207  
 Scandinavian explorers, 93  
 Schmidt, Herr F., his expedition to the Lower Yenisei, 212-214  
 Schools of the Arctic Expedition of 1875, 367  
 Scoresby, Capt., 2, 31, 87; on the colour of the sea, 30; his ability and intelligence, 39; his position of Ryk Ys Isles, 50; value of his work, 57-62; his famous voyage in the 'Resolution,' 61; high latitude reached by, 62; drift of Polar pack observed by, 80; observations of deep-sea temperatures by, 81; discoveries of,

## SLE

- on east coast of Greenland, 117  
 'Search Thrift,' ship of Burrough, 4, 32  
 Self, James, 413  
 Seven Islands (Spitzbergen), 48, 49, 67, 82, 87; probably sighted by Hudson, 30; passed by Parry, 74, 77; by Norwegians, 88, 89  
 Shackleton, Cape, 140  
 Shepherd, James, 413  
 Shirley, John, 413  
 Shurakoff, Lieut., reaches mouth of the Obi, 197  
 Siberia, water-holes off coast of, 19, 20 (*see* Polynia); discovery of coast, 196-199; rivers of, 196; ice and trees brought down by rivers of, 210; drift wood, 212; limits of northern vegetation, 213 (*see* Currents, Russians, New Siberia, Yenisei)  
 Sideroff, M., his proposal for a voyage to the Yenisei, 220  
 Simmonds, Thomas, 413  
 Simmons, John, 414  
 Simonsen, Norwegian captain, voyage of, to Novaya Zemlya, 218  
 Simpson, Thomas H., 414  
 Sinclair, Earl of Orkney, employs the Zeni, 107  
 Skrutton, James, one of Hudson's crews, 31  
 Sledge travelling, first proposed by Parry and Franklin, 71-78; by Germans, 125; only efficient means of exploring 129; Kane's, 163; Haye's, 162; Anjou's 202-3; Wrangell's, 204-7; McClintock's, 72, 185-190, 266; Richards', 184; Meham's, 185, 267; Hamilton's, 185; Osborn's, 184; preparations for by



## SME

Lieut. Payer, 226-7; its advantages for efficient examination of coasts, 268; details of, for the Arctic expedition of 1875, 369-377; method of travelling, 378-380

Smeerenburg (Spitzbergen), 44

Smith, John E., 414

Smith, Krarup, Inspector of North Greenland, 354

Smith, Sir Thomas, sent Fotherby on a voyage to Spitzbergen, 34; inlet named after, and island (Spitzbergen), 43; notice of, 159, 160

Smith, Thomas, 414

Smith Cape, 87

Smith Sound, 124; opinions in favour of route by, 127; open water in, 135; approach to, 145; open water seen by whalers in, 150, 161; discovered by Baffin, 159; sighted by Ross, 161; entered by Inglefield, 161; Dr. Kane's expedition to, 162-168; Baron Wrangell in favour of route by, 162; description of coast of, 163, 164; reports of Esquimaux as to land up, 168; Dr. Hayes' expedition to, 168-170; whalers at entrance of, 170; view of Capt. Hall as to navigation of, 171; maps of, 174; Capt. Hall's expedition up, 175; abundance of animal life on shores of, 176, 180, 277; route by, its advantages, 266; navigable for a considerable distance, 269; route by, the best for Arctic discovery, 271, 277, 320; progress of the Arctic expedition of 1875 up, 362

Smith, Mr. B. Leigh, islands discovered by, 77; his observations of deep sea temperatures, 81; his expeditions to Spitz-

## STE

bergen, and discoveries, 86; high latitude attained by, 87; his expedition of 1873, 99, 272

'Solid,' ship of Capt. Carlsen, 20

'Sophia,' steamer of the Swedes, high latitude reached by, 82

Soundings of the 'Valorous,' 424, 431

Souter, Capt., of whaler 'Intrepid,' 148

'Southern Passage' of Baffin's Bay, 138

Spectrum analysis, value of observations near the Pole, 292

'Speedwell,' Capt. Wood's ship, 36; wrecked, 37

Spitzbergen, discovered by Barents, 12; west coast examined by Hudson, 29; whale fishery in seas of, 33, 39; voyages of Poole and Fotherby to, 33; voyages of Capt. Edge to, 41; discoveries to eastward of, in 1617, 41; discoveries of the English, 43; account of, by Martens, 42; Van Keulen's chart of, 50; English fishery off, 55; description of coast, 59; English Government expeditions to, 65, 68, 69; navigation of surrounding seas; currents, 79, 81; Swedish expeditions to, 81, 82 German, 84; circumnavigated by Carlsen, 88; pendulum observations at, 70, 290; disadvantage of route by, 264, 265, 272 (*see* Arctic Voyages)

Staduchin, Michael, a Cossack, founded Nijnei Kolymsk, 199

Steller, naturalist with Behring, 200, 201

Stephen, Messrs. Alexander and Sons, ship-builders at Dundee, build whalers, 147; owners of the whaler 'Arctic,' 148

## STE

- Stephenson, Henry F., captain of the 'Discovery,' in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 330, 414  
 Sternbech, Baron, accompanies Count Wilezek, 226  
 Stewart, Daniel, 414  
 Stone, George, 414  
 Stor Fiord (Spitzbergen), 39, 43, 84, 86  
 Strachey, Major-General R., C.S.I., on the Arctic Committee of the Royal Society, 318  
 Stubbs, Edward, 414  
 Stuckberry, Thomas, 414  
 'Sunshine,' one of Davis's ships, 130  
 Svartefugle Bay, Loomery at, 356  
 Swedish expeditions to Spitzbergen, 81; their highest latitude, 82; views on Polar navigation, 83; expedition of 1872-73, 91, 95; good wishes for, 97  
 Swedish Foreland, east of Spitzbergen, 82  
 Sweet, William R., 415  
 Sybrandt, Dutch explorer, 48  
 Symons, Robert, 415

**TAIMYR**, Cape, 19, 196, 198, 213 (*see* Laptof, Middendorff)

- Taws, Edward, 415  
 'Tay,' first steam whaler at Dundee, 146  
 'Tay Seal and Whale Fishing Company,' Their whalers, 148  
 Tayler, Mr. T. W., leader of Messrs. Gibbs' expedition to the east coast of Greenland, 119, 121  
 Tehitshakoff, commander of Russian expedition to Spitzbergen, 64, 65, 71  
 Tehuktehe (*see* Tuski)

## TYS

- 'Tegethoff,' steamer, Austrian exploring vessel, 226, 227, 228; last seen, 257  
 Thank-God Bay, winter quarters of 'Polaris,' 176  
 Thennis Ys, Dutch explorer, 46  
 Thores, John, 415  
 Thornback, James, 415  
 Thorne, Dr. Robert, views as to Polar discovery, 3  
 Tides, in the Arctic seas, west of Banks' Land, 192, 195; of Cape Tuimyr, 198  
 'Tigress,' steamer, picks up boat's crew of 'Polaris,' 178; chartered by United States' Government to relieve 'Polaris,' 178  
 Tobiesen, Norwegian captain, 51; his voyage round North-East Land, 89; his death on the coast of Novaya Zemlya, 219  
 Tordenskiold, Cape (Wiche's Land), 91  
 Torell Cape (Spitzbergen), 92  
 Tossukatek, glacier of, 420  
 Travelling (*see* Sledge Traveling)  
 'Trent,' Franklin's ship in Buchan's expedition, 67  
 Treurenburg Bay (Spitzbergen), 61  
 Treuter Mountains (Jones' Sound,) 183  
 Tromsö, 24, 94, 218, 225; 'Tegethoff' sails from, 227  
 Tundra, frozen region of Siberia, 196; inhabitants, 214; guide to travellers on, 206 (*see* Sastrugi)  
 Tuski, or Tehuktehe, chief of, tells Wrangell of land north of Siberia, 207  
 Tyson, Captain, assistant navigator of 'Polaris,' 172; in the boat which drifted out of Baffin's Bay, 177

## ULV

- ULVE**, Captain, with Mr. Leigh Smith, 86
- Umingmuk (Musk Ox Isle), up Smith Sound, 168
- 'United States,' schooner of Dr. Hayes, 168
- Unknown Region, its extent, 2; approaches to, 3; approached by Hudson, 27; approach to, by Smith Sound, 165; wide strait leading to, up Smith Sound, 167, 175; north of Parry Islands, 184, 185; along Siberian coast, 196, 214; best route for exploration of, 263; results of exploration, 288 *et seq.*
- Upernivik, 130, 359; Kane retreats to, 167
- Ust Uansk, winter quarters of Anjou, 203
- WAIGAT**, discovered by Burrough and Pett, 5, 7, 12 (*see* Waygat)
- 'Valorous,' 341; its assistance in the Arctic expedition of 1875, 353; the cruise of, 417-433
- Van Keulen, chart of Spitzbergen, 50, 82; points on east coast of Greenland on chart, 110, 115
- Van Rensselaer harbour, Kane's winter quarters, 163, 169
- Vardö, 93
- Vegetation (*see* Plants, Botanical Results)
- 'Victor,' whaler, of Dundee, 100, 150, 154
- Vlamingh, Capt., Dutch explorer, 25, 47, 53
- Vogelsang Pt. (Spitzbergen), so named by Barents, 12, 29
- Vosokoi, Cape (New Siberia), 203

## WHA

- WAIGAT**, 357; scenery of, 422
- Walden Island, 66
- Walig, Dutch captain, of Helder, his account of the voyage of Gilies (Gillis), 49
- Walker, Capt., of whaler 'Erik,' 121, 148, 150, 151
- Walker, Capt. W., of Mr. Leigh Smith's yacht 'Sampson,' 100
- Walker, Dr., of the 'Fox,' 60
- Waller, W., 415
- Walsingham, Cape, 130, 135
- Ward, William, 415
- Wardhouse Isle, 18
- Waygat, or Hinlopen Strait, 43, 49
- Waygat Isle, 86
- Wellington Channel, drift of ice in, 135, 166
- Wellington, W. C., 415
- Weyde Bay (Spitzbergen), 87
- Weyprecht, Lieut., his voyage in 1871, 224; commander of the Austro-Hungarian expedition, 225; his magnetic observations, 233
- Whale Sound, 'Polaris' wintering at entrance of, 177
- Whale fishery in Spitzbergen seas, 33-4; Il. 'son's voyages led the way to, 38; ventures of Muscovy Company, 40; Dutch, 44-8; 'Whale-fishers' Bight,' 58; information collected by captains, 63; Dutch in Davis' Strait, 134
- Whalers in Baffin's Bay, 141; in Melville Bay, 142; introduction of steamers, 145, 146; demand for oil, 145; value of Dundee whaling trade, 147
- Whalers of Peterhead, 63, 127; of Dundee, 148; steamers, 146; iron steamer tried and failed, 147; sail from Dundee

## WIII

- in 1873, 150; in Smith Sound, 170; discoveries of, 150
- White, Mr., engineer, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 328, 415; his suggestion on ventilation, 366
- Wiche, Mr. Richard, after whom Wiche's Land was named, 41-2; account of, 42 (*note*)
- Wiche Island, discovered by one of Captain Edge's ships, 40, 41, 42, 50; sighted by Von Heuglin, 95; sighted by Birkebeck, 86; re-discovered by the Norwegians, 90, 91, 92
- Wiggins, Capt., voyage to the sea of Kara and Gulf of Obi, 220
- Wilezek, Count, voyage in the 'Isbjorn' to Novaya Zemlya, 226
- Wilezek Land, 244
- 'William,' ship of Charles Jackman, 6
- Williamszoon, Capt., voyage towards the Pole, 48
- Willoughby, Sir John, 4
- Wind, gales of, 312
- Windsor, Henry, 415
- 'Windward,' whaler of Peterhead, 128
- Winstone, George, 415
- Winter quarters, of Barents, 15; of Graah, 117; of Kane and Hayes, 163, 169, 170; of Hall, 176; of Anjou, 203; of the Arctic expedition of 1875, 363
- Witson, his account of the voyage of Vlamingh, 25; Grenville Collins's letter to, 37; his account of the voyage of Cornelis Roule, 47
- Wolf Island, 178
- Wolstenholme, Sir John, 133

## ZOR

- Wolstenholme Sound, 124
- Woman's Islands, 133, 140
- Wood, Capt. John, account of, 35; his arguments for a Polar voyage, 35, 36; his voyage to Novaya Zemlya, 36, 37
- Wood, William, 415
- Woodcocke, sent out by the Muscovy Company, 6
- Woolley, William, 415
- Wootton, Mr., engineer, appointed to the Arctic expedition of 1875, 328, 415
- Wyatt, Benjamin, 416
- Wyche Island (*see* Wiche)

## YAKUTSK, 198, 202

- Yenisei river, 196-7; expedition of Schmidt to, 212, 214; drift wood carried down by, 212
- Yeaman, Mr., of Dundee, information furnished by, 149 (*note*)
- Yenisei, proposed voyage to, 220
- York, Cape (Baffin's Bay), 138, 140, 142, 145, 156, 161, 165
- Young, Allen, Capt., intended voyage to the Yenisei, 220; captain of the 'Pandora,' 419, 435
- Yule, Capt., of Dundee, whaler 'Esquimaux,' 148
- ZELL, Count, accompanies Von Heuglin, 84
- Zeni, voyage of, 106, 114
- Zichy Land, 224
- Zoological results of Arctic exploration, 302-3
- Zoology, Arctic, study of, 349
- Zorgdrager, his work on Dutch whaling, 51

LONDON : PRINTED BY  
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE  
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

*A Catalogue of American and Foreign Books Published or Imported by MESSRS. SAMPSON LOW & Co. can be had on application.*

*Crown Buildings, 188, Fleet Street, London,  
April, 1880.*

## A Selection from the List of Books

PUBLISHED BY

SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON, SEARLE, & RIVINGTON.

### ALPHABETICAL LIST.

- A CLASSIFIED Educational Catalogue of Works published in Great Britain. Demy 8vo, cloth extra. Second Edition, revised and corrected to Christmas, 1879, 5s.*
- About (Edmond). See "The Story of an Honest Man."*
- About Some Fellows. By an ETON BOY, Author of "A Day of my Life." Cloth limp, square 16mo, 2s. 6d.*
- Adventures of Captain Mago. A Phœnician's Explorations 1000 years B.C. By LEON CAHUN. Numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.*
- Adventures of a Young Naturalist. By LUCIEN BIART, with 117 beautiful Illustrations on Wood. Edited and adapted by PARKER GILLMORE. Post 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, New Edition, 7s. 6d.*
- Afghan Knife (The). A Novel. By ROBERT ARMITAGE STERNDALE, Author of "Sconee." Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.*
- Afghanistan and the Afghans. Being a Brief Review of the History of the Country, and Account of its People. By H. W. BELLEW, C.S.I. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.*
- Alcott (Louisa M.) Jimmy's Cruise in the "Pinafore." With 9 Illustrations. Second Edition. Small post 8vo, cloth gilt, 3s. 6d.*
- *Aunt Jo's Scrap-Bag. Square 16mo, 2s. 6d. (Rose Library, 1s.)*
- *Little Men: Life at Plumfield with Jo's Boys. Small post 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, 3s. 6d. (Rose Library, Double vol. 2s.)*
- *Little Women. 1 vol., cloth, gilt edges, 3s. 6d. (Rose Library, 2 vols., 1s. each.)*

*Alcott (Louisa M.) Old-Fashioned Girl.* Best Edition, small post 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 3s. 6d. (Rose Library, 2s.)

— *Work and Beginning Again.* A Story of Experience. Experience. 1 vol., small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s. Several Illustrations. (Rose Library, 2 vols., 1s. each.)

— *Shawl Straps.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, gilt, 3s. 6d.

— *Eight Cousins; or, the Aunt Hill.* Small post 8vo, with Illustrations, 3s. 6d.

— *The Rose in Bloom.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

— *Silver Pitchers.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

— *Under the Lilacs.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 5s.

— *Fack and Fill.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 5s.

"Miss Alcott's stories are thoroughly healthy, full of racy fun and humour . . . exceedingly entertaining . . . We can recommend the 'Eight Cousins.'"—*Athenæum.*

*Alpine Ascents and Adventures; or, Rock and Snow Sketches.* By H. SCHÜTZ WILSON, of the Alpine Club. With Illustrations by WHYMPER and MARCUS STONE. Crown 8vo, 10s. 5d. 2nd Edition.

*Andersen (Hans Christian) Fairy Tales.* With Illustrations in Colours by E. V. B. Royal 4to, cloth, 25s.

*Animals Painted by Themselves.* Adapted from the French of Balzac, Georges Sands, &c., with 200 Illustrations by GRANDVILLE. 8vo, cloth extra, gilt, 10s. 6d.

*Art Education.* See "Illustrated Text Books."

*Art in the Mountains: The Story of the Passion Play.* By HENRY BLACKBURN, Author of "Artists and Arabs," "Breton Folk," &c. With numerous Illustrations, and an Appendix for Travellers, giving the Expenses of the Journey, Cost of Living, Routes from England, &c., Map, and Programme for 1880. 4to, cloth, 10s. 6d.

"Of the many previous accounts of the play, none, we are disposed to think, recalls that edifying and impressive spectacle with the same clearness and vividness as Mr. Blackburn's volume."—*Guardian.*

"He writes in excellent taste, and is interesting from the first page to the last."—*Saturday Review.*

*Art of Reading Aloud (The) in Pulpit, Lecture Room, or Private Sessions.* By G. VANDENHOFF, M.A. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.

*Art Treasures in the South Kensington Museum.* Published, with the sanction of the Science and Art Department, in Monthly Parts, each containing 8 Plates, price 1s. In this series are included representations of Decorative Art of all countries and all times from objects in the South Kensington Museum, under the following classes:—

Sculpture: Works in Marble, Ivory, and Terra-Cotta.

Bronzes: Statuettes, Medallions, Plaques, Coins.

Decorative Painting and Mosaic.



Decorative Furniture and Carved Wood-Work.  
 Ecclesiastical Metal-Work.  
 Gold and Silversmiths' Work and Jewellery.  
 Limoges and Oriental Enamels.  
 Pottery of all Countries.  
 Glass: Oriental, Venetian, and German.  
 Ornamental Iron-Work: Cutlery.  
 Textile Fabrics: Embroidery and Lace.  
 Decorative Bookbinding.  
 Original Designs for Works of Decorative Art.  
 Views of the Courts and Galleries of the Museum.  
 Architectural Decorations of the Museum.

The Plates are carefully printed in atlas 8vo (13 in. by 9 in.), on thick ivory-tinted paper; and are included in a stout wrapper, ornamented with a drawing from "The Genoa Doorway" recently acquired by the Museum.

*Asiatic Turkey: being a Narrative of a Journey from Bombay to the Bosphorus.* By GRATTAN GEARY, Editor of the *Times of India*. 2 vols., crown 8vo, cloth extra, with many Illustrations, and a Route Map, 28s.

*Australian Abroad (The). Branches from the Main Routes Round the World.* Comprising the Author's Route through Japan, China, Cochin-China, Malasia, Sunda, Java, Torres Straits, Northern Australia, New South Wales, South Australia, and New Zealand. By JAMES HINGSTON ("J. H." of the *Melbourne Argus*). With Maps and numerous Illustrations from Photographs. 2 vols., 8vo, 14s. each.

*Autobiography of Sir G. Gilbert Scott, R.A., F.S.A., &c.* Edited by his Son, G. GILBERT SCOTT. With an Introduction by the DEAN OF CHICHESTER, and a Funeral Sermon, preached in Westminster Abbey, by the DEAN OF WESTMINSTER. Also, Portrait on steel from the portrait of the Author by G. RICHMOND, R.A. 1 vol., demy 8vo, cloth extra, 18s.

*BAKER (Lieut.-Gen. Valentine, Pasha).* See "War in Bulgaria."

### THE BAYARD SERIES,

Edited by the late J. HAIN FRISWELL.

Comprising Pleasure Books of Literature produced in the Choicest Style as Companionable Volumes at Home and Abroad.

"We can hardly imagine better books for boys to read or for men to ponder over."—*Times*.

Price 2s. 6d. each Volume, complete in itself, flexible cloth extra, gilt edges, with silk Headbands and Registers.

*The Story of the Chevalier Bayard.* By M. DE BERVILLE.  
*De Joinville's St. Louis, King of France.*

*The Bayard Series (continued):—*

*The Essays of Abraham Cowley*, including all his Prose Works, *Abdallah; or the Four Leaves*. By EDOUARD LABOULLAYE.

*Table-Talk and Opinions of Napoleon Buonaparte*.

*Vathek: An Oriental Romance*. By WILLIAM BECKFORD.

*The King and the Commons*. A Selection of Cavalier and Puritan Songs. Edited by Prof. MORLEY.

*Words of Wellington: Maxims and Opinions of the Great Duke*.

*Dr. Johnson's Rasselas, Prince of Abyssinia*. With Notes.

*Hazlitt's Round Table*. With Biographical Introduction.

*The Religio Medici, Hydriotaphia, and the Letter to a Friend*. By SIR THOMAS BROWNE, Knt.

*Ballad Poetry of the Affections*. By ROBERT BUCHANAN.

*Coleridge's Christabel*, and other Imaginative Poems. With Preface by ALGERNON C. SWINBURNE.

*Lord Chesterfield's Letters, Sentences, and Maxims*. With Introduction by the Editor, and Essay on Chesterfield by M. DE STE.-BEUVE, of the French Academy.

*Essays in Mosaic*. By THOS. BALLANTYNE.

*My Uncle Toby; his Story and his Friends*. Edited by P. FITZGERALD.

*Reflections; or, Moral Sentences and Maxims of the Duke de la Rochefoucauld*.

*Socrates: Memoirs for English Readers from Xenophon's Memorabilia*. By EDW. LEVIEN.

*Prince Albert's Golden Precepts*.

*A Case containing 12 Volumes, price 31s. 6d.; or the Case separately, price 3s. 6d.*

*Beauty and the Beast*. An Old Tale retold, with Pictures by E. V. B. 4to, cloth extra. 10 Illustrations in Colours. 12s. 6d.

*Beumers' German Copybooks*. In six gradations at 4d. each.

*Biart (Lucien)*. See "Adventures of a Young Naturalist," "My Rambles in the New World," "The Two Friends," "Involuntary Voyage."

*Bickersteth's Hymnal Companion to Book of Common Prayer* may be had in various styles and bindings from 1*l.* to 21*s.* Price List and Prospectus will be forwarded on application.

*Bickersteth (Rev. E. H., M.A.) The Reef and other Parables.* 1 vol., square 8vo, with numerous very beautiful Engravings, 2*s.* 6*d.*

——— *The Clergyman in his Home.* Small post 8vo, 1*s.*

——— *The Master's Home-Call; or, Brief Memorials of* Alice Frances Bickersteth. 20th Thousand. 32mo, cloth gilt, 1*s.*

——— *The Master's Will.* A Funeral Sermon preached on the Death of Mrs. S. Gurney Buxton. Sewn, 6*d.*; cloth gilt, 1*s.*

——— *The Shadow of the Rock.* A Selection of Religious Poetry. 18mo, cloth extra, 2*s.* 6*d.*

——— *The Shadowed Home and the Light Beyond.* 7th Edition, crown 8vo, cloth extra, 5*s.*

*Bida. The Authorized Version of the Four Gospels,* with the whole of the magnificent Etchings on Steel, after drawings by M. BIDA, in 4 vols., appropriately bound in cloth extra, price 3*l.* 3*s.* each.

Also the four volumes in two, bound in the best morocco, by Suttaby, extra gilt edges, 18*l.* 18*s.*, half-morocco, 12*l.* 12*s.*

"Bida's Illustrations of the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. John have already received here and elsewhere a full recognition of their great merits."—*Times.*

*Biographies of the Great Artists, Illustrated.* This Series is issued in the form of Handbooks. Each is a Monograph of a Great Artist, and contains Portraits of the Masters, and as many examples of their art as can be readily procured. They are Illustrated with from 16 to 20 Full-page Engravings. Cloth, large crown 8vo, 3*s.* 6*d.* per Volume.

<b>Titian.</b>	<b>Rubens.</b>	<b>Tintoret and Veronese.</b>
<b>Rembrandt.</b>	<b>Leonardo.</b>	<b>Hogarth.</b>
<b>Raphael.</b>	<b>Turner.</b>	<b>Michelangelo.</b>
<b>Van Dyck and Hals.</b>	<b>The Little Masters.</b>	<b>Reynolds.</b>
<b>Holbein.</b>	<b>Delaroche &amp; Vernet.</b>	<b>Gainsborough.</b>

**Figure Painters of Holland.**

"A deserving Series, based upon recent German publications."—*Edinburgh Review.*

"Most thoroughly and tastefully edited."—*Spectator.*

*Black (Wm.) Three Feathers.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6*s.*

——— *Lady Silverdale's Sweetheart, and other Stories.* 1 vol., small post 8vo, 6*s.*

——— *Kilmenny: a Novel.* Small post 8vo, cloth, 6*s.*

——— *In Silk Attire.* 3rd Edition, small post 8vo, 6*s.*

——— *A Daughter of Heth.* 11th Edition, small post 8vo, 6*s.*

——— *Sunrise.* 15 Monthly Parts, 1*s.* each.

- Blackmore (R. D.) Lorna Doone.* 10th Edition, cr. 8vo, 6s.  
 ——— *Alice Lorraine.* 1 vol., small post 8vo, 6th Edition, 6s.  
 ——— *Clara Vaughan.* Revised Edition, 6s.  
 ——— *Cradock Nowell.* New Edition, 6s.  
 ——— *Cripps the Carrier.* 3rd Edition, small post 8vo, 6s.  
 ——— *Mary Anerley.* 3 vols., 31s. 6d.  
 ——— *Erema; or, My Father's Sin.* With 12 Illustrations, small post 8vo, 6s.
- Blossoms from the King's Garden: Sermons for Children.* By the Rev. C. BOSANQUET. 2nd Edition, small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.
- Blue Banner (The); or, The Adventures of a Mussulman, a Christian, and a Pagan, in the time of the Crusades and Mongol Conquest.* Translated from the French of LEON CAHUN. With Seventy-six Wood Engravings. Imperial 16mo, cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.
- Boy's Froissart (The).* 7s. 6d. See "Froissart."
- Brave Janet: A Story for Girls.* By ALICE LEE. With Frontispiece by M. ELLEN EDWARDS. Square 8vo, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.
- Brave Men in Action.* By S. J. MACKENNA. Crown 8vo, 480 pp., cloth, 10s. 6d.
- Brazil: the Amazons, and the Coast.* By HERBERT H. SMITH. With 115 Full-page and other Illustrations. Demy 8vo, 650 pp., 21s.
- Brazil and the Brazilians.* By J. C. FLETCHER and D. P. KIDDER. 9th Edition, Illustrated, 8vo, 21s.
- Breton Folk: An Artistic Tour in Brittany.* By HENRY BLACKBURN, Author of "Artists and Arabs," "Normandy Picturesque," &c. With 171 Illustrations by RANDOLPH CALDECOTT. Imperial 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 21s.
- British Goblins: Welsh Folk-Lore, Fairy Mythology, Legends, and Traditions.* By WIRT SYKES, United States Consul for Wales. With Illustrations by J. H. THOMAS. This account of the Fairy Mythology and Folk-Lore of his Principality is, by permission, dedicated to H. R. II. the Prince of Wales. Second Edition. 8vo, 18s.
- British Philosophers.*
- Buckle (Henry Thomas) The Life and Writings of.* By ALFRED HENRY HUTH. With Portrait. 2 vols., demy 8vo.
- Burnaby (Capt.)* See "On Horseback."
- Burnham Beeches (Heath, F. G.).* With numerous Illustrations and a Map. Crown 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, 3s. 6d. Second Edition.  
 "Writing with even more than his usual brilliancy, Mr. HEATH here gives the public an interesting monograph of the splendid old trees. . . . This charming little work."—*Globe.*

cr. 8vo, 6s.  
h Edition, 6s.

ost 8vo, 6s.

e Illustrations,

*Children.* By  
o, cloth extra, 6s.  
*Mussulman, a*  
des and Mongol  
CAHUN. With  
loth, gilt edges,

E LEE. With  
loth extra, 3s. 6d.

Crown 8vo,

BERT H. SMITH.  
8vo, 650 pp., 21s.  
ER and D. P.

By HENRY  
Normandy Pictu-  
PHI CALDECOTT.

*ology, Legends,*  
Consul for Wales.  
unt of the Fairy  
permission, dedi-  
tion. 8vo, 18s.

By ALFRED

ous Illustrations  
Second Edition.  
EATH here gives the  
. . . . This charming

*Butler (W. F.) The Great Lone Land; an Account of the Red River Expedition, 1869-70.* With Illustrations and Map. Fifth and Cheaper Edition, crown 8vo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.

— *The Wild North Land; the Story of a Winter Journey* with Dogs across Northern North America. Demy 8vo, cloth, with numerous Woodcuts and a Map, 4th Edition, 18s. Cr. 8vo, 7s. 6d.

— *Akim-foo: the History of a Failure.* Demy 8vo, cloth, 2nd Edition, 16s. Also, in crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.

**CADOGAN (Lady A.) Illustrated Games of Patience.** Twenty-four Diagrams in Colours, with Descriptive Text. Foolscap 4to, cloth extra, gilt edges, 3rd Edition, 12s. 6d.

*Caldecott (R.).* See "Breton Folk."

*Carbon Process (A Manual of).* See LIESEGANG.

*Ceramic Art.* See JACQUEMART.

*Changed Cross (The),* and other Religious Poems. 16mo, 2s. 6d.

*Chant Book Companion to the Book of Common Prayer.* Consisting of upwards of 550 Chants for the Daily Psalms and for the Canticles; also Kyrie El ions, and Music for the Hymns in Holy Communion, &c. Compiled and Arranged under the Musical Editorship of C. J. VINCENT, Mus. Bac. Crown 8vo, 2s. 6d.; Organist's Edition, fcap. 4to, 5s.

*Of various Editions of HYMNAL COMPANION, Lists will be forwarded on application.*

*Child of the Cavern (The); or, Strange Doings Underground.*

By JULES VERNE. Translated by W. H. G. KINGSTON. Numerous Illustrations. Sq. cr. 8vo, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; cl., plain edges, 5s.

*Child's Play,* with 16 Coloured Drawings by E. V. B. Printed on thick paper, with tints, 7s. 6d.

— *New.* By E. V. B. Similar to the above. See New.

*Children's Lives and How to Preserve Them; or, The Nursery Handbook.* By W. LOMAS, M.D. Crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.

*Children's Magazine.* Illustrated. See St. Nicholas.

*Choice Editions of Choice Books.* 2s. 6d. each, Illustrated by

C. W. COPE, R.A., T. CRESWICK, R.A., E. DUNCAN, BIRKIT FOSTER, J. C. HORSLEY, A.R.A., G. HICKS, R. REDGRAVE, R.A., C. STONEHOUSE, F. TAYLER, G. THOMAS, II. J. TOWNSEND, E. H. WEHNERT, HARRISON WEIR, &c.

Bloomfield's Farmer's Boy.

Campbell's Pleasures of Hope.

Coleridge's Ancient Mariner.

Goldsmith's Deserted Village.

Goldsmith's Vicar of Wakefield.

Gray's Elegy in a Churchyard.

Keat's Eve of St. Agnes.

Milton's L'Allegro.

Poetry of Nature. Harrison Weir.

Rogers' (Sam.) Pleasures of Memory.

Shakespeare's Songs and Sonnets.

Tennyson's May Queen.

Elizabethan Poets.

Wordsworth's Pastoral Poems.

"Such works are a glorious beatification for a poet."—*Athenæum*.

- Christ in Song.* By Dr. PHILIP SCHAFF. A New Edition, Revised, cloth, gilt edges, 6s.
- Cobbett (William).* A Biography. By EDWARD SMITH. 2 vols., crown 8vo, 25s.
- Comedy (The) of Europe, 1860—1890.* A retrospective and prospective Sketch. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- Conflict of Christianity with Heathenism.* By Dr. GERHARD UHLIORN. Edited and Translated from the Third German Edition by G. C. SMYTH and C. J. H. ROPES. 8vo, cloth extra, 10s. 6d.
- Continental Tour of Eight Days for Forty-four Shillings.* By a JOURNEY-MAN. 12mo, 1s.  
"The book is simply delightful."—*Spectator*.
- Corea (The).* See "Forbidden Land."
- Covert Side Sketches: Thoughts on Hunting, with Different Packs in Different Countries.* By J. NEVITT FITT (H.H. of the *Sporting Gazette*, late of the *Field*). 2nd Edition. Crown 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.
- Cradle-Land of Arts and Creeds; or, Nothing New under the Sun.* By CHARLES J. STONE, Barrister-at-law, and late Advocate, High Courts, Bombay, 8vo, pp. 420, cloth, 14s.
- Cripps the Carrier.* 3rd Edition, 6s. See BLACKMORE.
- Cruise of H.M.S. "Challenger" (The).* By W. J. J. SPRY, R.N. With Route Map and many Illustrations. 6th Edition, demy 8vo, cloth, 18s. Cheap Edition, crown 8vo, some of the Illustrations, 7s. 6d.
- Curious Adventures of a Field Cricket.* By Dr. ERNEST CANDÈZE. Translated by N. D'ANVERS. With numerous fine Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.
- DANA (R. H.) Two Years before the Mast and Twenty-Four years After.* Revised Edition with Notes, 12mo, 6s.
- Daughter (A) of Heth.* By W. BLACK. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- Day of My Life (A); or, Every Day Experiences at Eton.* By an ETON BOY, Author of "About Some Fellows." 15mo, cloth extra, 2s. 6d. 6th Thousand.
- Day out of the Life of a Little Maiden (A): Six Studies from Life.* By SHERER and ENGLER. Large 4to, in portfolio, 5s.
- Diane.* By Mrs. MACQUOID. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- Dick Cheveley: his Fortunes and Misfortunes.* By W. H. G. KINGSTON. 350 pp., square 16mo, and 22 full-page Illustrations. Cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.
- Dick Sands, the Boy Captain.* By JULES VERNE. With nearly 100 Illustrations, cloth extra, gilt edges, 10s. 6d.

- Dodge (Mrs. M.) Hans Brinker; or, the Silver Skates.* An entirely New Edition, with 59 Full-page and other Woodcuts. Square crown 8vo, cloth extra, 5s. ; Text only, paper, 1s.
- Dogs of Assize.* A Legal Sketch-Book in Black and White. Containing 6 Drawings by WALTER J. ALLEN. Folio, in wrapper, 6s. 8d.

*EIGHT Cousins.* See ALCOTT.

*Eldmuir: An Art-Story of Scottish Home-Life, Scenery, and Incident.* By JACOB THOMPSON, Jun. Illustrated with Engravings after Paintings of JACOB THOMPSON. With an Introductory Notice by LLEWELLYNN JEWITT, F.S.A., &c. Demy 8vo, cloth extra, 14s.

*Elinor Dryden.* By Mrs. MACQUOID. Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Embroidery (Handbook of).* By L. HIGGIN. Edited by LADY MARIAN ALFORD, and published by authority of the Royal School of Art Needlework. With 16 page Illustrations, Designs for Borders, &c. Crown 8vo, 5s.

*English Catalogue of Books (The).* Published during 1863 to 1871 inclusive, comprising also important American Publications. 30s.

\* \* \* Of the previous Volume, 1835 to 1862, very few remain on sale; as also of the Index Volume, 1837 to 1857.

— *Supplements*, 1863, 1864, 1865, 3s. 6d. each; 1866 to 1880, 5s. each.

*English Writers*, Chapters for Self-Improvement in English Literature. By the Author of "The Gentle Life," 6s. ; smaller edition, 2s. 6d.

*English Philosophers.* A Series of Volumes containing short biographies of the most celebrated English Philosophers, designed to direct the reader to the sources of more detailed and extensive criticism than the size and nature of the books in this Series would permit. Though not issued in chronological order, the series will, when complete, constitute a comprehensive history of English Philosophy. Two Volumes will be issued simultaneously at brief intervals, in square 16mo, price 2s. 6d.

*The following are already arranged:—*

**Bacon.** Professor FOWLER, Professor of Logic in Oxford.

**Berkeley.** Professor T. H. GREEN, Professor of Moral Philosophy, Oxford.

**Hamilton.** Professor MONK, Professor of Moral Philosophy, Dublin.

**J. S. Mill.** Miss HELEN TAYLOR, Editor of "The Works of Buckle," &c.

**Mansel.** Rev. J. H. HUCKIN, D.D., Head Master of Repton.

**Adam Smith.** Mr. J. A. FARRER, M.A., Author of "Primitive Manners and Customs."



*English Philosophers, continued:—*

- Hobbes.** Mr. A. H. GOSSET, B.A., Fellow of New College, Oxford.  
**Bentham.** Mr. G. E. BUCKLE, M.A., Fellow of All Souls', Oxford.  
**Austin.** Mr. HARRY JOHNSON, B.A., late Scholar of Queen's College, Oxford.  
**Hartley.** } Mr. E. S. BOWEN, B.A., late Scholar of New College,  
**James Mill.** } Oxford.  
**Shaftesbury.** } Professor FOWLER.  
**Hutcheson.** }

*Erchomenon; or, The Republic of Materialism.* Small post 8vo, cloth, 5s.

*Erema; or, My Father's Sin.* See BLACKMORE.

*Eton.* See "Day of my Life," "Out of School," "About Some Fellows."

*Evans (C.) Over the Hills and Far Away.* By C. EVANS. One Volume, crown 8vo, cloth extra, 10s. 6d.

— *A Strange Friendship.* Crown 8vo, cloth, 5s.

*FAMILY Prayers for Working Men.* By the Author of "Steps to the Throne of Grace." With an Introduction by the Rev. E. H. BICKERSTETH, M.A. Cloth, 1s.; sewed, 6d.

*Fern Paradise (The): A Plea for the Culture of Ferns.* By F. G. HEATH. New Edition, entirely Rewritten, Illustrated with Eighteen full-page, numerous other Woodcuts, including 8 Plates of Ferns and Four Photographs, large post 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, 12s. 6d. Sixth Edition. In 12 Parts, sewn, 1s. each.

"This charming Volume will not only enchant the Fern-lover, but will also please and instruct the general reader."—*Spectator*.

*Fern World (The).* By F. G. HEATH. Illustrated by Twelve Coloured Plates, giving complete Figures (Sixty-four in all) of every Species of British Fern, printed from Nature; by several full-page Engravings. Cloth, gilt, 6th Edition, 12s. 6d. In 12 parts, 1s. each.

"Mr. HEATH has really given us good, well-written descriptions of our native Ferns, with indications of their habitats, the conditions under which they grow naturally, and under which they may be cultivated."—*Athenæum*.

*Few (A) Hints on Proving Wills.* Enlarged Edition, 1s.

*First Steps in Conversational French Grammar.* By F. JULIEN. Being an Introduction to "Petites Leçons de Conversation et de Grammaire," by the same Author. Fcap. 8vo, 128 pp., 1s.

*Five Years in Minnesota.* By MAURICE FARRAR, M.A. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.

*Flooding of the Sahara (The).* See MACKENZIE.

*Food for the People; or, Lentils and other Vegetable Cookery.* By E. E. ORLEBAR. Third Thousand. Small post 8vo, boards, 1s.

*A Fool's Errand.* By ONE OF THE FOOLS. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 5s.

*Footsteps of the Master.* See STOWE (MRS. BEECHER).

*Forbidden Land (A): Voyages to the Corea.* By G. OPPERT. Numerous Illustrations and Maps. Demy 8vo, cloth extra, 21s.

*Four Lectures on Electric Induction.* Delivered at the Royal Institution, 1878-9. By J. E. H. GORDON, B.A. Cantab. With numerous Illustrations. Cloth limp, square 16mo, 3s.

*Foreign Countries and the British Colonies.* Edited by F. S. PULLING, M.A., Lecturer at Queen's College, Oxford, and formerly Professor at the Yorkshire College, Leeds. A Series of small Volumes descriptive of the principal Countries of the World by well-known Authors, each Country being treated of by a Writer who from Personal Knowledge is qualified to speak with authority on the Subject. The Volumes will average 180 crown 8vo pages, will contain Maps, and, in some cases, a few typical Illustrations.

The following Volumes are in preparation:—

Denmark and Iceland.	Russia.	Canada.
Greece.	Persia.	Sweden and Norway.
Switzerland.	Japan.	The West Indies.
Austria.	Peru.	New Zealand.

*Franç (Maude Jeane).* The following form one Series, small post 8vo, in uniform cloth bindings:—

— *Emily's Choice.* 5s.

— *Hal's Vineyard.* 4s.

— *John's Wife: a Story of Life in South Australia.* 4s.

— *Marian; or, the Light of Some One's Home.* 5s.

— *Silken Cords and Iron Fetters.* 4s.

— *Vermont Vale.* 5s.

— *Minnie's Mission.* 4s.

— *Little Mercy.* 5s.

— *Beatrice Melton.* 4s.

*Friends and Foes in the Transkei: An Englishwoman's Experiences during the Cape Frontier War of 1877-8.* By HELEN M. PRICHARD. Crown 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.

*Froissart (The Boy's).* Selected from the Chronicles of England, France, Spain, &c. By SIDNEY LANIER. The Volume will be fully Illustrated. Crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

*Funny Foreigners and Eccentric Englishmen.* 16 coloured comic Illustrations for Children. Fcap. folio, coloured wrapper, 4s.

**GAMES of Patience.** See CADOGAN.

*Gentle Life* (Queen Edition). 2 vols. in 1, small 4to, 10s. 6d.

### THE GENTLE LIFE SERIES.

Price 6s. each ; or in calf extra, price 10s. 6d. ; Smaller Edition, cloth extra, 2s. 6d.

A Reprint (with the exception of "Familiar Words" and "Other People's Windows") has been issued in very neat limp cloth bindings at 2s. 6d. each.

*The Gentle Life.* Essays in aid of the Formation of Character of Gentlemen and Gentlewomen. 21st Edition.

"Deserves to be printed in letters of gold, and circulated in every house."—*Chambers' Journal.*

*About in the World.* Essays by Author of "The Gentle Life."

"It is not easy to open it at any page without finding some handy idea."—*Morning Post.*

*Like unto Christ.* A New Translation of Thomas à Kempis'

"De Imitatione Christi." 2nd Edition.

"Could not be presented in a more exquisite form, for a more sightly volume was never seen."—*Illustrated London News.*

*Familiar Words.* An Index Verborum, or Quotation Handbook. Affording an immediate Reference to Phrases and Sentences that have become embedded in the English language. 3rd and enlarged Edition. 6s.

"The most extensive dictionary of quotation we have met with."—*Notes and Queries.*

*Essays by Montaigne.* Edited and Annotated by the Author of "The Gentle Life." With Portrait. 2nd Edition.

"We should be glad if any words of ours could help to bespeak a large circulation for this handsome attractive book."—*Illustrated Times.*

*The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.* Written by Sir PHILIP SIDNEY. Edited with Notes by Author of "The Gentle Life." 7s. 6d.

"All the best things are retained intact in Mr. Friswell's edition."—*Examiner.*

*The Gentle Life.* 2nd Series, 8th Edition.

"There is not a single thought in the volume that does not contribute in some measure to the formation of a true gentleman."—*Daily News.*

*The Silent Hour: Essays, Original and Selected.* By the Author of "The Gentle Life." 3rd Edition.

"All who possess 'The Gentle Life' should own this volume."—*Standard.*

*Half-Length Portraits.* Short Studies of Notable Persons. By J. HAIN FRISWELL. Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.

*Essays on English Writers,* for the Self-improvement of Students in English Literature.

"To all who have neglected to read and study their native literature we would certainly suggest the volume before us as a fitting introduction."—*Examiner.*

*The Gentle Life Series (continued):—*

*Other People's Windows.* By J. HAIN FRISWELL. 3rd Edition.  
 "The chapters are so lively in themselves, so mingled with shrewd views of human nature, so full of illustrative anecdotes, that the reader cannot fail to be amused."—*Morning Post*.

*A Man's Thoughts.* By J. HAIN FRISWELL.

*German Primer.* Being an Introduction to First Steps in German. By M. T. PREU. 2s. 6d.

*Getting On in the World; or, Hints on Success in Life.* By W. MATHEWS, LL.D. Small post 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d.; gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

*Gilpin's Forest Scenery.* Edited by F. G. HEATH. Large post 8vo, with numerous Illustrations. Uniform with "The Fern World" and "Our Woodland Trees." 12s. 6d.

"Those who know Mr. HEATH'S Volumes on Ferns, as well as his 'Woodland Trees,' and his little work on 'Burnham Beeches,' will understand the enthusiasm with which he has executed his task. . . . The Volume deserves to be a favourite in the boudoir as well as in the library."—*Saturday Review*.

*Gordon (J. E. H.).* See "Four Lectures on Electric Induction," "Physical Treatise on Electricity," &c.

*Gouffé. The Royal Cookery Book.* By JULES GOUFFÉ; translated and adapted for English use by ALPHONSE GOUFFÉ, Head Pastrycook to her Majesty the Queen. Illustrated with large plates printed in colours. 161 Woodcuts, 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 2l. 2s.

— Domestic Edition, half-bound, 10s. 6d.

"By far the ablest and most complete work on cookery that has ever been submitted to the gastronomical world."—*Full Mall Gazette*.

*Gouraud (Mlle.) Four Gold Pieces.* Numerous Illustrations. Small post 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d. See also Rose Library.

*Government of M. Thiers.* By JULES SIMON. Translated from the French. 2 vols., demy 8vo, cloth extra, 32s.

*Great Artists.* See Biographies.

*Greek Grammar.* See WALLER.

*Guizot's History of France.* Translated by ROBERT BLACK. Super-royal 8vo, very numerous Full-page and other Illustrations. In 5 vols., cloth extra, gilt, each 24s.

"It supplies a want which has long been felt, and ought to be in the hands of all students of history."—*Times*.

— *Masson's School Edition.* The History of France from the Earliest Times to the Outbreak of the Revolution; abridged from the Translation by Robert Black, M.A., with Chronological Index, Historical and Genealogical Tables, &c. By Professor GUSTAVE MASSON, B.A., Assistant Master at Harrow School. With 24 full-page Portraits, and many other Illustrations. 1 vol., demy 8vo, 600 pp., cloth extra, 10s. 6d.

*Guizot's History of England.* In 3 vols. of about 500 pp. each, containing 60 to 70 Full-page and other Illustrations, cloth extra, gilt, 24s. each.

"For luxury of typography, plainness of print, and beauty of illustration, these volumes, of which but one has as yet appeared in English, will hold their own against any production of an age so luxurious as our own in everything, typography not excepted."—*Times*.

*Guyon (Mde.) Life.* By UPHAM. 6th Edition, crown 8vo, 6s.

**H**ANDBOOK to the Charities of London. See Low's.

— of Embroidery; which see.

— to the Principal Schools of England. See Practical.

*Half-Hours of Blind Man's Holiday; or, Summer and Winter Sketches in Black & White.* By W. W. FENN. 2 vols., cr. 8vo, 24s.

*Half-Length Portraits.* Short Studies of Notable Persons. By J. HAIN FRISWELL. Small post 8vo, 6s.; Smaller Edition, 2s. 6d.

*Hall (W. W.) How to Live Long; or, 1408 Health Maxims,* Physical, Mental, and Moral. By W. W. HALL, A.M., M.D. Small post 8vo, cloth, 2s. Second Edition.

*Hans Brinker; or, the Silver Skates.* See DODGE.

*Have I a Vote?* A Handy Book for the Use of the People, on the Qualifications conferring the Right of Voting at County and Borough Parliamentary Elections. With Forms and Notes. By T. H. LEWIS, B.A., LL.B. Paper, 6d.

*Heart of Africa.* Three Years' Travels and Adventures in the Unexplored Regions of Central Africa, from 1868 to 1871. By Dr. GEORG SCHWEINFURTH. Numerous Illustrations, and large Map. 2 vols., crown 8vo, cloth, 15s.

*Heath (Francis George).* See "Fern World," "Fern Paradise," "Our Woodland Trees," "Trees and Ferns," "Gilpin's Forest Scenery," "Burnham Beeches," "Sylvan Spring," &c.

*Heber's (Bishop) Illustrated Edition of Hymns.* With upwards of 100 beautiful Engravings. Small 4to, handsomely bound, 7s. 6d. Morocco, 18s. 6d. and 21s. An entirely New Edition.

*Hector Servadac.* See VERNE. 10s. 6d. and 5s.

*Heir of Kilsinnan (The).* New Story by W. H. G. KINGSTON, Author of "Snoe Shoes and Canoes," "With Gun and Rifle," &c. With Illustrations. Cloth, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.

*History and Handbook of Photography.* Translated from the French of GASTON TISSANDIER. Edited by J. THOMSON. Imperial 16mo, over 300 pages, 70 Woodcuts, and Specimens of Prints by the best Permanent Processes. Second Edition, with an Appendix by the late Mr. HENRY FOX TALBOT. Cloth extra, 6s.

- History of a Crime (The) ; Deposition of an Eye-witness.* By VICTOR HUGO. 4 vols., crown 8vo, 42s. Cheap Edition, 1 vol., 6s.
- *England.* See GUIZOT.
- *France.* See GUIZOT.
- *of Russia.* See RAMBAUD.
- *Merchant Shipping.* See LINDSAY.
- *United States.* See BRYANT.
- *Ireland.* STANDISH O'GRADY. Vols. I. and II., 7s. 6d. each.
- *American Literature.* By M. C. TYLER. Vols. I. and II., 2 vols, 8vo, 24s.
- History and Principles of Weaving by Hand and by Power.* With several hundred Illustrations. By ALFRED BARLOW. Royal 8vo, cloth extra, 1l. 5s. Second Edition.
- Hitherto.* By the Author of "The Gayworthys." New Edition, cloth extra, 3s. 6d. Also, in Rose Library, 2 vols., 2s.
- Home of the Eddas.* By C. G. LOCK. Demy 8vo, cloth, 16s.
- How to Live Long.* See HALL.
- How to get Strong and how to Stay so.* By WILLIAM BLAIKIE. A Manual of Rational, Physical, Gymnastic, and other Exercises. With Illustrations, small post 8vo, 5s.
- "Worthy of every one's attention, whether old or young."—*Graphic.*
- Hugo (Victor) "Ninety-Three."* Illustrated. Crown 8vo, 6s.
- *Toilers of the Sea.* Crown 8vo. Illustrated, 6s.; fancy boards, 2s.; cloth, 2s. 6d.; On large paper with all the original Illustrations, 10s. 6d.
- . See "History of a Crime."
- Hundred Greatest Men (The).* 8 vols., containing 15 to 20 Portraits each, 21s. each. See below.
- "MESSRS. SAMPSON LOW & Co. are about to issue an important 'International' work, entitled, 'THE HUNDRED GREATEST MEN,' being the Lives and Portraits of the 100 Greatest Men of History, divided into Eight Classes, each Class to form a Monthly Quarto Volume. The Introductions to the volumes are to be written by recognized authorities on the different subjects, the English contributors being DEAN STANLEY, MR. MATTHEW ARNOLD, MR. FROUDE, and Professor MAX MÜLLER; in Germany, Professor HELMHOLTZ; in France, MM. TAINE and RENAN; and in America, MR. EMERSON. The Portraits are to be Reproductions from fine and rare Steel Engravings."—*Academy.*
- Hygiene and Public Health (A Treatise on).* Edited by A. H. BUCK, M.D. Illustrated by numerous Wood Engravings. In 2 royal 8vo vols., cloth, one guinea each.
- Hymnal Companion to Book of Common Prayer.* See BICKERSTETH.

**ILLUSTRATED Text-Books of Art-Education.** A Series of Monthly Volumes preparing for publication. Edited by EDWARD J. PONYER, R.A., Director for Art, Science and Art Department.

The first Volumes, large crown 8vo, cloth, 3s. 6d. each, will be issued in the following divisions:—

## PAINTING.

Classic and Italian.	French and Spanish.
German, Flemish, and Dutch.	English and American.

## ARCHITECTURE.

Classic and Early Christian.	Gothic, Renaissance, & Modern.
------------------------------	--------------------------------

## SCULPTURE.

Classic and Oriental.	Renaissance and Modern.
-----------------------	-------------------------

## ORNAMENT.

Decoration in Colour.	Architectural Ornament.
-----------------------	-------------------------

*Illustrations of China and its People.* By J. THOMPSON F.R.G.S. Four Volumes, imperial 4to, each 3l. 3s.

*In my Indian Garden.* By PHIL ROBINSON. With a Preface by EDWIN ARNOLD, M.A., C.S.I., &c. Crown 8vo, limp cloth, 3s. 6d.

*Involuntary Voyage (An).* Showing how a Frenchman who abhorred the Sea was most unwillingly and by a series of accidents driven round the World. Numerous Illustrations. Square crown 8vo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.

*Irish Bar.* Comprising Anecdotes, Bon-Mots, and Biographical Sketches of the Bench and Bar of Ireland. By J. RODERICK O'FLANAGAN, Barrister-at-Law. Crown 8vo, 12s. Second Edition.

*FACK and Fill.* By Miss ALCOTT. Small post 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, 5s.

*Jacquemart (A.) History of the Ceramic Art.* By ALBERT JACQUEMART. With 200 Woodcuts, 12 Steel-plate Engravings, and 1000 Marks and Monograms. Translated by Mrs. BURY PALLISER. Super-royal 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 28s.

*Jimmy's Cruise in the Pinafore.* See ALCOTT.

**KAFIRLAND: A Ten Months' Campaign.** By FRANK N. STREATFIELD, Resident Magistrate in Kaffraria, and Commandant of Native Levies during the Kaffir War of 1878. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.

*Keble Autograph Birthday Book (The).* Containing on each left-hand page the date and a selected verse from Keble's hymns. Imperial 8vo, with 12 Floral Chromos, ornamental binding, gilt edges, 15s.



- Khedive's Egypt (The); or, The old House of Bondage under New Masters.* By EDWIN DE LEON. Illustrated. Demy 8vo, 8s. 6d.
- King's Rifle (The): From the Atlantic to the Indian Ocean; Across Unknown Countries; Discovery of the Great Zambesi Affluents, &c.* By Major SERPA PINTO. With 24 full-page and about 100 smaller Illustrations, 13 small Maps, and 1 large one. Demy 8vo.
- Kingston (W. H. G.).* See "Snow-Shoes."
- *Child of the Cavern.*
- *Two Supercargoes.*
- *With Axe and Rifle.*
- *Begum's Fortune.*
- *Heir of Kilfinnan.*
- *Dick Cheveley.*

*LADY Silverdale's Sweetheart.* 6s. See BLACK.

- Lenten Meditations.* In Two Series, each complete in itself. By the Rev. CLAUDE BOSANQUET, Author of "Blossoms from the King's Garden." 16mo, cloth, First Series, 1s. 6d.; Second Series, 2s.
- Lentils.* See "Food for the People."
- Liesegang (Dr. Paul E.) A Manual of the Carbon Process of Photography.* Demy 8vo, half-bound, with Illustrations, 4s.
- Life and Letters of the Honourable Charles Sumner (The).* 2 vols., royal 8vo, cloth. Second Edition, 36s.
- Lindsay (W. S.) History of Merchant Shipping and Ancient Commerce.* Over 150 Illustrations, Maps and Charts. In 4 vols., demy 8vo, cloth extra. Vols. 1 and 2, 21s.; vols. 3 and 4, 24s. each.
- Lion Jack: a Story of Perilous Adventures amongst Wild Men and Beasts.* Showing how Menageries are made. By P. T. BARNUM. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, price 6s.
- Little King; or, the Taming of a Young Russian Count.* By S. BLANDY. 64 Illustrations. Crown 8vo, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.
- Little Mercy; or, For Better for Worse.* By MAUDE JEANNE FRANC, Author of "Marian," "Vermont Vale," &c., &c. Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 4s. Second Edition.
- Long (Col. C. Chaillé) Central Africa.* Naked Truths of Naked People: an Account of Expeditions to Lake Victoria Nyanza and the Mabraka Niam-Niam. Demy 8vo, numerous Illustrations, 18s.
- Lost Sir Massingberd.* New Edition, crown 8vo, boards, coloured wrapper, 2s.

*Low's German Series—*

1. **The Illustrated German Primer.** Being the easiest introduction to the study of German for all beginners. 1s.
2. **The Children's own German Book.** A Selection of Amusing and Instructive Stories in Prose. Edited by Dr. A. L. MEISSNER. Small post 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.
3. **The First German Reader, for Children from Ten to Fourteen.** Edited by Dr. A. L. MEISSNER. Small post 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.
4. **The Second German Reader.** Edited by Dr. A. L. MEISSNER. Small post 8vo, cloth, 1s. 6d.

*Buchheim's Deutsche Prosa. Two Volumes, sold separately:—*

5. **Schiller's Prosa.** Containing Selections from the Prose Works of Schiller, with Notes for English Students. By Dr. BUCHHEIM, Small post 8vo, 2s. 6d.
6. **Goethe's Prosa.** Selections from the Prose Works of Goethe, with Notes for English Students. By Dr. BUCHHEIM. Small post 8vo, 3s. 6d.

*Low's International Series of Toy Books. 6d. each; or Mounted on Linen, 1s.*

1. **Little Fred and his Fiddle,** from Asbjörnscn's "Norwegian Fairy Tales."
2. **The Lad and the North Wind,** ditto.
3. **The Pancake,** ditto.

*Low's Standard Library of Travel and Adventure. Crown 8vo, bound uniformly in cloth extra, price 7s. 6d.*

1. **The Great Lone Land.** By Major W. F. BUTLER, C. B.
2. **The Wild North Land.** By Major W. F. BUTLER, C. B.
3. **How I found Livingstone.** By H. M. STANLEY.
4. **The Threshold of the Unknown Region.** By C. R. MARKHAM. (4th Edition, with Additional Chapters, 10s. 6d.)
5. **A Whaling Cruise to Baffin's Bay and the Gulf of Boothia.** By A. H. MARKHAM.
6. **Campaigning on the Oxus.** By J. A. MACGAHAN.
7. **Akim-foo: the History of a Failure.** By MAJOR W. F. BUTLER, C. B.
8. **Ocean to Ocean.** By the Rev. GEORGE M. GRANT. With Illustrations.
9. **Cruise of the Challenger.** By W. J. J. SPRY, R. N.
10. **Schweinfurth's Heart of Africa.** 2 vols., 15s.
11. **Through the Dark Continent.** By H. M. STANLEY. 1 vol., 12s. 6d.

*Low's Standard Novels.* Crown 8vo, 6s. each, cloth extra.

**My Lady Greensleeves.** By HELEN MATHERS, Authoress of "Comin' through the Rye," "Cherry Ripe," &c.

**Three Feathers.** By WILLIAM BLACK.

**A Daughter of Heth.** 13th Edition. By W. BLACK. With Frontispiece by F. WALKER, A. R. A.

**Kilmeny.** A Novel. By W. BLACK.

**In Silk Attire.** By W. BLACK.

**Lady Silverdale's Sweetheart.** By W. BLACK.

**History of a Crime: The Story of the Coup d'État.** By VICTOR HUGO.

**Alice Lorraine.** By R. D. BLACKMORE.

**Lorna Doone.** By R. D. BLACKMORE. 8th Edition.

**Cradock Nowell.** By R. D. BLACKMORE.

**Clara Vaughan.** By R. D. BLACKMORE.

**Cripps the Carrier.** By R. D. BLACKMORE.

**Erema; or My Father's Sin.** By R. D. BLACKMORE.

**Innocent.** By Mrs. OLIPHANT. Eight Illustrations.

**Work.** A Story of Experience. By LOUISA M. ALCOTT. Illustrations. *See also* Rose Library.

**The Afghan Knife.** By R. A. STERNDALE, Author of "Seonee."

**A French Heiress in her own Chateau.** By the author of "One Only," "Constantia," &c. Six Illustrations.

**Ninety-Three.** By VICTOR HUGO. Numerous Illustrations.

**My Wife and I.** By Mrs. BEECHER STOWE.

**Wreck of the Grosvenor.** By W. CLARK RUSSELL.

**Elinor Dryden.** By Mrs. MACQUOID.

**Diane.** By Mrs. MACQUOID.

**Poganuc People, Their Loves and Lives.** By Mrs. BEECHER STOWE.

**A Golden Sorrow.** By Mrs. CASHEL HOEY.

*Low's Handbook to the Charities of London.* Edited and revised to date by C. MACKESON, F. S. S., Editor of "A Guide to the Churches of London and its Suburbs," &c. 1s.

**MACGAHAN (J. A.)** *Campaigning on the Oxus, and the Fall of Khiva.* With Map and numerous Illustrations, 4th Edition, small post 8vo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.

**Macgregor (John)** *"Rob Roy" on the Baltic.* 3rd Edition, small post 8vo, 2s. 6d.

— *A Thousand Miles in the "Rob Roy" Canoe.* 11th Edition, small post 8vo, 2s. 6d.

*Macgregor (John) Description of the "Rob Roy" Canoe, with Plans, &c., 1s.*

— *The Voyage Alone in the Yawl "Rob Roy."* New Edition, thoroughly revised, with additions, small post 8vo, 5s.; boards, 2s. 6d.

*Mackenzie (D). The Flooding of the Sahara.* By DONALD MACKENZIE. 8vo, cloth extra, with Illustrations, 10s. 6d.

*Macquoid (Mrs.) Elinor Dryden.* Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

— *Diane.* Crown 8vo, 6s.

*Magazine (Illustrated) for Young People.* See "St. Nicholas."

*Markham (C. R.) The Threshold of the Unknown Region.* Crown 8vo, with Four Maps, 4th Edition. Cloth extra, 10s. 6d.

*Maury (Commander) Physical Geography of the Sea, and its Meteorology.* Being a Reconstruction and Enlargement of his former Work, with Charts and Diagrams. New Edition, crown 8vo, 6s.

*Memoirs of Madame de Rémusat, 1802—1808.* By her Grandson, M. PAUL DE RÉMUSAT, Senator. Translated by Mrs. CASHEL HOEY and Mr. JOHN LILLIE. 4th Edition, cloth extra. This work was written by Madame de Rémusat during the time she was living on the most intimate terms with the Empress Josephine, and is full of revelations respecting the private life of Bonaparte, and of men and politics of the first years of the century. Revelations which have already created a great sensation in Paris. 8vo, 2 vols. 32s.

*Men of Mark: a Gallery of Contemporary Portraits of the most Eminent Men of the Day taken from Life, especially for this publication, price 1s. 6d. monthly.* Vols. I., II., III., and IV., handsomely bound, cloth, gilt edges, 25s. each.

*Michael Strogoff.* 10s. 6d. and 5s. See VERNE.

*Mitford (Miss).* See "Our Village."

*Montaigne's Essays.* See "Gentle Life Series."

*My Brother Jack; or, The Story of Whatdyccallem.* Written by Himself. From the French of ALPHONSE DAUDET. Illustrated by P. PHILIPPOTEAUX. Imperial 16mo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.

*My Lady Greensleeves.* By HELEN MATHERS, Authoress of "Comin' through the Rye," "Cherry Ripe," &c. 1 vol. edition, crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.

*My Rambles in the New World.* By LUCIEN BIART, Author of "The Adventures of a Young Naturalist." Numerous full-page Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.

*Mysterious Island.* By JULES VERNE. 3 vols., imperial 16mo. 150 Illustrations, cloth gilt, 3s. 6d. each; elaborately bound, gilt edges, 7s. 6d. each. Cheap Edition, with some of the Illustrations, cloth, gilt, 2s.; paper, 1s. each.

*NARES (Sir G. S., K.C.B.) Narrative of a Voyage to the Polar Sea during 1875-76, in H.M.'s Ships "Alert" and "Discovery."* By Captain Sir G. S. NARES, R.N., K.C.B., F.R.S. Published by permission of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty. With Notes on the Natural History, edited by H. W. FEILDEN, F.G.S., C.M.Z.S., F.R.G.S., Naturalist to the Expedition. Two Volumes, demy 8vo, with numerous Woodcut Illustrations, Photographs, &c. 4th Edition, 2l. 2s.

*National Music of the World.* By the late HENRY F. CHORLEY. Edited by H. G. HEWLETT. Crown 8vo, cloth, 8s. 6d.

"What I have to offer are not a few impressions, scrambled together in the haste of the moment, but are the result of many years of comparison and experience."—*From the Author's "Prelude."*

*New Child's Play (A).* Sixteen Drawings by E. V. B. Beautifully printed in colours, 4to, cloth extra, 12s. 6d.

*New Guinea (A Few Months in).* By OCTAVIUS C. STONE, F.R.G.S. With numerous Illustrations from the Author's own Drawings. Crown 8vo, cloth, 12s.

*New Ireland.* By A. M. SULLIVAN, M.P. for Louth. 2 vols., demy 8vo, 30s. Cheaper Edition, 1 vol., crown 8vo, 8s. 6d.

*New Novels.* Crown 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d. per vol. :—

*Mary Anerley.* By R. D. BLACKMORE, Author of "Lorna Doone," &c. 3 vols.

*The Sisters.* By G. EBERS, Author of "An Egyptian Princess." 2 vols., 16mo, 2s. each.

*Countess Daphne.* By RITA, Authoress of "Vivienne" and "Like Dian's Kiss." 3 vols.

*Sunrise.* By W. BLACK. In 15 Monthly Parts, 1s. each.

*Wait a Year.* By HARRIET BOWRA, Authoress of "A Young Wife's Story." 3 vols.

*Sarah de Beranger.* By JEAN INGELow. 3 vols.

*The Braes of Yarrow.* By C. GIBBON. 3 vols.

*Elaine's Story.* By MAUD SHERIDAN. 2 vols.

*Prince Fortune and His Friends.* 3 vols.

*Noble Words and Noble Deeds.* Translated from the French of E. MULLER, by DORA LEIGH. Containing many Full-page Illustrations by PHILIPPOTEAUX. Square imperial 16mo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.

*North American Review (The).* Monthly, price 2s. 6d.

*Notes on Fish and Fishing.* By the Rev. J. J. MANLEY, M.A. With Illustrations, crown 8vo, cloth extra, leatherette binding, 10s. 6d.

*Nursery Playmates (Prince of).* 217 Coloured pictures for Children by eminent Artists. Folio, in coloured boards, 6s.

*OBERAMMERGAU Passion Play.* See "Art in the Mountains."

*Ocean to Ocean: Sandford Fleming's Expedition through Canada in 1872.* By the Rev. GEORGE M. GRANT. With Illustrations. Revised and enlarged Edition, crown 8vo, cloth, 7s. 6d.

*Old-Fashioned Girl.* See ALCOTT.

*Oliphant (Mrs.) Innocent.* A Tale of Mode and Life. By Mrs. OLIPHANT, Author of "The Chronicles of Carlingford," &c., &c. With Eight Full-page Illustrations, small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.

*On Horseback through Asia Minor.* By Capt. FRED BURNABY, Royal Horse Guards, Author of "A Ride to Khiva." 2 vols., 8vo, with three Maps and Portrait of Author, 6th Edition, 38s.; Cheaper Edition, crown 8vo, 10s. 6d.

*Our Little Ones in Heaven.* Edited by the Rev. H. ROBBINS. With Frontispiece after Sir JOSHUA REYNOLDS. Fcap., cloth extra, New Edition—the 3rd, with Illustrations, 5s.

*Our Village.* By MARY RUSSELL MITFORD. Illustrated with Frontispiece Steel Engraving, and 12 full-page and 157 smaller Cuts of Figure Subjects and Scenes. Crown 4to, cloth, gilt edges, 21s.

*Our Woodland Trees.* By F. G. HEATH. Large post 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, uniform with "Fern World" and "Fern Paradise," by the same Author. 8 Coloured Plates (showing leaves of every British Tree) and 20 Woodcuts, cloth, gilt edges, 12s. 6d. Third Edition.

"The book, as a whole, meets a distinct need; its engravings are excellent, its coloured leaves and leaflets singularly accurate, and both author and engraver appear to have been animated by a kindred love of their subject."—*Saturday Review*.

French of  
age Illustra-  
extra, 7s. 6d.

6d.

NLEY, M.A.  
ding, 10s. 6d.

ictures for  
6s.

Art in the

on through  
With Illustra-  
7s. 6d.

By Mrs.  
rd," &c., &c.  
extra, 6s.

BURNABY,  
a." 2 vols.,  
Edition, 38s.;

H. ROBBINS.  
, cloth extra,

strated with  
smaller Cuts  
edges, 21s.

re post 8vo,  
ern Paradise,"  
aves of every  
s. 6d. Third

are excellent, its  
or and engraver  
ect."—*Saturday*

*PAINTERS of All Schools.* By LOUIS VIARDOT, and other Writers. 500 pp., super-royal 8vo, 20 Full-page and 70 smaller Engravings, cloth extra, 25s. A New Edition is issued in Half-crown parts, with fifty additional portraits, cloth, gilt edges, 31s. 6d.

*Palliser (Mrs.) A History of Lace, from the Earliest Period.* A New and Revised Edition, with additional cuts and text, upwards of 100 Illustrations and coloured Designs. 1 vol. 8vo, 11. 1s.

"One of the most readable books of the season; permanently valuable, always interesting, often amusing, and not inferior in all the essentials of a gift book."—*Times*.

— *Historic Devices, Badges, and War Cries.* 8vo, 11. 1s.

— *The China Collector's Pocket Companion.* With upwards of 1000 Illustrations of Marks and Monograms. 2nd Edition, with Additions. Small post 8vo, limp cloth, 5s.

*Petites Leçons de Conversation et de Grammaire: Oral and Conversational Method,* being Lessons introducing the most Useful Topics of Conversation, upon an entirely new principle, &c. By F. JULIEN, French Master at King Edward the Sixth's School, Birmingham. Author of "The Student's French Examiner," "First Steps in Conversational French Grammar," which see.

*Phillips (L.) Dictionary of Biographical Reference.* 8vo, 11. 11s. 6d.

*Photography (History and Handbook of).* See TISSANDIER.

*Physical Treatise on Electricity and Magnetism.* By J. E. H. GORDON, B.A. With about 200 coloured, full-page, and other Illustrations. Among the newer portions of the work may be enumerated: All the more recent investigations on Striae by Spottiswoode, De la Rue, Moulton, &c. An account of Mr. Crooke's recent researches. Full descriptions and pictures of all the modern Magnetic Survey Instruments now used at Kew Observatory. Full accounts of all the modern work on Specific Inductive Capacity, and of the more recent determination of the ratio of Electric u. its (v). It is believed that in respect to the number and beauty of the Illustrations, the work will be quite unique. 2 vols., 8vo, 36s.

*Picture Gallery of British Art (The).* 38 Permanent Photographs after the most celebrated English Painters. With Descriptive Letterpress. Vols. 1 to 5, cloth extra, 18s. each. Vols. 6, 7, and 8, commencing New Series, demy folio, 31s. 6d.

*Pinto (Major Serpa).* See "King's Rifle."

*Placita Anglo-Normannica. The Procedure and Constitution of the Anglo-Norman Courts (WILLIAM I.—RICHARD I.), as shown by Contemporaneous Records.* With Explanatory Notes, &c. By M. M. BIGELOW. Demy 8vo, cloth, 21s.



- Plutarch's Lives.* An Entirely New and Library Edition. Edited by A. H. CLOUGH, Esq. 5 vols., 8vo, 2l. 10s.; half-morocco, gilt top, 3l. Also in 1 vol., royal 8vo, 800 pp., cloth extra, 18s.; half-bound, 21s.
- *Morals.* Uniform with Clough's Edition of "Lives of Plutarch." Edited by Professor GOODWIN. 5 vols., 8vo, 3l. 3s.
- Poems of the Inner Life.* A New Edition, Revised, with many additional Poems. Small post 8vo, cloth, 5s.
- Poganuc People: their Loves and Lives.* By Mrs. BEECHER STOWE. Crown 8vo, cloth, 6s.
- Polar Expeditions.* See KOLDEWEY, MARKHAM, MACGAHAN, and NARES.
- Practical (A) Handbook to the Principal Schools of England.* By C. E. PASCOE. New Edition, crown 8vo, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.
- Prejevalsky (N. M.) From Kulja, across the Tian Shan to Lob-nor.* Translated by E. DELMAR MORGAN, F.R.G.S. Demy 8vo, with a Map. 16s.
- Prince Ritto; or, The Four-leaved Shamrock.* By FANNY W. CURREY. With 10 Full-page Fac-simile Reproductions of Original Drawings by HELEN O'HARA. Demy 4to, cloth extra, gilt, 10s. 6d.
- Publishers' Circular (The), and General Record of British and Foreign Literature.* Published on the 1st and 15th of every Month, 3d.
- R**AMBAUD (*Alfred*). *History of Russia, from its Origin to the Year 1877.* With Six Maps. Translated by Mrs. L. B. LANG. 2 vols., demy 8vo, cloth extra, 38s.
- Recollections of Writers.* By CHARLES and MARY COWDEN CLARKE. Authors of "The Concordance to Shakespeare," &c.; with Letters of CHARLES LAMB, LEIGH HUNT, DOUGLAS JERROLD, and CHARLES DICKENS; and a Preface by MARY COWDEN CLARKE. Crown 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.
- Reminiscences of the War in New Zealand.* By THOMAS W. GUDGEON, Lieutenant and Quartermaster, Colonial Forces, N.Z. With Twelve Portraits. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 10s. 6d.
- Rémusat (Madame de).* See "Memoirs of."
- Robinson (Phil).* See "In my Indian Garden."
- Rochefoucauld's Reflections.* Bayard Series, 2s. 6d.

*Rogers (S.) Pleasures of Memory.* See "Choice Editions of Choice Books." 2s. 6d.

*Rose in Bloom.* See ALCOTT.

*Rose Library (The).* Popular Literature of all countries. Each volume, 1s. ; cloth, 2s. 6d. Many of the Volumes are Illustrated—

1. *Sea-Gull Rock.* By JULES SANDEAU. Illustrated.
2. *Little Women.* By LOUISA M. ALCOTT.
3. *Little Women Wedded.* Forming a Sequel to "Little Women."
4. *The House on Wheels.* By MADAME DE STOLZ. Illustrated.
5. *Little Men.* By LOUISA M. ALCOTT. Dble. vol., 2s. ; cloth, 3s. 6d.
6. *The Old-Fashioned Girl.* By LOUISA M. ALCOTT. Double vol., 2s. ; cloth, 3s. 6d.
7. *The Mistress of the Manse.* By J. G. HOLLAND.
8. *Timothy Titcomb's Letters to Young People, Single and Married.*
9. *Undine, and the Two Captains.* By Baron DE LA MOTTE FOUQUÉ. A New Translation by F. E. BUNNETT. Illustrated.
10. *Draxy Miller's Dowry, and the Elder's Wife.* By SAXE HOLM.
11. *The Four Gold Pieces.* By Madame GOURAUD. Numerous Illustrations.
12. *Work.* A Story of Experience. First Portion. By LOUISA M. ALCOTT.
13. *Beginning Again.* Being a Continuation of "Work." By LOUISA M. ALCOTT.
14. *Picciola; or, the Prison Flower.* By X. B. SAINTINE. Numerous Graphic Illustrations.
15. *Robert's Holidays.* Illustrated.
16. *The Two Children of St. Domingo.* Numerous Illustrations.
17. *Aunt Jo's Scrap Bag.*
18. *Stowe (Mrs. H. B.) The Pearl of Orr's Island.*
19. ——— *The Minister's Wooing.*
20. ——— *Betty's Bright Idea.*
21. ——— *The Ghost in the Mill.*
22. ——— *Captain Kidd's Money.*
23. ——— *We and our Neighbours.* Double vol., 2s.
24. ——— *My Wife and I.* Double vol., 2s. ; cloth, gilt, 3s. 6d.
25. *Hans Brinker; or, the Silver Skates.*
26. *Lowe's My Study Window.*
27. *Holmes (O. W.) The Guardian Angel.*
28. *Warner (C. D.) My Summer in a Garden.*

*The Rose Library, continued:—*

29. **Hitherto.** By the Author of "The Gayworthys." 2 vols., 1s. each.  
 30. **Helen's Babies.** By their Latest Victim.  
 31. **The Barton Experiment.** By the Author of "Helen's Babies."  
 32. **Dred.** By Mrs. BEECHER STOWE. Double vol., 2s. Cloth, gilt, 3s. 6d.  
 33. **Warner (C. D.) In the Wilderness.**  
 34. **Six to One.** A Seaside Story.

*Russell (W. H., LL.D.) The Tour of the Prince of Wales in India.* By W. H. RUSSELL, LL.D. Fully Illustrated by SIDNEY P. HALL, M.A. Super-royal 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 52s. 6d.; Large Paper Edition, 84s.

*SANCTA Christina: a Story of the First Century.* By ELEANOR E. ORLEBAR. With a Preface by the Bishop of Winchester. Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 5s.

*Scientific Memoirs: being Experimental Contributions to a Knowledge of Radiant Energy.* By JOHN WILLIAM DRAPER, M.D., LL.D., Author of "A Treatise on Human Physiology," &c. With Steel Portrait of the Author. Demy 8vo, cloth, 473 pages, 14s.

*Scott (Sir G. Gilbert.)* See "Autobiography."

*Sea-Gull Rock.* By JULES SANDEAU, of the French Academy. Royal 16mo, with 79 Illustrations, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d. Cheaper Edition, cloth gilt, 2s. 6d. See also Rose Library.

*Seonee: Sporting in the Satpura Range of Central India, and in the Valley of the Nerbudda.* By R. A. STERNDAL, F.R.G.S. 8vo, with numerous Illustrations, 21s.

*The Serpent Charmer: a Tale of the Indian Mutiny.* By LOUIS ROUSSELET, Author of "India and its Native Princes." Numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d., plainer binding, 5s.

*Shakespeare (The Boudoir).* Edited by HENRY CUNDELL. Carefully bracketted for reading aloud; freed from all objectionable matter, and altogether free from notes. Price 2s. 6d. each volume, cloth extra, gilt edges. Contents:—Vol I., Cymbeline—Merchant of Venice. Each play separately, paper cover, 1s. Vol. II., As You Like It—King Lear—Much Ado about Nothing. Vol. III., Romeo and Juliet—Twelfth Night—King John. The latter six plays separately, paper cover, 9d.

*Shakespeare Key (The)*. Forming a Companion to "The Complete Concordance to Shakespeare." By CHARLES and MARY COWDEN CLARKE. Demy 8vo, 800 pp., 21s.

*Shooting: its Appliances, Practice, and Purpose*. By JAMES DALZIEL DOUGALL, F.S.A., F.Z.A. Author of "Scottish Field Sports," &c. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 10s. 6d.

"The book is admirable in every way. . . . We wish it every success."—*Globe*.  
"A very complete treatise. . . . Likely to take high rank as an authority on shooting."—*Daily News*.

*Silent Hour (The)*. See "Gentle Life Series."

*Silver Pitchers*. See ALCOTT.

*Simon (Fules)*. See "Government of M. Thiers."

*Six to One*. A Seaside Story. 16mo, boards, 1s.

*Smith (G.) Assyrian Explorations and Discoveries*. By the late GEORGE SMITH. Illustrated by Photographs and Woodcuts. Demy 8vo, 6th Edition, 18s.

——— *The Chaldean Account of Genesis*. By the late G. SMITH, of the Department of Oriental Antiquities, British Museum. With many Illustrations. Demy 8vo, cloth extra, 6th Edition, 16s.

*Snow-Shoes and Canoes; or, the Adventures of a Fur-Hunter* in the Hudson's Bay Territory. By W. H. G. KINGSTON. 2nd Edition. With numerous Illustrations. Square crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.

*Songs and Etchings in Shade and Sunshine*. By J. E. G. Illustrated with 44 Etchings. Small 4to, cloth, gilt tops, 25s.

*South Kensington Museum*. Monthly 1s. See "Art Treasures."

*Stanley (H. M.) How I Found Livingstone*. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 7s. 6d.; large Paper Edition, 10s. 6d.

——— "My Kalulu," *Prince, King, and Slave*. A Story from Central Africa. Crown 8vo, about 430 pp., with numerous graphic Illustrations, after Original Designs by the Author. Cloth, 7s. 6d.

——— *Coomassie and Magdala*. A Story of Two British Campaigns in Africa. Demy 8vo, with Maps and Illustrations, 16s.

——— *Through the Dark Continent*, which see.

*St. Nicholas Magazine*. 4to, in handsome cover. 1s. monthly. Annual Volumes, handsomely bound, 15s. Its special features are, the great variety and interest of its literary contents, and the beauty

and profuseness of its Illustrations, which surpass anything yet attempted in any publication for young people, and the stories are by the best living authors of juvenile literature. Each Part contains, on an average, 50 Illustrations.

*Story without an End.* From the German of Carové, by the late Mrs. SARAH T. AUSTIN. Crown 4to, with 15 Exquisite Drawings by E. V. B., printed in Colours in Fac-simile of the original Water Colours; and numerous other Illustrations. New Edition, 7s. 6d.

—— square 4to, with Illustrations by HARVEY. 2s. 6d.

*Stowe (Mrs. Beecher) Dred.* Cheap Edition, boards, 2s. Cloth, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

—— *Footsteps of the Master.* With Illustrations and red borders. Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.

—— *Geography,* with 60 Illustrations. Square cloth, 4s. 6d.

—— *Little Foxes.* Cheap Edition, 1s.; Library Edition, 4s. 6d.

—— *Betty's Bright Idea.* 1s.

—— *My Wife and I; or, Harry Henderson's History.* Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.\*

—— *Minister's Wooing.* 5s.; Copyright Series, 1s. 6d.; cl., 2s.\*

—— *Old Town Folk.* 6s.; Cheap Edition, 2s. 6d.

—— *Old Town Fireside Stories.* Cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

—— *Our Folks at Poganuc.* 10s. 6d.

—— *We and our Neighbours.* 1 vol., small post 8vo, 6s. Sequel to "My Wife and I."\*

—— *Pink and White Tyranny.* Small post 8vo, 3s. 6d.; Cheap Edition, 1s. 6d. and 2s.

—— *Queer Little People.* 1s.; cloth, 2s.

—— *Chimney Corner.* 1s.; cloth, 1s. 6d.

—— *The Pearl of Orr's Island.* Crown 8vo, 5s.\*

—— *Little Pussey Willow.* Fcap., 2s.

\* See also Rose Library.

*Stowe (Mrs. Beecher) Woman in Sacred History.* Illustrated with 15 Chromo-lithographs and about 200 pages of Letterpress. Demy 4to, cloth extra, gilt edges, 25s.

*Student's French Examiner.* By F. JULIEN, Author of "Petites Leçons de Conversation et de Grammaire." Square crown 8vo, cloth, 2s.

*Studies in German Literature.* By BAYARD TAYLOR. Edited by MARIE TAYLOR. With an Introduction by the Hon. GEORGE H. BOKER. 8vo, cloth extra, 10s. 6d.

*Studies in the Theory of Descent.* By Dr. AUG. WEISMANN, Professor in the University of Freiburg. Translated and edited by RAPHAEL MELDOLA, F.C.S., Secretary of the Entomological Society of London. Part I.—"On the Seasonal Dimorphism of Butterflies," containing Original Communications by Mr. W. H. EDWARDS, of Coalburgh. With two Coloured Plates. Price of Part I. (to Subscribers for the whole work only) 8s; Part II. (6 coloured plates), 16s.; Part III., 6s.

*Sugar Beet (The).* Including a History of the Beet Sugar Industry in Europe, Varieties of the Sugar Beet, Examination, Soils, Tillage, Seeds and Sowing, Yield and Cost of Cultivation, Harvesting, Transportation, Conservation, Feeding Qualities of the Beet and of the Pulp, &c. By L. S. WARE. Illustrated. 8vo, cloth extra, 21s.

*Sullivan (A. M., M.P.).* See "New Ireland."

*Sulphuric Acid (A Practical Treatise on the Manufacture of).* By A. G. and C. G. LOCK, Consulting Chemical Engineers. With 77 Construction Plates, and other Illustrations.

*Sumner (Hon. Charles).* See Life and Letters.

*Sunrise: A Story of These Times.* By WILLIAM BLACK, Author of "A Daughter of Heth," &c. To be published in 15 Monthly Parts, commencing April 1st, 1s. each.

*Surgeon's Handbook on the Treatment of Wounded in War.* By Dr. FRIEDRICH ESMARCH, Professor of Surgery in the University of Kiel, and Surgeon-General to the Prussian Army. Translated by H. H. CLUTTON, B.A. Cantab, F.R.C.S. Numerous Coloured Plates and Illustrations, 8vo, strongly bound in flexible leather, 12. 8s.

*Sylvan Spring.* By FRANCIS GEORGE HEATH. Illustrated by 12 Coloured Plates, drawn by F. E. HULME, F.L.S., Artist and Author of "Familiar Wild Flowers;" by 16 full-page, and more than 100 other Wood Engravings. Large post 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, 12s. 6d.

**TAUCHNITZ'S** *English Editions of German Authors.*

Each volume, cloth flexible, 2s. ; or sewed, 1s. 6d. (Catalogues post free on application.)

— (B.) *German and English Dictionary.* Cloth, 1s. 6d.; roan, 2s.

— *French and English.* Paper, 1s. 6d.; cloth, 2s.; roan, 2s. 6d.

— *Italian and English.* Paper, 1s. 6d.; cloth, 2s.; roan, 2s. 6d.

— *Spanish and English.* Paper, 1s. 6d.; cloth, 2s.; roan, 2s. 6d.

— *New Testament.* Cloth, 2s.; gilt, 2s. 6d.

*Taylor (Bayard).* See "Studies in German Literature."

*Textbook (A) of Harmony.* For the Use of Schools and Students. By the late CHARLES EDWARD HORSLEY. Revised for the Press by WESTLEY RICHARDS and W. H. CALCOTT. Small post 8vo, cloth extra, 3s. 6d.

*Through the Dark Continent: The Sources of the Nile; Around the Great Lakes, and down the Congo.* By HENRY M. STANLEY. 2 vols., demy 8vo, containing 150 Full-page and other Illustrations, 2 Portraits of the Author, and 10 Maps, 42s. Seventh Thousand. Cheaper Edition, crown 8vo, with some of the Illustrations and Maps. 1 vol., 12s. 6d.

*Tour of the Prince of Wales in India.* See RUSSELL.

*Trees and Ferns.* By F. G. HEATH. Crown 8vo, cloth, gilt edges, with numerous Illustrations, 3s. 6d.

"A charming little volume."—*Land and Water.*

*Turkistan.* Notes of a Journey in the Russian Provinces of Central Asia and the Khanates of Bokhara and Kokand. By EUGENE SCHUYLER, Late Secretary to the American Legation, St. Petersburg. Numerous Illustrations. 2 vols., 8vo, cloth extra, 5th Edition, 2l. 2s.

*Two Friends.* By LUCIEN BIART, Author of "Adventures of a Young Naturalist," "My Rambles in the New World," &c. Small post 8vo, numerous Illustrations, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.

*Two Supercargoes (The); or, Adventures in Savage Africa.* By W. H. G. KINGSTON. Numerous Full-page Illustrations. Square imperial 16mo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.

*UP and Down; or, Fifty Years' Experiences in Australia, California, New Zealand, India, China, and the South Pacific.* Being the Life History of Capt. W. J. BARRY. Written by Himself. With several Illustrations. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 8s. 6d.



"Jules Verne, that Prince of Story-tellers."—TIMES.

## BOOKS BY JULES VERNE.

LARGE CROWN 8vo. . .	Containing 350 to 600 pp. and from 50 to 100 full-page illustrations.		Containing the whole of the text with some illustrations.	
	WORKS.	In very handsome cloth binding, gilt edges.	In plainer binding, plain edges.	In cloth binding, gilt edges, smaller type.
	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	
Twenty Thousand Leagues under the Sea. Part I. Ditto. Part II.	10 6	5 0	3 6	2 vols., 1s. each.
Hector Servadac . . . . .	10 6	5 0		
The Fur Country . . . . .	10 6	5 0	3 6	2 vols., 1s. each.
From the Earth to the Moon and a Trip round it . . . . .	10 6	5 0	2 vols., 2s. each.	2 vols., 1s. each.
Michael Strogoff, the Courier of the Czar . . . . .	10 6	5 0		
Dick Sands, the Boy Captain . . . . .	10 6			s. d.
Five Weeks in a Balloon . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
Adventures of Three Englishmen and Three Russians . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
Around the World in Eighty Days . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
A Floating City . . . . .			2 0	1 0
The Blockade Runners . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
Dr. Ox's Experiment . . . . .			2 0	1 0
Master Zacharius . . . . .			2 0	1 0
A Drama in the Air . . . . .	7 6	3 6		
A Winter amid the Ice . . . . .			2 0	1 0
The Survivors of the "Chancellor" . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	2 vols. 1s. each.
Martin Paz . . . . .			2 0	1 0
THE MYSTERIOUS ISLAND, 3 vols. :—	22 6	10 6	6 0	3 0
Vol. I. Dropped from the Clouds . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
Vol. II. Abandoned . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
Vol. III. Secret of the Island . . . . .	7 6	3 6	2 0	1 0
The Child of the Cavern . . . . .	7 6	3 6		
The Begam's Fortune . . . . .	7 6			
The Tribulations of a Chinaman . . . . .	7 6			

CELEBRATED TRAVELS AND TRAVELLERS. 3 vols. Demy 8vo, 600 pp., upwards of 100 full-page illustrations, 12s. 6d.; gilt edges, 14s. each :—

(1) THE EXPLORATION OF THE WORLD.

(2) THE GREAT NAVIGATORS OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

(3) THE EXPLORERS OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY. (In the Press.)

- WALLER (Rev. C. H.) The Names on the Gates of Pearl,* and other Studies. By the Rev. C. H. WALLER, M.A. Second edition. Crown 8vo, cloth extra, 6s.
- *A Grammar and Analytical Vocabulary of the Words in the Greek Testament.* Compiled from Brüder's Concordance. For the use of Divinity Students and Greek Testament Classes. By the Rev. C. H. WALLER, M.A. Part I., The Grammar. Small post 8vo, cloth, 2s. 6d. Part II. The Vocabulary, 2s. 6d.
- *Adoption and the Covenant.* Some Thoughts on Confirmation. Super-royal 16.10, cloth limp, 2s. 6d.
- Wanderings in the Western Land.* By A. PENDARVES VIVIAN, M.P. With many Illustrations from Drawings by Mr. BIERSTADT and the Author, and 3 Maps. 1 vol., demy 8vo, cloth extra, 18s.
- War in Bulgaria: a Narrative of Personal Experiences.* By LIEUTENANT-GENERAL VALENTINE BAKER PASHA. Maps and Plans of Battles. 2 vols., demy 8vo, cloth extra, 2l. 2s.
- Warner (C. D.) My Summer in a Garden.* Rose Library, 1s.
- *Back-log Studies.* Boards, 1s. 6d.; cloth, 2s.
- *In the Wilderness.* Rose Library, 1s.
- *Mummies and Missions.* 8vo, cloth, 12s.
- Weaving.* See "History and Principles."
- Whitney (Mrs. A. D. T.) Hitherto.* Small post 8vo. 3s. 6d. and 2s. 6d.
- *Sights and Insights.* 3 vols., crown 8vo, 31s. 6d.
- *Summer in Leslie Goldthwaite's Life.* Cloth, 3s. 5d.
- Wills, A Few Hints on Proving, without Professional Assistance.* By a PROBATE COURT OFFICIAL. 5th Edition, revised with Forms of Wills, Residuary Accounts, &c. Fcap. 8vo, cloth limp, 1s.
- With Axe and Rifle on the Western Prairies.* By W. H. G. KINGSTON. With numerous Illustrations, square crown 8vo, cloth extra, gilt edges, 7s. 6d.; plainer binding, 5s.
- Witty and Humorous Side of the English Poets (The).* With a variety of Specimens arranged in Periods. By ARTHUR H. ELLIOTT. 1 vol., crown 8vo, cloth, 10s. 6d.
- Woolsey (C. D., LL.D.) Introduction to the Study of International Law;* designed as an Aid in Teaching and in Historical Studies. 5th Edition, demy 8vo, 18s.
- Words of Wellington: Maxims and Opinions, Sentences and Reflections of the Great Duke,* gathered from his Despatches, Letters, and Speeches (Bayard Series). 2s. 6d.
- Wreck of the Grosvenor.* By W. CLARK RUSSELL. 6s. Third and Cheaper Edition.

---

London:

SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON, SEARLE, & RIVINGTON,  
CROWN BUILDINGS 188, FLEET STREET.

ions.

*of Pearl,*  
A. Second

*Words in*  
lance. For  
es. By the  
ll post 8vo,

ughts on

S VIVIAN,  
BIERSTADT  
ra, 18s.

*ences.* By  
Maps and

brary, 1s.

o. 3s. 6d.

6d.

3s. 5d.

*Assistance.*  
with Forms  
, 1s.

V. H. G.  
8vo, cloth

With a  
E. ELLIOTT.

*of Inter-*  
Historical

*ences and*  
es, Letters,

is. Third

NGTON,

